



THE
FOUR GOSPELS
AND THE
ACTS OF THE APOSTLES

IN PARAGRAPHS, PUNCTUATED RHETORICALLY
FOR READING IN
SCHOOLS, COLLEGES, AND FAMILIES

BY
ALEXANDER BELL
PROFESSOR OF ELOCUTION

LONDON
CHARLES GRIFFIN AND COMPANY
STATIONERS' HALL COURT, PATERNOSTER ROW

PREFACE.

THIS Edition of the New Testament is an attempt to improve the public and private reading of the Word of God.

That common punctuation does not promote the elocutive effect of any composition is generally allowed: the system which is adopted is far too diffuse for the impressive, or merely correct, delivery of words. Indeed, no mode of punctuation can be advantageous which is not in unison with the respiratory and vocal powers.

In the pronunciation of sentences, motion and rest are equally elements of harmony. These, judiciously blended, give a delight to the ear no less exquisite than that which the eye receives from the proper admixture of light and shade in the landscape.

In the present edition of the New Testament the text of the Common Translation is arranged in paragraphs, and illustrated by Rhetorical Punctuation.

The established divisions of chapters and verses are strictly preserved; but the numbers of the verses are printed in such a manner as will prevent any interruption to the matter which properly forms a paragraph.

Words which have peculiarly emphatic force are printed in small capital letters.

All quotations from the Old Testament are within inverted commas.

The dialogistic, are distinguished from the narrative parts of the language by inverted commas.

The words which are not in the original language are, as usual, printed in Italic characters.

For the exposition of the sense, the punctuation of the Oxford edition, except in a few instances, is adopted.

It is hoped that the Appendix will be found generally useful, as it contains a correct Biographical and, Geographical account of the persons and places mentioned in the New Testament. The pronunciation of the Proper Names is given from the best authorities.

CONTENTS

OF

PART THE FIRST.

The Gospel according to St. Matthew	1
Table of Quotations, &c.	71
The Gospel according to St. Mark	72
Table of Quotations, &c.	116
The Gospel according to St. Luke	117
Table of Quotations, &c.	191
The Gospel according to St. John	192
Table of Quotations, &c.	246
The Acts of the Apostles	247
Table of Quotations, &c.	316

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO
ST. MATTHEW.

NOTE.—This Gospel was written in Judæa, A. D. 37 or 38, during the Pauline persecution.

CHAPTER I.

1 The genealogy of Christ from Abraham to Joseph. 18 He was conceived by the Holy Ghost, and born of the Virgin Mary when she was espoused to Joseph. 19 The angel satisfieth the misdeeming thoughts of Joseph, and interpreteth the names of Christ.

¹ THE book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the Son of David, the son of Abraham.

² Abraham, begat Isaac; and Isaac, begat Jacob; and Jacob, begat Judas, and his brethren; ³ and Judas, begat Phares, and Zara of Thamar; and Phares, begat Esrom; and Esrom, begat Aram; ⁴ and Aram, begat Aminadab; and Aminadab, begat Naasson; and Naasson, begat Salmon; ⁵ and Salmon, begat Booz of Raehab; and Booz, begat Obed of Ruth; and Obed, begat Jesse; ⁶ and Jesse, begat David the king; and David the king, begat Solomon of her, *that had been the wife of Urias;* ⁷ and Solomon, begat Roboam; and Roboam, begat Abia; and Abia, begat Asa; ⁸ and Asa, begat Josaphat; and Josaphat, begat Joram; and Joram, begat Ozias; ⁹ and Ozias, begat Joatham; and Joatham, begat Achaz; and Achaz, begat Ezekias; ¹⁰ and Ezekias, begat Manasses; and Manasses, begat Amon; and Amon, begat Josias; ¹¹ and Josias, begat Jechonias, and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon: ¹² and after they were brought to Babylon, Jechonias, begat Salathiel; and Salathiel, begat Zorobabel; ¹³ and Zorobabel, begat Abiud; and Abiud, begat Eliakim; and Eliakim, begat Azor; ¹⁴ and Azor, begat Sadoc; and Sadoc, begat Achim; and Achim, begat Eliud; ¹⁵ and Eliud, begat Eleazar; and Eleazar, begat Matthan; and Matthan, begat

SAINT MATTHEW.

Jacob ; ¹⁶ and Jacob, begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

¹⁷ So, all the generations, from Abraham to David, *are* fourteen generations ; and from David until the carrying away into Babylon, *are* fourteen generations ; and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ, *are* fourteen generations.

¹⁸ Now, the birth of Jesus Christ, was on this wise : When as his mother Mary, was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost. ¹⁹ Then Joseph her husband, being a just man, and not willing, to make her a public example, was minded, to put her away privily. ²⁰ But, while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord, appeared unto him, in a dream, saying, “ Joseph, thou son of David, fear not, to take unto thee Mary thy wife : for, that, which is conceived in her, is “ of the Holy Ghost. ²¹ And she shall bring forth a son, “ and thou shalt call his name JESUS : for, he shall save “ his people from their sins.”

²² Now, all this, was done, that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken of the Lord, by the prophet, saying, ²³ “ Behold, “ a virgin, shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, “ and they shall call his name Emmanuel,” which, being interpreted, is, God with us.

²⁴ Then Joseph, being raised from sleep, did as the angel of the Lord, had bidden him, and took unto him his wife : ²⁵ and knew her not, till she had brought forth her first born son : and he called his name JESUS

CHAPTER II.

¹ *The wise men out of the East are directed to Christ by a star.*

¹¹ *They worship him, and offer their presents. 14 Joseph fleeth*

into Egypt, with Jesus and his mother. 16 Herod slayeth the chil-

dren : 20 himself dieth. 23 Christ is brought back again into

Galilee to Nazareth.

¹ Now, when Jesus, was born in Bethlehem of Judæa, in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men, from the East, to Jerusalem, ² saying, “ Where is he, that “ is born King of the Jews ? for, we have seen his STAR in “ the East, and are come, to worship him.”

CHAPTER II.

³ When Herod the king, had heard *these things*, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. ⁴ And when he had gathered all the Chief Priests, and Scribes of the people together, he demanded of them, where Christ, should be born.

⁵ And they said unto him, “ In Bethlehem of Judæa ; for, “ thus it is written by the prophet, ⁶ ‘ And thou Bethlehem, “ ‘ in the land of Juda, art not the least among the PRINCES “ ‘ of Juda : for, out of thee, shall come a Governor, that shall “ ‘ rule my people Israel.’ ”

⁷ Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, enquired of them diligently, what time, the star, appeared.

⁸ And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, “ Go, and search “ diligently for the young child ; and, when ye have found *him*, “ bring me word again, that I may come, and worship him also.”

⁹ When they had heard the king, they departed ; and, lo, the star, which they saw in the East, went before them, till it came, and stood over, where the young child, was. ¹⁰ When they *saw* the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy.

¹¹ And, when they were come into the house, they saw the young child, with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him : and, when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts ; gold, and frankincense, and myrrh. ¹² And, being warned of God, in a dream, that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

¹³ And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord, appeareth to Joseph, in a dream, saying, “ Arise, “ and take the young child, and his mother, and flee into “ Egypt, and be thou there, until I bring thee word : for, “ Herod, will seek the young child, to destroy him.”

¹⁴ When he arose, he took the young child, and his mother, by night, and departed into Egypt : ¹⁵ and was there, until the death of Herod : that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken of the Lord, by the prophet, saying, “ Out of Egypt have I “ called my Son.”

¹⁶ Then Herod, when he saw, that he was MOCKED of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children, that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old, and under, according to the time,

which he had diligently enquired of the wise men. ¹⁷ Then was fulfilled that, which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, ¹⁸ “ In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, “ and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel, weeping *for* her “ children, and would not be comforted, because, they are not.”

¹⁹ But, when Herod, was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord, appeareth, in a dream, to Joseph in Egypt, ²⁰ saying, “ Arise, and take the young child, and his mother, and “ go into the land of Israel: for, they are dead, which sought “ the young child’s life.”

²¹ And he arose, and took the young child, and his mother, and came into the land of Israel. ²² But, when he heard, that Archelaus, did reign in Judæa, in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee: ²³ and he came, and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the prophets, “ He shall be called a Nazarene.”

CHAPTER III.

1 John preacheth : his office : life, and baptism. 7 He reprehendeth the Pharisees, 13 and baptizeth Christ in Jordan.

¹ In those days, came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judæa, ² and saying, “ Repent ye: for, the “ kingdom of heaven, is at hand.”—³ For, this is he, that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, “ The voice of “ one, crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the “ Lord, make his paths straight.”—⁴ And the same John, had his raiment of cainel’s hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and his meat, was locusts, and wild honey.

⁵ Then, went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judæa, and all the region round about Jordan, ⁶ and were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.

⁷ But, when he saw many of the Pharisees, and Sadducees, come to his baptism, he said unto them, “ O generation of “ vipers, who hath warned you, to flee from the wrath to come? “ ⁸ Bring forth, therefore, fruits meet for repentance: ⁹ and “ think not to say within yourselves, ‘ We have Abraham to

CHAPTER IV.

“ ‘our father:’ for, I say unto you, that God, is able, of these stones, to raise up children unto Abraham. ¹⁰ And now also, the axe, is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore, every tree, which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down, and cast into the fire. ¹¹ I, indeed, baptize you with WATER, unto repentance: but, he, that cometh after me, is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: HE shall baptize you with the HOLY GHOST, and with fire; ¹² whose fan, is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but, he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.”

¹³ Then, cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him. ¹⁴ But, John, forbade him, saying, “ I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?”

¹⁵ And Jesus, answering, said unto him, “ Suffer it to be so now: for, thus, it becometh us, to fulfil all righteousness.”

Then he suffered him.

¹⁶ And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straight-way out of the water: and, lo, the heavens, were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God, descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: ¹⁷ and, lo, a voice from heaven, saying, “ This, is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.”

CHAPTER IV

¹ Christ fasteth, and is tempted. ¹¹ The angels minister unto him.
¹³ He dwelleth in Capernaum, ¹⁷ beginneth to preach, ¹⁸ calleth Peter, and Andrew, ²¹ James, and John, ²³ and healeth all the diseased.

¹ Then was Jesus led up, of the spirit, into the wilderness, to be tempted of the devil. ² And when he had fasted, forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungered.

³ And when the tempter, came to him, he said, “ If thou be the Son of God, command, that these stones, be made bread.”

⁴ But, he answered, and said, “ It is written, ‘ Man, shall

SAINT MATTHEW

“ ‘ not live by bread alone, but, by every word, that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.’ ”

“ Then, the devil, taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple, “ and saith unto him, “ If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for, “ it is written, ‘ He shall give His angels charge concerning thee: and, in *their* hands, they shall bear thee up, lest, “ at any time, thou dash thy foot against a stone.’ ”

“ Jesus, said unto him, “ It is written again, ‘ Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.’ ”

“ Again, the devil, taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; “ and saith unto him, “ All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down, and worship me.”

“ Then, saith Jesus unto him, “ Get thee hence, Satan: “ for, it is written, ‘ Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, “ and HIM only shalt thou serve.’ ”

“ Then, the devil, leaveth him, and, behold, angels, came, and ministered unto him.

“ Now, when Jesus, had heard, that John, was cast into prison, he departed into Galilee; “ and, leaving Nazareth, he caine, and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon, and Nephthalim: “ that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, “ The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthali, by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles; “ the people, which sat in darkness, saw great light; and to them, which sat in the region, and shadow of death, light, is sprung up.”

“ From that time, Jesus, began to preach, and to say, “ Repent: for, the kingdom of heaven, is at hand.”

“ And Jesus, walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon, called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: for, they were fishers. “ And he saith unto them, “ Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.” “ And they, straightway, left *their* nets, and followed him

CHAPTER V.

²¹ And, going on from thence, he saw OTHER two brethren, James *the son of Zebedee*, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets ; and he called them. ²² And THEY, immediately, left the ship, and their father, and followed him.

²³ And Jesus, went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease, among the people. ²⁴ And his fame, went throughout all Syria : and they brought unto him all sick people, that were taken with divers diseases, and torments, and those, which were possessed with devils, and those, which were lunatic, and those, that had the palsy ; and he healed them. ²⁵ And there followed him great multitudes of people, from Galilee, and *from Decapolis*, and *from Jerusalem*, and *from Judæa*, and *from beyond Jordan*.

CHAPTER V.

¹ Christ beginneth his sermon in the mount : ³ declaring who are blessed, ¹³ who are the salt of the earth, ¹⁴ the light of the world, the city on an hill, ¹⁵ the candle : ¹⁷ that he came to fulfil the law. ²¹ What it is to kill, ²⁷ to commit adultery, ³³ to swear : ³⁸ exhorteth to suffer wrong, ⁴⁴ to love even our enemies, ⁴⁸ and to labour after perfectness.

¹ And, seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain : and when he was set, his disciples, came unto him : ² and he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying, ³ “ Blessed are the poor in spirit : for, theirs is the kingdom “ of heaven.

⁴ “ Blessed are they, that mourn : for they shall be “ comforted.

⁵ “ Blessed are the meek : for, they shall inherit the earth.

⁶ “ Blessed are they, which do hunger, and thirst after “ righteousness : for, they shall be filled.

⁷ “ Blessed are the merciful : for, they shall OBTAIN “ mercy.

⁸ “ Blessed are the pure in heart : for, they shall see God.

⁹ “ Blessed are the peacemakers : for, they shall be called “ the CHILDREN of God.

SAINT MATTHEW.

¹⁰ "Blessed *are* they, which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for, theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

¹¹ "Blessed are ye, when *men*, shall revile you, and persecute *you*, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. ¹² Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for, great *is* your reward in heaven: for, so persecuted they the prophets, which were before you.

¹³ "Ye are the salt of the earth: but, if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is, thenceforth, good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men.

¹⁴ "Ye are the light of the world. A city, that is set on an hill, cannot be hid. ¹⁵ Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but, on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all, that are in the house. ¹⁶ Let your **LIGHT** so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father, which is in heaven.

¹⁷ "Think not, that I am come, to destroy the Law, or, the Prophets: I am not come, to DESTROY, but, to FULFIL. ¹⁸ For, verily I say unto you, Till heaven, and earth, pass, one jot, or, one tittle, shall, in no wise, pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. ¹⁹ Whosoever, therefore, shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the **LEAST** in the kingdom of heaven: but, whosoever shall DO, and TEACH them, the same, shall be called **GREAT** in the kingdom of heaven. ²⁰ For, I say unto you, That except **YOUR** righteousness, shall EXCEED the righteousness of the Scribes, and Pharisees, ye shall, in no case, enter into the kingdom of heaven.

²¹ "Ye have heard, that it was said by them of old time, 'Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill, shall be in danger of the judgment:' ²² but, I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother, without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, 'Raca,' shall be in danger of the censure: but, whosoever shall say, 'Thou fool,' shall be in danger of hell fire.

²³ "Therefore, if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest, that thy brother, hath ought against thee; ²⁴ leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy

CHAPTER V.

“ way ; FIRST be reconciled to thy brother, and THEN come,
“ and offer thy gift.

“ “ Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou
“ art in the way with him ; lest, at any time, the adversary,
“ deliver thee to the judge, and the judge, deliver thee to the
“ officer, and thou be cast into prison. ”²⁶ Verily I say unto
“ thee, Thou shalt, by no means, come out thence, till thou
“ hast paid the uttermost farthing.

“ “ Ye have heard, that it was said by them of old
“ time, ‘ Thou shalt not commit adultery : ’ ”²⁹ but, I say unto
“ you, That whosoever looketh on a woman, to LUST after
“ her, hath committed adultery with her, already, in his heart.

“ “ And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast
“ it from thee : for, it is profitable for thee, that one of thy
“ members, should perish, and not *that* thy whole body,
“ should be cast into hell. ”³⁰ And if thy right hand offend
“ thee, cut it off, and cast *it* from thee : for, it is profitable
“ for thee, that one of thy members, should perish, and not
“ *that* thy whole body, should be cast into hell.

“ “ It hath been said, ‘ Whosoever shall put away his
“ wife, let him give her a writing of divorce : ’ ”³² but, I
“ say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife,
“ saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit
“ adultery : and whosoever shall marry her, that is divorced,
“ committeth adultery.

“ “ Again, ye have heard, that it hath been said by
“ them of old time, ‘ Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but,
“ ‘ shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths : ’ ”³⁴ but, I say
“ unto you, Swear not at all ; neither, by heaven ; for, it is
“ God’s throne : ”³⁵ nor, by the earth ; for, it is His footstool :
“ neither, by Jerusalem ; for, it is the city of the great
“ King. ”³⁶ Neither, shalt thou swear by thy head, because,
“ thou canst not make one hair white, or, black. ”³⁷ But, let
“ your communication be, Yea, yea ; Nay, nay : for, what-
“ soever is MORE than these, cometh of evil

“ “ Ye have heard, that it hath been said, ‘ An eye
“ ‘ for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth : ’ ”³⁹ but, I say unto
“ you, That ye resist not evil : but, whosoever shall smite
“ thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. ”⁴⁰ And
“ if any man, will sue thee at the law, and take away thy
“ coat, let him have *thy* CLOKE also. ”⁴¹ And whosoever

SAINT MATTHEW.

“ shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain. ⁴² Give “ to him, that asketh thee, and from him, that would bor- “ row of thee, turn not thou away.

⁴³ “ Ye have heard, that it hath been said, ‘ Thou “ shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy.’ ⁴⁴ But, “ I say unto you, LOVE your enemies, bless THEM, that “ curse YOU, do good to them, that hate you, and PRAY for “ them, which despitefully use you, and persecute you ; ⁴⁵ that “ ye may be the children of your Father, which is in heaven : “ for, He maketh His sun to rise on the evil, and on the good, “ and sendeth rain on the just, and on the unjust.

⁴⁶ “ For, if ye love THEM, which love YOU, what reward “ have ye ? do not even the Publicans the same ? ⁴⁷ And “ if ye salute your BRETHREN only, what do ye more than “ others ? do not even the Publicans so

⁴⁸ “ Be ye, therefore, perfect, even as your Father, which “ is in heaven, is perfect.

CHAPTER VI.

1 Christ continueth his sermon in the mount, speaking of alms, 5 prayer, 14 forgiving our brethren, 16 fasting, 19 where our treasure is to be laid up, 24 of serving God, and mammon : 25 exhorteth not to be careful for worldly things : 33 but to seek God's kingdom.

¹ “ Take heed, that ye do not your alms before men, “ to be SEEN of them : otherwise, ye have no reward of your “ Father, which is in heaven. ² Therefore, when thou doest “ thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the “ hypocrites, do in the synagogues, and in the streets, that “ they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They “ have their reward. ³ But, when THOU doest alms, let not “ thy left hand know, what thy right hand, doeth : ⁴ that thine “ alms, may be in secret : and thy Father, which seeth in “ secret, Himself shall reward thee openly.

⁵ “ And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the “ hypocrites, are : for, they love to pray, standing in the syna- “ gogues, and in the corners of the streets, that they may be “ seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their “ reward. ⁶ But THOU, when thou prayest, enter into thy “ closet, and, when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy

CHAPTER VI.

“ Father, which is in secret ; and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

“ But, when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen, do : for, they think, that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not ye, therefore, like unto them : for, your Father, knoweth, what things ye have need of, BEFORE ye ask Him.

“ After this manner, therefore, pray ye :

“ Our Father, which art in heaven, hal-
“ lowed be Thy name. Thy kingdom
“ come. Thy will be done in EARTH,
“ as it is in HEAVEN. Give us, this
“ day, our daily bread. And forgive
“ us OUR debts, AS we forgive our debt-
“ ors. And lead us not into tempta-
“ tion, but, DELIVER us from evil : For,
“ THINE is the kingdom, and the power,
“ and the glory, for ever. Amen.

“ For, if ye forgive MEN their trespasses, your heavenly Father, will also forgive you : but, if ye forgive NOT men THEIR trespasses, neither, will your Father forgive YOUR trespasses.

“ Moreover, when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance : for, they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men, to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But THOU, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and WASH thy face ; that thou appear not unto men, to fast, but, unto thy Father, which is in secret : and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

“ Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon EARTH, where moth, and rust, doth corrupt, and where thieves, break through, and steal : but, lay up for yourselves treasures in HEAVEN, where neither moth, nor, rust, doth corrupt, and where thieves, do NOT break through, nor, steal : for, WHERE your treasure, is, THERE will your heart be also.

“ The light of the body, is the eye : if, therefore, thine eye be single, thy whole body, shall be full of light.

SAINT MATTHEW.

“²³ But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body, shall be full of darkness. If, therefore, the **LIGHT**, that is in thee, be darkness, how great is that darkness!

“²⁴ No man can serve two masters : for, either he will **HATE** the one, and **LOVE** the other ; or else, he will **HOLD** to the one, and **DESPISE** the other. Ye cannot serve God, and mammon.

“²⁵ Therefore, I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or, what ye shall drink ; nor, yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment ? ²⁶ Behold the fowls of the air : for, they sow not, neither, do they reap, nor, gather into barns ; yet, your heavenly Father, feedeth **THEM**. Are ye not much better than they ?

“²⁷ Which of you, by taking thought, can add one cubit unto his stature ? ²⁸ And why take ye thought for raiment ? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow ; they toil not, neither, do they spin : ²⁹ and yet I say unto you, That even Solomon, in all his glory, was **NOT** arrayed like one of these. ³⁰ Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to day is, and to morrow, is cast into the oven, shall **He** not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith ?

“³¹ Therefore, take no thought, saying, ‘ What shall we eat ? ’ or, ‘ What shall we drink ? ’ or, ‘ Wherewithal shall we be clothed ? ’ ³² (for, after all these things do the Gentiles seek :) for, your heavenly Father, knoweth, that ye have **NEED** of all these things. ³³ But, seek ye first the kingdom of God, and His righteousness ; and all these things, shall be added unto you.

“³⁴ Take, therefore, no thought for the morrow : for, the morrow, shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

CHAPTER VII.

*1 Christ ending his sermon in the mount, reproveth rash judgment,
6 forbiddeth to cast holy things to dogs, 7 exhorteth to prayer,
13 to enter in at the strait gate, 15 to beware of false prophets,
21 not to be hearers, but doers of the word : 24 like houses builded
on a rock, 26 and not on the sand.*

CHAPTER VII.

¹ “ Judge not, that ye be not judged. ² For, with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.

³ “ And why beholdest thou the MOTE, that is in thy brother’s eye, but, considerest not the BEAM, that is in thine own eye? ⁴ or, how wilt thou say to thy brother, ‘ Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye;’ and, behold, a beam, is in thine own eye? ⁵ Thou hypocrite, first, cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then, shalt thou see clearly, to cast out the mote out of thy brother’s eye.

⁶ “ Give not that, which is holy, unto the dogs, neither, cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again, and rend you.

⁷ “ Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: ⁸ for, every one, that asketh, receiveth; and he, that seeketh, findeth; and to him, that knocketh, it shall be opened.

⁹ “ Or, what man is there of you, whom, if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone? ¹⁰ or, if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? ¹¹ If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father, which is in heaven, give good things to them, that ask Him?

¹² “ Therefore, all things whatsoever ye would, that men should do to you, do ye even so to THEM: for, this, is the Law, and the Prophets.

¹³ “ Enter ye in at the strait gate: for, wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be, which go in thereat: ¹⁴ because, strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be, that find it.

¹⁵ “ Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sleep’s clothing, but, inwardly they are ravening wolves. ¹⁶ Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or, figs of thistles? ¹⁷ even so, every GOOD TREE, bringeth forth GOOD FRUIT; but, a CORRUPT tree, bringeth forth EVIL fruit. ¹⁸ A good tree, CANNOT bring forth EVIL FRUIT, neither, can a corrupt tree bring forth GOOD FRUIT. ¹⁹ Every tree, that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down, and cast into the fire. ²⁰ Wherefore, by their fruits ye shall know them.

SAINT MATTHEW.

²¹ “ Not every one, that saith unto me, ‘ Lord, Lord,’ shall enter into the kingdom of heaven ; but he, that doeth the will of my Father, which is in heaven. ²² Many, will say to me, in that day, ‘ Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name ? and, in thy name, have cast out devils ? and, in thy name, done many wonderful works ? ’ ²³ And then, will I profess unto them, I never knew you : depart from me, ye, that work iniquity.

²⁴ “ Therefore, whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a **WISE** man, which built his house upon **A ROCK**: ²⁵ and the rain, descended, and the floods, came, and the winds, blew, and beat upon that house ; and it fell not : for, it was founded upon **a rock**.

²⁶ “ And every one, that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a **FOOLISH** man, which built his house upon **THE SAND**: ²⁷ and the rain, descended, and the floods, came, and the winds, blew, and beat upon that house ; and it fell : and great was the fall of it.”

²⁸ And it came to pass, when Jesus, had ended these sayings, the people, were astonished at his doctrine : ²⁹ for, he taught them as *one* having authority, and not as the Scribes.

CHAPTER VIII.

2 Christ cleanseth the leper, 5 healeth the centurion's servant, 14 Peter's mother in law, 16 and many other diseased : 18 sheweth how he is to be followed : 23 stilleth the tempest on the sea, 28 driveth the devils out of two men possessed, 31 and suffereth them to go into the swine.

¹ When he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes, followed him.

² And, behold, there came a leper, and worshipped him, saying, “ Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.”

³ And Jesus, put forth *his* hand, and touched him, saying, “ I will ; be thou clean.”

And, immediately, his leprosy, was cleansed.

⁴ And Jesus, saith unto him, “ See thou tell no man ;

CHAPTER VIII.

“ but, go thy way, shew thyself to the Priest, and offer the gift, that Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.”

⁶ And when Jesus was entered into Capernaum, there came unto him a centurion, beseeching him, ⁶ and saying, “ Lord, my servant, lieth at home sick of the palsy, grievously tormented.”

⁷ And Jesus saith unto him, “ I will come, and heal him.”

⁸ The centurion answered, and said, “ Lord, I am not worthy, that thou shouldest come under my roof: but, speak the word only, and my servant, shall be healed. ⁹ For, I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me: and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.”

¹⁰ When Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them, that followed, “ Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel. ¹¹ And I say unto you, That many, shall come from the East, and West, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven. ¹² But, the children of the kingdom, shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping, and gnashing of teeth.” ¹³ And Jesus, said unto the centurion, “ Go thy way; and as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee.”

And his servant, was healed in the selfsame hour.

¹⁴ And when Jesus was come into Peter’s house, he saw his wife’s mother laid, and sick of a fever. ¹⁵ And he touched her hand, and the fever, left her: and she arose, and ministered unto them.

¹⁶ When the even, was come, they brought unto him many, that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits, with his word, and healed all, that were sick: ¹⁷ that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, “ Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses.”

¹⁸ Now, when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment, to depart unto the other side.

SAINT MATTHEW.

¹⁹ And a certain Scribe, came, and said unto him, “ Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.”

²⁰ And Jesus, saith unto him, “ The foxes, have holes, and the birds of the air, *have* nests ; but, the Son of man, hath not where to lay *his* head.”

²¹ And another of his disciples, said unto him, Lord, “ suffer me first, to go, and bury my father.”

²² But, Jesus, said unto him, “ Follow me ; and let the dead **BURY** their dead.”

²³ And when he was entered into a ship, his disciples, followed him. ²⁴ And, behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch, that the ship, was covered with the waves : but, he was asleep. ²⁵ And his disciples, came to him, and awoke him, saying, “ Lord, save us : we perish.”

²⁶ And he saith unto them, “ Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith ?” Then, he arose, and rebuked the winds, and the sea ; and there was a great calm.

²⁷ But, the men, marvelled, saying, “ What manner of man is this, that even the winds, and the sea, obey him !”

²⁸ And when he was come to the other side, into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two, possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so, that no man, might pass by that way. ²⁹ And, behold, they cried out, saying, “ What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God ? art thou come hither, to torment us before the time ?”

³⁰ And there was, a good way off from them, an herd of many swine, feeding. ³¹ So, the devils, besought him, saying, “ If thou cast us out, suffer us, to go away into the herd of swine.”

³² And he said unto them, “ Go.”

And, when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine : and, behold, the whole herd of swine, ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters.

³³ And they, that kept them, fled, and went their ways into the city, and told every thing, and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils. ³⁴ And, behold, the whole city, came out to meet Jesus : and when they saw him, they besought him, that he would depart out of their coasts.

CHAPTER IX.

CHAPTER IX.

2 Christ cureth one sick of the palsy, **9** calleth Matthew from the receipt of custom, **10** eateth with Publicans and sinners, **14** defendeth his disciples for not fasting, **20** cureth the bloody issue, **23** raiseth from death Jairus' daughter, **27** giveth sight to two blind men, **32** healeth a dumb man possessed of a devil, **36** and hath compassion of the multitude.

1 And he entered into a ship, and passed over, and came into his own city.

2 And, behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and Jesus, seeing their faith, said unto the sick of the palsy, "Son, be of good cheer; thy sins be forgiven thee."

3 And, behold, certain of the Scribes, said within themselves, "This man, blasphemeth."

4 And Jesus, knowing their thoughts, said, "Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts? **5** For, whether, is easier, to say, 'Thy sins be forgiven thee;' or, to say, 'Arise, and walk?' **6** But, that ye may know, that the Son of man, hath power, on earth, to forgive sins," (then saith he to the sick of the palsy,) "Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house."

7 And he arose, and departed to his house. **8** But, when the multitudes, saw it, they marvelled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto men.

9 And as Jesus, passed forth from thence, he saw a man, named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom: and he saith unto him, "Follow me." And he arose, and followed him.

10 And it came to pass, as Jesus, sat at meat in the house, behold, many Publicans, and sinners, came, and sat down with him, and his disciples. **11** And when the Pharisees, saw it, they said unto his disciples, "Why eateth your Master with Publicans, and sinners?"

12 But, when Jesus, heard that, he said unto them, "They, that be whole, need not a physician, but, they, that are sick. **13** But, go ye, and learn, what that meaneth, 'I will have mercy, and not sacrifice:' for, I am not come, to call the RIGHTEOUS, but, SINNERS, to repentance."

14 Then came to him the disciples of John, saying,

SAINT MATTHEW.

“ Why do we, and the Pharisees, fast oft, but, thy disciples,
“ fast not ? ”

¹⁵ And Jesus, said unto them, “ Can the children of the
“ bridechamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom, is with
“ them ? but, the days, will come, when the bridegroom,
“ shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.

¹⁶ “ No man, putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old gar-
“ ment, for, that, which is put in to fill it up, taketh from
“ the garment, and the rent, is made worse. ¹⁷ Neither, do
“ men put new wine into old bottles : else, the bottles, break,
“ and the wine, runneth out, and the bottles, perish : but,
“ they put new wine into new bottles, and both, are
“ preserved.”

¹⁸ While he spake these things unto them, behold, there
came a certain ruler, and worshipped him, saying, “ My
“ daughter, is, even now, dead : but, come, and lay thy hand
“ upon her, and she shall live.”

¹⁹ And Jesus, arose, and followed him, and *so did* his
disciples.

²⁰ (And, behold, a woman, which was diseased with an
issue of blood twelve years, came behind *him*, and touched
the hem of his garment : ²¹ for, she said within herself, “ If
“ I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole.” ²² But,
Jesus, turned him about, and when he saw her, he said,
“ Daughter, be of good comfort ; thy faith, hath made thee
“ whole.”—And the woman, was made whole from that
hour.)

²³ And when Jesus, came into the ruler’s house, and saw
the minstrels, and the people, making a noise, ²⁴ he said unto
them, “ Give place : for, the maid, is not dead, but, sleepeth.”

And they laughed him to scorn.

²⁵ But, when the people, were put forth, he went in, and
took her by the hand, and the maid, arose. ²⁶ And the same
thercof, went abroad into all that land.

²⁷ And when Jesus, departed thence, two blind men,
followed him, crying, and saying, “ *Thou* Son of David,
“ have mercy on us.”

²⁸ And when he was come into the house, the blind men,
came to him : and Jesus, saith unto them, “ Believe ye,
“ that I am able, to do this ? ”

CHAPTER X.

They said unto him, " Yea, Lord."

²⁹ Then touched he their eyes, saying, " According to your faith, be it unto you."

³⁰ And their eyes, were opened; and Jesus, straitly charged them, saying, " See, *that* no man, know it." ³¹ But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that country.

³² As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man, possessed with a devil. ³³ And when the devil, was cast out, the dumb, spake: and the multitudes, marvelled, saying, " It was never so seen in Israel." ³⁴ But, the Pharisees, said, " He casteth out devils through the PRINCE of the " devils."

³⁵ And Jesus, went about all the cities, and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness, and every disease, among the people. ³⁶ But, when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because, they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep, having no shepherd. ³⁷ Then saith he unto his disciples, " The harvest, truly, *is* " plenteous, but, the labourers, *are* few; ³⁸ pray ye, there- " fore, the Lord of the harvest, that He will send forth " labourers into His harvest."

CHAPTER X.

¹ Christ sendeth out his twelve apostles, enabling them with power to do miracles, ⁵ giveth them their charge, teacheth them, ¹⁶ comforteth them against persecutions: ⁴⁰ and promiseth a blessing to those that receive them.

¹ And when he had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them power *against* unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease.

² Now, the names of the twelve apostles, are these; The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother; ³ Philip, and Bartholomew; Thomas, and Matthew the Publican; James the son of Alphæus, and Lebbæus, whose surname

was Thaddæus ; ⁴ Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

⁵ These twelve, Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, “ Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into *any* “ city of the Samaritans enter ye not : ⁶ but, go rather to the “ lost sheep of the house of Israel. ⁷ And as ye go, preach, “ saying, ‘ The kingdom of heaven, is at hand.’ ⁸ Heal the “ sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils : freely “ ye have received, freely give. ⁹ Provide neither gold, nor, “ silver, nor, brass in your purses, ¹⁰ nor, scrip for *your* “ journey, neither, two coats, neither, shoes, nor yet, staves : “ for, the workman, is worthy of his meat. ¹¹ And into “ whatsoever city, or, town, ye shall enter, enquire, who, in it, “ is worthy ; and there abide till ye go thence. ¹² And when “ ye come into an house, salute it. ¹³ And if the house be “ worthy, let your peace come upon it: but, if it be **NOT** “ worthy, let your peace return to you. ¹⁴ And whosoever “ shall not receive you, nor, hear your words, when ye depart “ out of that house, or, city, shake off the dust of your feet. “ ¹⁵ Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the “ land of Sodom, and Gomorrah, in the day of judgment, “ than for that city.

¹⁶ “ Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of “ wolves : be ye, therefore, **WISE** as serpents, and **HARMLESS** “ as doves. ¹⁷ But, beware of men : for, they will deliver you “ up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their syna-“ gogues ; ¹⁸ and ye shall be brought before governors, and “ kings, for my sake, for a testimony against them, and the “ Gentiles. ¹⁹ But, when they deliver you up, take no “ thought, how, or, what, ye shall speak : for, it shall be “ given you, in that same hour, what ye shall speak. ²⁰ For, “ it is not **YE**, that speak, but **THE SPIRIT** of your Father, “ which speaketh in you.

²¹ “ And the brother, shall deliver up the brother to death, “ and the father, the child : and the children, shall rise up “ against *their* parents, and cause them, to be put to death. “ ²² And ye shall be hated of all *men*, for my name’s sake : “ but, lie, that endureth to the end, shall be saved.

²³ “ But, when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into “ another : for, verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone “ over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come.

CHAPTER X.

²⁴ " The disciple, is not above *his* master, nor, the servant, above his lord. ²⁵ It is enough for the disciple, that he be *as* his master, and the servant *as* his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more, *shall they call* them of his household? ²⁶ Fear them not therefore: for, there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known. ²⁷ What I tell you in darkness, *that* speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, *that* preach ye upon the housetops. ²⁸ And fear not them, which kill the body, but, are not able, to kill the soul: but, rather fear Him, which is able, to destroy both soul, and body in hell. ²⁹ Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them, shall not fall on the ground without your Father. ³⁰ But, the very hairs of your head, are all numbered. ³¹ Fear ye not, therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows.

³² " Whosoever, therefore, shall confess **ME**, before men, **HIM** will I confess also before my Father, which is in heaven. ³³ But, whosoever shall **DENY** me, before men, him will I also **DENY**, before my Father, which is in heaven.

³⁴ " Think not, that I am come, to send peace on earth: I came not, to send peace, but, a sword. ³⁵ For, I am come, to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter, against her mother, and the daughter in law, against her mother in law. ³⁶ And a man's foes, *shall be* they of his own household.

³⁷ " He, that loveth father, or, mother, more than me, is not worthy of me: and he, that loveth son, or, daughter, more than me, is not worthy of me. ³⁸ And he, that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. ³⁹ He, that findeth his life, shall lose it: and he, that loseth his life for my sake, shall find it. ⁴⁰ He, that receiveth **YOU**, receiveth **ME**, and he, that receiveth me, receiveth **HIM**, that sent me. ⁴¹ He, that receiveth a prophet, in the **NAME** of a prophet, shall receive a prophet's reward; and he, that receiveth a righteous man, in the **NAME** of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous man's reward. ⁴² And whosoever shall give to drink, unto one of these little ones, a cup of cold *water* only, in the **NAME** of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall, in no wise, lose his reward."

CHAPTER XI.

2 John sendeth his disciples to Christ. **7** Christ's testimony concerning John. **18** The opinion of the people, both concerning John and Christ. **20** Christ upbraideth the unthankfulness and unrepentance of Chorazin, Bethsaida, and Capernaum: **25** and praising his Father's wisdom in revealing the Gospel to the simple, **28** he calleth to him all such as feel the burden of their sins.

1 And it came to pass, when Jesus, had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence, to teach, and to preach, in their cities.

2 Now, when John, had heard in the prison, the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples, **3** and said unto him, “Art thou he, that should come, or, do we look for “another?”

4 Jesus, answered, and said unto them, “Go, and shew “John again those things, which ye do hear, and see: **5** the “blind, receive their sight, and the lame, walk, the lepers, “are cleansed, and the deaf, hear, the dead, are raised up, “and the poor, have the Gospel preached to them. **6** And “blessed is he, whosoever shall not be offended in me.”

7 And as they departed, Jesus, began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, “What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind? **8** But, what “went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? “behold, they, that wear soft clothing, are in kings' houses. **9** But, what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I “say unto you, and MORE than a prophet. **10** For, this, is “he, of whom it is written, ‘Behold, I send my messenger, “before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before “thee.’ **11** Verily I say unto you, Among them, that are “born of women, there hath not risen a greater than John “the Baptist: notwithstanding, he, that is least in the king-“dom of heaven, is greater than he. **12** And, from the days “of John the Baptist until now, the kingdom of heaven, “suffereth violence, and the violent, take it by force. **13** For, “all the Prophets, and the Law, prophesied until John. **14** And “if ye will receive it, this, is Elias, which was for to come. **15** He, that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

16 “But, whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is “like unto children, sitting in the markets, and calling unto

CHAPTER XI.

“ their fellows,”¹⁴ and saying, ‘ We have piped unto you, and “ ye have not danced ; we have mourned unto you, and “ ye have not lamented.’¹⁵ For, John, came, neither eating, “ nor, drinking, and they say, ‘ He hath a devil.’¹⁶ The “ Son of man, came, eating, and drinking, and they say, “ ‘ Behold a man gluttonous, and a winebibber, a friend of “ Publicans, and sinners.’ But, wisdom, is justified of her “ children.”

²⁰ Then began he to upbraid the cities, wherein most of his mighty works, were done, because, they repented not :
²¹ “ Woe unto thee, Chorazin ! woe unto thee, Bethsaida ! “ for, if the mighty works, which were done in you, had “ been done in Tyre, and Sidon, they would have repented, “ long ago, in sackcloth, and ashes.²² But, I say unto you, “ It shall be more tolerable for TYRE, and SIDON, at the “ day of judgment, than for YOU.

²³ “ And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, “ shalt be brought down to hell : for, if the mighty works, “ which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it “ would have remained until this day.²⁴ But, I say unto “ you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom, “ in the day of judgment, than for THEE.”

²⁵ At that time, Jesus, answered, and said, “ I thank “ Thee, O Father, Lord of heaven, and earth, because, Thou “ hast HID these things from the wise, and prudent, and hast “ REVEALED them unto babes.²⁶ Even so, Father : for, so, “ it seemed good in Thy sight.

²⁷ “ All things, are delivered unto me of my Father : and “ no man, knoweth the Son, but, the Father ; neither, “ knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to “ whomsoever, the Son, will reveal *Him*.

²⁸ “ Come unto me, all *ye*, that labour, and are heavy “ laden, and I will give you rest.²⁹ Take my yoke upon “ you, and learn of me ; for, I am meek, and lowly in heart : “ and ye shall find rest unto your souls.³⁰ For, MY yoke “ is easy, and MY burden, is light.”

CHAPTER XII.

1 Christ reproveth the blindness of the Pharisees concerning the breach of the sabbath, 3 by scriptures, 9 by reason, 13 and by a miracle. 22 He healeth the man possessed that was blind and dumb. 31 Blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall never be forgiven. 39 Account shall be made of idle words. 38 He rebuketh the unfaithful, who seek after a sign: 40 and sheweth who is his brother, sister, and mother.

1 At that time, Jesus, went, on the sabbath day, through the corn; and his disciples, were an hungered, and began, to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat.

2 But, when the Pharisees, saw it, they said unto him, "Behold, thy disciples, do that, which is not LAWFUL, to do upon the sabbath day."

3 But, he said unto them, "Have ye not read, what David, "did, when he was an hungered, and they, that were with "him; **4** how he entered into the house of God, and did eat "the shewbread, which was not lawful, for him to eat, nei- "ther, for them, which were with him, but, only for the "priests? **5** Or, have ye not read in the law, how, that, on "the sabbath days, the priests, in the temple, profane the "sabbath, and are blameless? **6** But, I say unto you, That "in this place, is one, GREATER than the temple. **7** But, if "ye had known, what this, meaneth, 'I will have mercy, and "not sacrifice,' ye would not have condemned the guiltless. **8** For, the Son of man, is Lord even of the sabbath day."

9 And when he was departed thence, he went into their synagogue: **10** and, behold, there was a man, which had his hand withered.

And they asked him, saying, "Is it lawful, to heal on the "sabbath days?" that they might accuse him.

11 And he said unto them, "What man, shall there be "among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a "pit on the sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift "it out? **12** How much, then, is a man better than a sheep? "Wherefore, it is lawful, to do WELL on the sabbath days." **13** Then saith he to the man, "Stretch forth thine hand." And he stretched it forth; and it was restored whole, like as the other.

14 Then the Pharisees, went out, and held a council

CHAPTER XII.

against him, how they might destroy him. ¹⁵ But, when Jesus knew it, he withdrew himself from thence: and great multitudes, followed him, and he healed them all; ¹⁶ and charged them, that they should not make him known: ¹⁷ that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, “¹⁸ Behold my servant, whom I have chosen: my beloved, in whom, my soul, is well pleased: I will put my spirit upon him, and he shall shew judgment to the Gentiles. “¹⁹ He shall not strive, nor, cry; neither, shall any man hear his voice in the streets. ²⁰ A bruised reed, shall he not break, and smoking flax, shall he not quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory. ²¹ And, in his name, shall the Gentiles trust.”

²² Then was brought unto him one, possessed with a devil, blind, and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch, that the blind, and dumb, both spake, and saw.

²³ And all the people, were amazed, and said, “ Is not this, the Son of David ? ” ²⁴ but, when the Pharisees, heard it, they said, “ This fellow, doth not cast out devils, but, by Beelzebub the PRINCE of the devils.”

²⁵ And Jesus, knew their thoughts, and said unto them, “ Every kingdom, divided against itself, is brought to desolation ; and every city, or, house, divided against itself, shall not stand: ²⁶ and if Satan cast out Satan, HE is divided against himself; how shall, then, his kingdom stand ? ²⁷ And if I, by Beelzebub, cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out ? Therefore, they shall be your judges. ²⁸ But, if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God, is come unto you.

²⁹ “ Or else, how can one enter into a strong man’s house, and spoil his goods, except he first BIND the strong man ? and then he will spoil his house. ³⁰ He, that is not with me, is against me; and he, that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad.

³¹ “ Wherefore, I say unto you, All manner of sin, and blasphemy, shall be forgiven unto men: but, the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, shall NOT be forgiven unto men. ³² And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but, whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall NOT be for-

" given him, neither, in this world, neither, in the *world*
" to come.

³³ " Either, make the tree good, and his fruit good; or
" else, make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for, the
" tree, is known by *his* fruit.

³⁴ " O, generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak
" good things? for, out of the abundance of the heart, the
" mouth, speaketh. ³⁵ A GOOD man, out of the GOOD
" TREASURE of the heart, bringeth forth GOOD THINGS:
" and an EVIL man, out of the EVIL TREASURE, bringeth
" forth EVIL THINGS. ³⁶ But, I say unto you, That every
" idle word, that men, shall speak, they shall give account
" thereof, in the day of judgment. ³⁷ For, by thy words,
" thou shalt be justified, and by thy words, thou shalt be
" condemned."

³⁸ Then, certain of the Scribes, and of the Pharisees,
answered, saying, " Master, we would see a sign from thee."

³⁹ But, he answered, and said unto them, " An evil, and
" adulterous generation, seeketh after a sign; and there shall
" no sign be given to it, but, the sign of the prophet Jonas:
" ⁴⁰ for, as Jonas, was three days, and three nights, in the
" whale's belly; so, shall the Son of man be three days,
" and three nights, in the heart of the earth.

⁴¹ " The men of Nineveh, shall rise in judgment with this
" generation, and shall condemn it: because, they repented, at
" the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a GREATER than
" Jonas, is here.

⁴² " The queen of the south, shall rise up in the judgment
" with this generation, and shall condemn it: for, she came,
" from the uttermost parts of the earth, to hear the wisdom
" of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than SOLOMON, is here.

⁴³ " When the unclean spirit, is gone out of a man, he
" walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none.
" ⁴⁴ Then he saith, 'I will return into my house, from whence
" I came out;' and when he is come, he findeth it empty,
" swept, and garnished. ⁴⁵ Then goeth he, and taketh with
" himself seven other spirits, more wicked than himself, and
" they enter in, and dwell there: and the last *state* of that
" man, is worse than the first. Even so shall it be, also
" unto this wicked generation."

⁴⁶ While he yet talked to the people, behold, *his*
26

CHAPTER XIII.

mother, and his brethren, stood without, desiring, to speak with him.—⁴⁷ Then one, said unto him, “Behold, thy mother, and thy brethren, stand without, desiring, to speak with thee.”

⁴⁸ But, he answered, and said unto him, that told him, “Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?” ⁴⁹ And he stretched forth his hand toward his DISCIPLES, and said, “Behold my mother, and my brethren! ⁵⁰ For, whosoever shall do the will of my Father, which is in heaven, the same, is my brother, and sister, and mother.”

CHAPTER XIII.

*3 The parable of the sower and the seed : 18 the exposition of it.
24 The parable of the tares, 31 of the mustard seed, 33 of the leaven, 44 of the hidden treasure, 45 of the pearl, 47 of the draw net cast into the sea : 53 and how Christ is contemned of his own countrymen.*

¹ The same day, went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea side. ² And great multitudes, were gathered together unto him, so, that he went into a ship, and sat; and the whole multitude, stood on the shore.

³ And he spake many things unto them, in parables, saying, “Behold, a sower, went forth, to sow; ⁴ and when he sowed, some seeds, fell by the way side, and the fowls, came, and devoured them up: ⁵ some, fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith, they sprung up, because, they had no DEEPNESS of earth: ⁶ and when the sun, was up, they were scorched; and, because they had no root, they withered away. ⁷ And some, fell among thorns; and the thorns, sprung up, and choked them: ⁸ but, other, fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some, an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some, thirty-fold. ⁹ Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.”

¹⁰ And the disciples, came, and said unto him, “Why speakest thou unto them in parables?”

¹¹ He answered, and said unto them, “Because, it is given unto YOU, to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but, to THEM it is NOT given. ¹² For, whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance:

" but, whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away
 " even that he hath. ¹³ Therefore, speak I to them in par-
 " ables : because, they, seeing, see not ; and, hearing, they hear
 " not, neither, do they understand. ¹⁴ And, in them, is ful-
 " filled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, ' By hearing, ye
 " shall hear, and shall not understand ; and seeing, ye shall
 " see, and shall not perceive : ¹⁵ for, this people's heart, is
 " waxed gross, and *their* ears, are dull of hearing, and their
 " eyes they have closed ; lest, at any time, they should see
 " with *their* eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and should
 " understand with *their* heart, and should be converted,
 " and I should heal them.' ¹⁶ But, blessed are your eyes,
 " for, they see : and your ears, for, they hear. ¹⁷ For, verily
 " I say unto you, That many prophets, and righteous men,
 " have desired to see *those things*, which ye see, and have
 " not seen *them* ; and to hear *those things*, which ye hear,
 " and have not heard *them*.

¹⁸ " Hear ye, therefore, the parable of the sower. ¹⁹ When
 " any one, heareth the word of the kingdom, and understand-
 " eth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away
 " that, which was sown in his heart. This, is he, which
 " received seed by the way side. ²⁰ But, he, that received
 " the seed into stony places, the same, is he, that heareth
 " the word, and anon, with joy, receiveth it ; ²¹ yet, hath
 " he not root in himself, but, dureth for a while : for, when
 " tribulation, or, persecution, ariseth because of the word,
 " by and by, he is offended. ²² He also, that received seed
 " among the thorns, is he, that heareth the word ; and the care
 " of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the
 " word, and he becometh unfruitful. ²³ But, he, that
 " received seed into the good ground, is he, that heareth
 " the word, and understandeth it ; which, also, beareth fruit,
 " and bringeth forth, some, an hundredfold, some, sixty,
 " some, thirty."

²⁴ Another parable put he forth unto them, saying,
 " The kingdom of heaven, is likened unto a man, which
 " sowed good seed in his field : ²⁵ but, while men, slept, his
 " enemy came, and sowed tares among the wheat, and went
 " his way. ²⁶ But, when the blade, was sprung up, and
 " brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

²⁷ " So the servants of the householder, came, and said
 28

CHAPTER XIII.

“ unto him, ‘ Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field?
“ from whence then hath it tares?’

“ He said unto them, ‘ An enemy, hath done this.’

“ The servants, said unto him, ‘ Wilt thou, then that we
“ go, and gather them up?’

“ But, he said, ‘ Nay; lest, while ye gather up the
“ TARES, ye root up also the WHEAT with them. Let
“ both grow together, until the harvest: and, in the time
“ of harvest, I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together
“ first the tares, and bind them in bundles, to burn them:
“ but, gather the wheat into my barn.’ ”

“ Another parable put he forth unto them, saying,
“ The kingdom of heaven, is like to a grain of mustard seed,
“ which a man, took, and sowed in his field: which, in-
“ deed, is the least of all seeds: but, when it is grown, it
“ is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree, so,
“ that the birds of the air, come, and lodge in the branches
“ thereof.”

“ Another parable spake he unto them; “ The king-
“ dom of heaven, is like unto leaven, which a woman, took,
“ and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole, was
“ leavened.”

“ All these things, spake Jesus unto the multitude in
parables; and, WITHOUT a parable, spake he NOT unto them:
“ that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the prophet,
saying, “ I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter
“ things, which have been kept secret from the foundation of
“ the world.”

“ Then Jesus, sent the multitude away, and went into
the house: and his disciples, came unto him, saying, “ De-
“ clare unto us, the parable of the tares of the field.”

“ He answered, and said unto them, “ He that soweth the
“ good seed, is the Son of man; the field, is the world;
“ the good seed, are the children of the kingdom; but, the
“ tares, are the children of the wicked one; the enemy
“ that sowed them, is the devil; the harvest, is the end
“ of the world; and the reapers, are the angels. As
“ therefore, the tares, are gathered, and burned in the fire; so
“ shall it be, in the end of this world. The Son of man
“ shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather, out of
“ his kingdom, all things, that offend, and them, which do

“ iniquity ; ⁴² and shall cast them into a furnace of fire : there “ shall be wailing, and gnashing of teeth. ⁴³ Then, shall the “ righteous shine forth, as the sun, in the kingdom of their “ Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

“ Again, the kingdom of heaven, is like unto treasure, “ hid in a field ; the which, when a man, hath found, he “ hideth, and, for joy thereof, goeth, and selleth all, that he “ hath, and BUYETH that field.

⁴⁵ “ Again, the kingdom of heaven, is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls : ⁴⁶ who, when he had “ found one pearl of great price, went, and sold all, that he “ had, and bought it.

“ Again, the kingdom of heaven, is like unto a net, that “ was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind : ⁴⁸ which, “ when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and “ gathered the good into vessels, but, cast the bad away. “ So, shall it be, at the end of the world : the angels, shall “ come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, “ and shall cast them into the furnace of fire : there shall “ be wailing, and gnashing of teeth.”

⁵¹ Jesus, saith unto them, “ Have ye understood all “ these things ?”

They say unto him, “ Yea, Lord.”

⁵² Then said he unto them, “ Therefore, every scribe “ which is instructed unto the kingdom of heaven, is like “ unto a man, that is an householder, which bringeth forth, “ out of his treasure, things new, and old.”

⁵³ And it came to pass, that when Jesus, had finished these parables, he departed thence. ⁵⁴ And when he was come into his own country, he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch, that they were astonished, and said, “ Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty “ works ? ⁵⁵ Is not this, the carpenter’s son ? is not his mo- “ ther called Mary ? and his brethren, James, and Joses, “ and Simcn, and Judas ? ⁵⁶ And his sisters, are they not all “ with us ? Whence, then, hath this man all these things ?”
⁵⁷ And they were offended in him.

But, Jesus, said unto them, “ A prophet, is not with- “ out honour, save in his own country, and in his own “ house.”

CHAPTER XIV.

^{ss} And he did not many mighty works there, because of their unbelief.

CHAPTER XIV.

Herod's opinion of Christ. 3 Wherefore John Baptist was beheaded. 13 Jesus departeth into a desert place : 15 where he feedeth five thousand men with five loaves and two fishes : 22 he walketh on the sea to his disciples : 34 and landing at Gennesaret, healeth the sick by the touch of the hem of his garment.

¹ At that time, Herod the tetrarch, heard of the fame of Jesus, ² and said unto his servants, “ This, is John the “ Baptist ; he is risen from the dead ; and, therefore, mighty “ works, do shew forth themselves in him.”

³ For, Herod, had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife. ⁴ For, John, said unto him, “ It is not lawful, for thee “ to have her.” ⁵ And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, because, they counted him as a prophet. ⁶ But, when Herod's birth day, was kept, the daughter of Herodias, danced before them, and pleased Herod. ⁷ Whereupon he promised, with an oath, to give her whatsoever she would ask. ⁸ And she, being before instructed of her mother, said, “ Give me here John Baptist's head in a “ charger.” ⁹ And the king, was sorry : nevertheless, for the oath's sake, and them, which sat with him at meat, he commanded it to be given her. ¹⁰ And he sent, and beheaded John in the prison. ¹¹ And his head, was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel : and she brought it to her mother. ¹² And his disciples, came, and took up the body, and buried it, and went, and told Jesus.

¹³ When Jesus, heard of it, he departed thence, by ship, into a desert place apart : and when the people, had heard thereof, they followed him, on foot, out of the cities. ¹⁴ And Jesus, went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick. ¹⁵ And when it was evening, his disciples, caine to him, saying, “ This, is a desert place, and the time, is now “ past ; send the multitude away, that they may go into the “ villages, and buy themselves victuals.”

SAINT MATTHEW.

¹⁶ But, Jesus, said unto them, " They need not depart ;
" give ye them to eat."

¹⁷ And they say unto him, " We have here, but five
" loaves, and two fishes."

¹⁸ He said, " Bring them hither to me."

¹⁹ And he commanded the multitude, to sit down on
the grass, and took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and,
looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the
loaves to *his* disciples, and the disciples, to the multitude.
²⁰ And they did all eat, and were filled : and they took up of
the fragments, that remained, twelve baskets full. ²¹ And
they, that had eaten, were about five thousand men, beside
women, and children.

²² And, straightway, Jesus, constrained his disciples,
to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side,
while he sent the multitudes away.

²³ And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went
up into a mountain apart, to pray : and when the evening,
was come, he was there alone. ²⁴ But, the ship, was now in
the midst of the sea, tossed with waves : for, the wind, was
contrary.

²⁵ And, in the fourth watch of the night, Jesus, went
unto them, walking on the sea.

²⁶ And when the disciples, saw him walking on the sea,
they were troubled, saying, " It is a spirit ; " and they cried
out, for fear.

²⁷ But, straightway, Jesus, spake unto them, saying, " Be
of good cheer ; it is I ; be not afraid."

²⁸ And Peter, answered him, and said, " Lord, if it be thou,
" bid me come unto thee on the water."

²⁹ And he said, " Come."

And when Peter, was come down out of the ship, HE
walked on the water, to go to Jesus. ³⁰ But, when he saw
the wind boisterous, he was afraid ; and, beginning to sink,
he cried, saying, " Lord, save me."

³¹ And immediately, Jesus, stretched forth *his* hand, and
caught him, and said unto him, " O, thou of little faith,
" wherefore didst thou doubt ? "

³² And when they were come into the ship, the wind
ceased.

CHAPTER XV

³³ Then they, that were in the ship, came, and worshipped him, saying, “ Of a truth, thou art the Son of God ”

³⁴ And when they were gone over, they came into the land of Gennesaret. ³⁵ And when the men of that place, had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that country round about, and brought unto him all, that were diseased ; ³⁶ and besought him, that they might only touch the hem of his garment : and as many as touched, were made perfectly whole.

CHAPTER XV.

³ Christ reproveth the Scribes and Pharisees for transgressing God's commandments through their own traditions : 11 teacheth how that which goeth into the mouth doth not defile a man. 21 He healeth the daughter of the woman of Canaan, 30 and other great multitudes : 32 and with seven loaves and a few little fishes feedeth four thousand men, beside women and children.

¹ Then came to Jesus, Scribes, and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying, ² “ Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders ? for, they wash not their hands, when they eat bread.”

³ But, he answered, and said unto them, “ Why do ye, also, transgress the commandment of God, by your tradition ? ⁴ For, God, commanded, saying, ‘ Honour thy father, and mother : ’ and, ‘ He, that curseth father, or, mother, let him die the death.’ ⁵ But, ye say, ‘ Whosoever shall say to his father, or, his mother, It is a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me ; ⁶ and honour not his father, or, his mother, he shall be free.’ Thus, have ye made the commandment of God of none effect, by your tradition. ⁷ Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, ⁸ ‘ This people, draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips ; but, their heart, is far from me. ⁹ But in vain they do worship me, teaching, for doctrines, the commandments of men.’ ”

¹⁰ And he called the multitude, and said unto them, “ Hear, and understand : ¹¹ not that which goeth INTO the mouth, defileth a man ; but, that, which cometh OUT of the mouth, this, defileth a man.”

SAINT MATTHEW.

¹² Then came his disciples, and said unto him, “ Knowest thou, that the Pharisees, were offended, after they heard this saying ? ”

¹³ But, he answered, and said, “ Every plant, which my heavenly Father, hath not planted, shall be rooted up.

¹⁴ Let them alone : they be blind leaders of the blind.

“ And if the blind lead the blind, both, shall fall into the ditch.”

¹⁵ Then answered Peter, and said unto him, “ Declare unto us this parable.”

¹⁶ And Jesus, said, “ Are ye, also, yet without understanding ? ¹⁷ do not ye yet understand, that whatsoever entereth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught ? ¹⁸ but, those things, which proceed out of the mouth, come forth from the heart ; and THEY defile the man. ¹⁹ For, out of the heart, proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies : ²⁰ these are *the things*, which defile a man : but, to eat with unwashen hands, defileth NOT a man.”

²¹ Then Jesus, went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre, and Sidon.

²² And, behold, a woman of Canaan, came out of the same coasts, and cried unto him, saying, “ Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou Son of David ; my daughter, is grievously vexed with a devil.” —²³ But, he answered her not a word.

And his disciples, came, and besought him, saying, “ Send her away ; for, she crieth after us.”

²⁴ But, he answered, and said, “ I am not sent, but, unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.”

²⁵ Then came she, and worshipped him, saying, “ Lord, help me.”

²⁶ But, he answered, and said, “ It is not meet, to take the children’s bread, and to cast it to dogs.”

²⁷ And she said, “ Truth, Lord : yet, the dogs, eat of the crumbs, which fall from their masters’ table.”

²⁸ Then Jesus, answered, and said unto her, “ O, woman, great is thy faith : be it unto thee even as thou wilt.”

And her daughter, was made whole from that very hour.

²⁹ And Jesus, departed from thence, and came nigh

CHAPTER XVI.

unto the sea of Galilee; and went up into a mountain, and sat down there. ³⁰ And great multitudes, came unto him, having with them *those, that were* lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus' feet; and he healed them: ³¹ insomuch, that the multitude, wondered, when they saw the dumb, to speak, the maimed, to be whole, the lame, to walk, and the blind, to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

³² Then Jesus, called his disciples *unto him*, and said, "I have compassion on the multitude, because, they "continue with me, now, three days, and have nothing to "eat: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint "in the way."

³³ And his disciples, say unto him, "Whence should we "have so much bread, in the wilderness, as to fill so great "a multitude?"

³⁴ And Jesus, saith unto them, "How many loaves have "ye?"

And they said, "Seven, and a few little fishes."

³⁵ And he commanded the multitude, to sit down on the ground.

³⁶ And he took the seven loaves, and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake *them*, and gave to his disciples, and the disciples, to the multitude. ³⁷ And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken *meat*, that was left, seven baskets full. ³⁸ And they, that did eat, were four thousand men, beside women, and children.

³⁹ And he sent away the multitude, and took ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

CHAPTER XVI.

¹ *The Pharisees require a sign.* ⁶ *Jesus warneth his disciples of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees.* ¹³ *The people's opinion of Christ,* ¹⁶ *and Peter's confession of him.* ²¹ *Jesus foretelleth his death,* ²³ *reproving Peter for dissuading him from it:* ²⁴ *and admonisheth those that will follow him, to bear the cross.*

¹ *The Pharisees also, with the Sadducees, came, and tempting, desired him, that he would shew them a sign from heaven.*

² *He answered, and said unto them, "When it is evening,*

SAINT MATTHEW.

“ ye say, ‘ *It will be* fair weather: for, the sky, is red.’
“ ³ And, in the morning, ‘ *It will be* foul weather to day:
“ ‘ for, the sky, is red, and lowering.’ O, ye hypocrites, ye
“ can discern the face of the sky; but, can ye not *discern*
“ the signs of the times? ⁴ A wicked, and adulterous gene-
“ ration, seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given
“ unto it, but, the sign of the prophet Jonas.”—And he left
them, and departed.

⁵ And when his disciples, were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

⁶ Then Jesus, said unto them, “ Take heed, and beware
“ of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees.”

⁷ And they reasoned among themselves, saying, “ *It is,*
“ because, we have taken no bread.”

⁸ Which when Jesus, perceived, he said unto them, “ O,
“ ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves, because,
“ ye have brought no bread? ⁹ Do ye not yet understand,
“ neither, remeinber the five loaves of the five thousand, and
“ how many baskets ye took up? ¹⁰ neither, the seven loaves of
“ the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?
“ ¹¹ How is it, that ye do not understand, that I spake *it* not
“ to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the lea-
“ ven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees?”

¹² Then understood they, how, that he bade *them*, not be-
ware of the leaven of bread, but, of the DOCTRINE of the
Pharisees, and of the Sadducees.

¹³ When Jesus, came into the coasts of Cæsarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, “ Whom do men say,
“ that I, the Son of man, am?”

¹⁴ And they said, “ Some, say, that thou art John the
“ Baptist: some, Elias; and others, Jeremias, or, ONE OF
“ the prophets.”

¹⁵ He saith unto them, “ But, whom say YE, that I am?”

¹⁶ And Simon Peter, answered, and said, “ Thou art the
“ Christ, the Son of the living God.”

¹⁷ And Jesus, answered, and said unto him, “ Blessed art
“ thou, Simon Bar-jona: for, flesh and blood, hath not re-
“ vealed *it* unto thee, but, my Father, which is in heaven.

¹⁸ And I say, also, unto thee, That thou art Peter, and, upon
“ this roek, I will build my church; and the gates of hell, shall

CHAPTER XVII.

“ not prevail against it. ¹⁹ And I will give unto thee, the
“ keys of the kingdom of heaven : and whatsoever thou shalt
“ bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven : and whatsoever
“ thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.”

²⁰ Then charged he his disciples, that they should tell no
man, that he was Jesus the Christ.

²¹ From that time forth, began Jesus to shew, unto his
disciples, how, that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer
many things of the elders, and Chief Priests, and Scribes, and
be killed, and be raised again the third day.

²² Then Peter, took him, and began, to rebuke him, saying,
“ Be it far from thee, Lord : this, shall not be unto thee.”

²³ But, he turned, and said unto Peter, “ Get thee behind
“ me, Satan : thou art an offence unto me : for, thou savour-
“ est not the things, that be of God, but, those, that be of
“ men.”

²⁴ Then said Jesus unto his disciples, “ If any man will come
“ after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and
“ follow me. ²⁵ For, whosoever will save his life, shall lose
“ it : and whosoever will lose his life, for my sake, shall find
“ it. ²⁶ For, what is a man profited, if he shall GAIN the
“ whole world, and LOSE his own soul ? or, what shall a man
“ give in EXCHANGE for his soul ? ²⁷ For, the Son of man,
“ shall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels ; and
“ then, he shall reward every man, according to his works.
²⁸ Verily I say unto you, There be some standing here,
“ which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man,
“ coming in his kingdom.”

CHAPTER XVII.

¹ *The transfiguration of Christ.* ¹⁴ *He healeth the lunatic,* ²²
foretelleth his own passion, ²⁴ *and payeth tribute.*

¹ And, after six days, Jesus, taketh Peter, James, and
John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high moun-
tain apart, ² and was transfigured before them : and his face,
did shine, as the sun, and his raiment, was white as the light.

³ And, behold, there appeared unto them Moses, and
Elias, talking with him.

SAINT MATTHEW.

⁴ Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, "Lord, it is good, for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one, for thee, and one, for Moses, and one, for Elias."

⁵ While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud, overshadowed them: and behold, a voice, out of the cloud, which said, "This, is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him."

⁶ And when the disciples, heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid.

⁷ And Jesus, came, and touched them, and said, "Arise, and be not afraid."

⁸ And when they had lifted up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only.

⁹ And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus, charged them, saying, "Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man, be risen again from the dead."

¹⁰ And his disciples, asked him, saying, "Why, then, say the Scribes, that Elias, must first come?"

¹¹ And Jesus, answered, and said unto them, "Elias, truly, shall first come, and restore all things. ¹² But, I say unto you, That Elias, is come ALREADY, and they knew him not, but, have done unto him whatsoever they listed. ¹³ Likewise, shall, also, the Son of man suffer of them."

¹³ Then the disciples, understood, that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

¹⁴ And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man, kneeling down to him, and saying, ¹⁵ "Lord, have mercy on my son: for, he is lunatic, and sore vexed: for, oftentimes, he falleth into the fire, and oft, into the water. ¹⁶ And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him."

¹⁷ Then, Jesus, answered, and said, "O, faithless, and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? Bring him hither to me." ¹⁸ And Jesus, rebuked the devil; and he departed out of him: and the child, was cured from that very hour.

¹⁹ Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, "Why could not we cast him out?"

²⁰ And Jesus, said unto them, "Because of your unbelief: for, verily I say unto you, If ye have faith, as a grain of

CHAPTER XVIII.

“ mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, ‘ Remove
“ hence to yonder place ; ’ and it shall remove ; and nothing,
“ shall be impossible unto you. ²¹ Howbeit, this kind, goeth
“ not out, but, by prayer, and fasting.”

²² And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus, said unto them, “ The Son of man, shall be betrayed into the hands of men : ²³ and they shall kill him, and, the third day, he shall be raised again.”—And they were exceeding sorry.

²⁴ And when they were come to Capernaum, they, that received tribute *money*, came to Peter, and said, “ Doth not your master pay tribute ? ”

²⁵ He saith, “ Yes.”

And when he was come into the house, Jesus, prevented him, saying, “ What thinkest thou, Simon ? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom, or, tribute ? of their own children, or, of strangers ? ”

²⁶ Peter, saith unto him, “ Of strangers.”

Jesus, saith unto him, “ Then are the children free. ²⁷ Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish, that first cometh up ; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money : that take, and give unto them for me, and thee.”

CHAPTER XVIII.

1 Christ warneth his disciples to be humble and harmless : 7 to avoid offences, and not to despise the little ones : 15 teacheth how we are to deal with our brethren, when they offend us : 21 and how oft to forgive them : 23 which he setteth forth by a parable of the king, that took account of his servants, 32 and punished him who shewed no mercy to his fellow.

¹ At the same time, came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, “ Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven ? ”

² And Jesus, called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them, ³ and said, “ Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall

SAINT MATTHEW.

“ not enter into the kingdom of heaven. “ Whosoever there-
“ fore, shall humble himself, as this little child, the same, is
“ greatest in the kingdom of heaven. “ And whoso shall re-
“ ceive one such little child, in my name, receiveth me.
“ “ But, whoso shall offend one of these little ones, which
“ believe in me, it were better for him, that a millstone, were
“ hanged about his neck, and *that* he were drowned in the
“ depth of the sea.

“ “ Woe unto the world, because of offences ! for, it must
“ needs be, that offences, come; but, woe to that man by whom
“ the offence, cometh !

“ “ Wherefore, if thy hand, or, thy foot, offend thee, cut
“ them off, and cast *them* from thee : it is better for thee to
“ enter into life, halt, or, maimed, rather than having two
“ hands, or, two feet, to be cast into everlasting fire. “ And if
“ thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee : it
“ is better, for thee to enter into life, with one eye, rather than,
“ having two eyes, to be cast into hell fire.

“ “ Take heed, that ye despise not one of these little ones ;
“ for, I say unto you, That, in heaven, their angels, do, always
“ behold the face of my Father, which is in heaven.

“ “ For, the Son of man, is come, to save that, which was lost.

“ “ How think ye ? if a man have an hundred sheep,
“ and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety
“ and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that
“ which is gone astray ? “ And if so be, that he find it, verily
“ I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that *sheep*, than of the
“ ninety and nine, which went *NOT* astray. “ Even so, it is
“ not the will of your Father, which is in heaven, that one of
“ these little ones, should perish.

“ “ Moreover, if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go,
“ and tell him his fault, between thee, and him alone : if he
“ shall bear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. “ But, if
“ he will *NOT* bear *thee*, then take with thee one, or, two more,
“ that, in the mouth of two, or, three witnesses, every word,
“ may be established. “ And if he shall neglect, to hear *THEM*,
“ tell *it* unto the church : but, if he neglect, to hear the church,
“ let him be unto thee, as an heathen man, and a Publican.

“ “ Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on
“ earth, shall be bound in heaven : and whatsoever ye shall
“ loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

CHAPTER XVIII.

¹⁹ " Again, I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree
" on earth, as touching any thing, that they shall ask, it shall
" be done for them of my Father, which is in heaven. ²⁰ For,
" where two, or, three, are gathered together, in my name,
" there am I in the midst of them."

²¹ Then came Peter to him, and said, " Lord, how
" oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him ?
" till seven times ? "

²² Jesus saith unto him, " I say not unto thee, Until seven
" times : but, Until SEVENTY times seven.

²³ " Therefore, is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a
" certain king, which would take account of his servants.

²⁴ And when he had begun, to reckon, one, was brought
" unto him, which owed him ten thousand TALENTS.

²⁵ But, forasmuch, as he had not to pay, his lord, com-
" manded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all,
" that he had, and payment to be made. ²⁶ The servant,
" therefore, fell down, and worshipped him, saying, ' Lord,
" ' have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.' ²⁷ Then
" the lord of that servant, was moved with compassion, and
" loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

²⁸ " But, the same servant, went out, and found one of
" his fellowservants, which owed him an hundred PENCE :
" and he laid hands on him, and took *him* by the throat,
" saying, ' Pay me that thou owest.' ²⁹ And his fellowser-
" vant, fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, ' Have
" ' patience with me, and I will pay thee all.' ³⁰ And he
" would not : but, went, and cast him into prison, till he
" should pay the debt.

³¹ " So, when his fellowservants, saw what was done, they
" were very sorry, and came, and told unto their lord all, that
" was done. ³² Then his lord, after that he had called him,
" said unto him, ' O, thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all
" ' that debt, because, thou DESIREDST me : ³³ shouldest not
" ' thou, also, have had compassion on thy fellowservant,
" ' even as I had pity on THEE ? ' ³⁴ And his lord, was wroth,
" and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all
" that was due unto him.

³⁵ " So, likewise, shall my heavenly Father do, also, unto
" you, if ye, from your hearts, forgive not every one his
" brother their trespasses."

CHAPTER XIX.

2 Christ healeth the sick : **3** answereth the Pharisees concerning divorce : **10** sheweth when marriage is necessary : **13** receiveth little children : **16** instructeth the young man how to attain eternal life, **20** and how to be perfect : **23** calleth his disciples how hard it is for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God, **27** and promiseth reward to those that forsake any thing to follow him.

¹ And it came to pass, *that* when Jesus, had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judea beyond Jordan ; ² and great multitudes, followed him ; and he healed them there.

³ The Pharisees, also, came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, “Is it lawful, for a man to put away his wife, for every cause ?”

⁴ And he answered, and said unto them, “Have ye not read, that He, which made *them* at the beginning, made them male, and female, ⁵ and said, ‘For this cause, shall a man leave father, and mother, and shall cleave to his wife : ‘and they twain, shall be one flesh ?’ ⁶ Wherefore, they are no more twain, but, one flesh. What, therefore, God, hath joined together, let not man put asunder.”

⁷ They say unto him, “Why did Moses, then, command, to give a writing of divorce, and to put her away ?”

⁸ He saith unto them, “Moses, because of the hardness of your hearts, suffered you, to put away your wives : but, from the beginning, it was not so. ⁹ And I say unto you, Who-soever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery : and whoso marrieth her, which is put away, doth commit adultery.”

¹⁰ His disciples, say unto him, “If the case of the man be so with *his* wife, it is not good, to marry.”

¹¹ But, he said unto them, “All *men*, cannot receive this saying, save *they*, to whom it is given. ¹² For, there are some eunuchs, which were so born from *their* mother’s womb : and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men : and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs, for the kingdom of heaven’s sake. He, that is able to receive *it*, let him receive *it*.”

¹³ Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put *his* hands on them, and pray : and the

CHAPTER XIX.

disciples, rebuked them. ¹⁴ But, Jesus, said, “ Suffer little “ children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for, of “ such, is the kingdom of heaven.” ¹⁵ And he laid *his* hands on them, and departed thence.

¹⁶ And, behold, one, came, and said unto him, “ Good “ Master, what good thing, shall I do, that I may have eter- “ nal life?”

¹⁷ And he said unto him, “ Why callest thou me good? “ *there is* none good, but, one, *that is*, God: but, if thou “ wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.”

¹⁸ He saith unto him, “ Which?”

Jesus, said, “ Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not “ commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not “ bear false witness, ¹⁹ Honour thy father, and *thy* mother: “ and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, as thyself.”

²⁰ The young man, saith unto him, “ All these things “ have I kept, from my youth up: what lack I yet?”

²¹ Jesus, said unto him, “ If thou wilt be perfect, go, *and* “ sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt “ have treasure in heaven: and come, *and* follow me.”

²² But, when the young man, heard that saying, he went away, sorrowful: for, he had great possessions.

²³ Then said Jesus unto his disciples, “ Verily I “ say unto you, That a rich man, shall, hardly, enter into “ the kingdom of heaven. ²⁴ And again I say unto you, It “ is easier, for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, “ than for a rich man, to enter into the kingdom of God.”

²⁵ When his disciples, heard *it*, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, “ Who, then, can be saved?”

²⁶ But, Jesus, beheld *them*, and said unto them, “ With “ men, this, is impossible; but, with God, all things, are “ possible.”

²⁷ Then answered Peter, and said unto him, “ Be- “ hold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall “ we have therefore?”

²⁸ And Jesus, said unto them, “ Verily I say unto you, “ That ye, which have followed me, in the regeneration, “ when the Son of man, shall sit in the throne of his “ glory, ye, also, shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the “ twelve tribes of Israel. ²⁹ And every one, that hath

“ forsaken houses, or, brethren, or, sisters, or, father, or, mother,
 “ or, wife, or, children, or, lands, for my name’s sake, shall
 “ receive an hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life.
 “ ³⁰ But, many, *that are first*, shall be last ; and the last,
 “ *shall be first.*

CHAPTER XX.

1 *Christ by the similitude of the labourers in the vineyard, sheweth that God is debtor unto no man : 17 foretelleth his passion : 20 by answering the mother of Zebedee’s children teacheth his disciples to be lowly : 30 and giveth two blind men their sight.*

“ ¹ For, the kingdom of heaven, is like unto a man,
 “ *that is* an householder, which went out, early in the morn-
 “ ing, to hire labourers into his vineyard. ² And when he
 “ had agreed with the labourers, for a penny a day, he sent
 “ them into his vineyard. ³ And he went out about the
 “ third hour, and saw others, standing idle in the market-
 “ place, ⁴ and said unto them ; ‘ Go ye, also, into the vine-
 “ yard, and whatsoever is right I will give you.’—And they
 “ went their way.

“ ⁵ Again, he went out about the sixth, and ninth
 “ hour, and did likewise.

“ ⁶ And, about the ELEVENTH hour, he went out,
 “ and found OTHERS, standing idle, and saith unto them,
 “ ‘ Why stand ye here, all the day, idle ? ’

“ ⁷ They say unto him, ‘ Because, no man, hath hired us.’

“ He saith unto them, ‘ Go ye, also, into the vineyard ;
 “ and whatsoever is right, *that* shall ye receive.’

“ ⁸ So, when even, was come, the lord of the vine-
 “ yard, saith unto his steward, ‘ Call the labourers, and give
 “ them *their* hire, beginning from the last unto the first.’

“ ⁹ And when they came, that *were hired* about the
 “ eleventh hour, they received every man a penny. ¹⁰ But,
 “ when the FIRST, came, they supposed, that they should have
 “ received MORE ; and they, likewise, received every man a
 “ penny. ¹¹ And, when they had received it, they murmured
 “ against the good man of the house, ¹² saying, ‘ These last, have
 “ wrought, but ONE hour, and thou hast made them EQUAL
 “ unto us, which have borne the burden, and heat of the day.’

CHAPTER XX.

“¹³ But, he answered one of them, and said, ‘ Friend, I do
“ thee no wrong: didst not thou AGREE with me for a penny? ’
“¹⁴ Take *that* thine is, and go thy way: I will give unto this
“ last, even as unto thee. ¹⁵ Is it not lawful, for me to do what
“ I will with mine own? Is thine eye evil, because, I am
“ good?’

“¹⁶ “ So, the last, shall be first, and the first, last: for,
“ many, be CALLED, but, few, CHOOSEN.”

“¹⁷ And Jesus, going up to Jerusalem, took the twelve
disciples apart, in the way, and said unto them, ¹⁸ “ Behold, we
“ go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man, shall be betrayed
“ unto the Chief Priests, and unto the Scribes, and they shall
“ condemn him to death, ¹⁹ and shall deliver him to the Gen-
“ tiles, to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify *him*: and, the
“ third day, he shall rise again.”

“²⁰ Then came to him the mother of Zebedee’s chil-
dren, with her sons, worshipping *him*, and desiring a certain
thing of him.

“²¹ And he said unto her, “ What wilt thou?”

She saith unto him, “ Grant, that these, my two sons, may
sit, the one, on thy right hand, and the other, on the left, in
“ thy kingdom.”

“²² But, Jesus, answered, and said, “ Ye know not, what ye
“ ask. Are ye able, to drink of the cup, that I shall drink of,
“ and to be baptized with the baptism, that I am baptized
“ with?”

They say unto him, “ We are able.”

“²³ And he saith unto them, “ Ye shall drink, indeed, of
“ my cup, and be baptized with the baptism, that I am
“ baptized with: but, to sit on my right hand, and on my
“ left, is not mine to give, but, *it shall be given to them*,
“ for whom it is prepared of my Father.”

“²⁴ And when the ten, heard *it*, they were moved with
indignation against the two brethren.

“²⁵ But, Jesus, called them *unto him*, and said, “ Ye know,
“ that the princes of the Gentiles, exercise dominion over
“ them, and they, that are great, exercise authority upon
“ them. ²⁶ But, it shall not be so among you: but, whoso-
“ ever will be great among you, let him be your MINISTER;
“ ²⁷ and whosoever will be chief among you, let him be you

SAINT MATTHEW.

" SERVANT: ² even as the Son of man, came, not to be ministered unto, but, to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many."

²⁹ And as they departed from Jericho, a great multitude, followed him. ³⁰ And, behold, two blind men, sitting by the way side, when they heard, that Jesus, passed by, cried out, saying, " Have mercy on us, O, Lord, thou son of David." ³¹ And the multitude, rebuked them, because they should hold their peace: but, they cried the more, saying, " Have mercy on us, O, Lord, thou son of David."

³² And Jesus, stood still, and called them, and said, " What will ye, that I shall do unto you?"

³³ They say unto him, " Lord, that our eyes, may be opened."

³⁴ So Jesus, had compassion *on them*, and touched their eyes: and, immediately, their eyes, received sight, and they followed him.

CHAPTER XXI.

1 Christ rideth into Jerusalem upon an ass, 12 driveth the buyers and sellers out of the temple, 17 curseth the fig tree, 23 putteth to silence the priests and elders, 28 and rebuketh them by the similitude of the two sons, 35 and the husbandmen, who slew such as were sent unto them.

¹ And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples, ² saying unto them, " Go into the village over against you, and, straightway, ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose *them*, and bring *them* unto me. ³ And if any man say ought unto you, ye shall say, ' The Lord, hath need of them; ' and, straightway, he will send them."

⁴ All this, was done, that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the prophet, saying, ⁵ " Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King, cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass."

⁶ And the disciples, went, and did as Jesus commanded them, ⁷ and brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them

CHAPTER XXI.

their clothes, and they set *him* thereon. ⁸ And a very great multitude, spread their garments in the way ; others, cut down branches from the trees, and strawed *them* in the way. ⁹ And the multitudes, that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, “ Hosanna to the son of David : Blessed is he, that cometh in the name of the Lord ; Hosanna in the highest.”

¹⁰ And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city, was moved, saying, “ Who is this ? ” ¹¹ And the multitude, said, “ This, is Jesus, the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.”

¹² And Jesus, went into the temple of God, and cast out all them, that sold, and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them, that sold doves, ¹³ and said unto them, “ It is written, ‘ My house, shall be called the house of prayer ; but, ye have made it a den of thieves.’ ”

¹⁴ And the blind, and the lame, came to him in the temple ; and he healed them.

¹⁵ And when the Chief Priests, and Scribes, saw the wonderful things, that he did, and the children, crying in the temple, and saying, “ Hosanna to the son of David ; ” they were sore displeased, ¹⁶ and said unto him, “ Hearest thou, what these, say ? ”

And Jesus, saith unto them, “ Yea ; have ye never read, “ ‘ Out of the mouth of babes, and sucklings, thou hast perfect praise ? ’ ”

¹⁷ And he left them, and went out of the city into Bethany ; and he lodged there.

¹⁸ Now, in the morning, as he returned into the city, he hungered. ¹⁹ And when he saw a fig tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but, leaves only, and said unto it, “ Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever.”

And, presently, the fig tree, withered away.

²⁰ And when the disciples, saw it, they marvelled, saying, “ How soon is the fig tree withered away ! ”

²¹ Jesus answered and said unto them, “ Verily I say unto you, If ye have faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this, which is done to the fig tree, but, also, if ye shall say unto this mountain, ‘ Be thou removed, and be thou cast

“ ‘into the sea;’ it shall be done. ²² And all things, “ whatsoever ye shall ask, in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.”

²³ And when he was come into the temple, the Chief Priests, and the elders of the people, came unto him, as he was teaching, and said, “ By what authority, doest thou these things? and who GAVE thee this authority?”

²⁴ And Jesus, answered, and said unto them, “ I also, will ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I, in like wise, will tell you, by what authority I do these things. ²⁵ The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or, of men?” And they reasoned with themselves, saying, “ If we shall say, ‘ From heaven;’ he will say unto us, ‘ Why did ye not then believe him?’ ²⁶ But, if we shall say, ‘ Of men;’ we fear the people; for, all, hold John as a prophet.”—

²⁷ And they answered Jesus, and said, “ We cannot tell.”

And he said unto them, “ Neither, tell I you, by what authority I do these things.

²⁸ “ But, what think ye? A certain man, had two sons; “ and he came to the first, and said, ‘ Son, go work, to day, in my vineyard.’ ²⁹ He answered, and said, ‘ I will not:’ but, afterward, he repented, and went. ³⁰ And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered, and said, “ I go, sir:” and went not. ³¹ Whether of them twain did the will of his father?”

They say unto him, “ The first.”

Jesus, saith unto them, “ Verily I say unto you, That the Publicans, and the harlots, go into the kingdom of God before you. ³² For, John, came unto you, in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but, the Publicans, and the harlots, believed him: and ye, when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.

³³ “ Hear another parable: There was a certain householder, which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a winepress in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country: ³⁴ and when the time of the fruit, drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it. ³⁵ And the husbandmen, took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another. ³⁶ Again, he sent other servants more than the first: and they did

CHAPTER XXII.

‘unto them likewise. ³⁷ But, last of all, he sent unto them his son, saying, ‘They will reverence my son.’

³⁸ But, when the husbandmen, saw the son, they said among themselves, ‘This, is the heir; come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance.’—³⁹ And they caught him, and cast *him* out of the vineyard, and slew *him*.

⁴⁰ “When the lord, therefore, of the vineyard, cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen?”

⁴¹ They say unto him, “He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out *his* vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.”

⁴² Jesus, saith unto them, “Did ye never read in the Scriptures, ‘The stone, which the builders, rejected, the same, is become the head of the corner: this, is the Lord’s doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?’ ⁴³ Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God, shall be taken from you, and given to a nation, bringing forth the fruits thereof. ⁴⁴ And whosoever shall fall on this stone, shall be broken: but, on whomsoever IT shall fall, it will grind him to powder.”

⁴⁵ And when the Chief Priests, and Pharisees, had heard his parables, they perceived, that he spake of THEM. ⁴⁶ But when they sought, to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because, they took him for a prophet.

CHAPTER XXII.

¹ *The parable of the marriage of the king’s son.* ⁹ *The vocation of the Gentiles.* ¹² *The punishment of him that wanted the wedding garment.* ¹⁵ *Tribute ought to be paid to Cæsar.* ²³ *Christ confuteth the Sadducees for the resurrection:* ³⁴ *answereth the lawyer, which is the first and great commandment:* ⁴¹ *and poseth the Pharisees about the Messias.*

¹ And Jesus, answered and spake unto them again, by parables, and said, ² “The kingdom of heaven, is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son, ³ and sent forth his servants, to call them, that were bidden, to the wedding: and they would not come. ⁴ Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, ‘Tell them, which are bidden, Be-

SAINT MATTHEW.

“ ‘ hold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen, and *my* fat-
“ ‘ lings *are* killed, and all things, *are* ready: come unto
“ ‘ the marriage.’

“ “ But, they made light of *it*, and went their ways, one, to
“ his farm, another, to his merchandise: “ and the remnant,
“ took his servants, and entreated *them* spitefully, and slew
“ *them*.

“ “ But, when the king, heard *thereof*, he was wroth: and
“ he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and
“ burned up their city.

“ “ Then saith he to his servants, ‘ The wedding, is ready,
“ ‘ but, they, which were bidden, were not worthy. “ Go ye,
“ ‘ therefore, into the highways, and as many, as ye shall
“ ‘ find, bid to the marriage.’

“ “ So, those servants, went out into the highways, and
“ gathered together all, as many as they found, both bad,
“ and good: and the wedding, was furnished with guests.
“ “ And when the king, came in, to see the guests, he saw
“ there a man, which had not on a wedding garment: “ “ and
“ he saith unto him, ‘ Friend, how earnest thou in hither,
“ ‘ not having a wedding garment?’—And he was speech-
“ less.

“ “ Then said the king to the servants, ‘ Bind him hand
“ ‘ and foot, and take him away, and cast *him* into outer
“ ‘ darkness; there shall be weeping, and gnashing of teeth.’
“ “ For, many, are called, but, few, *are* chosen.”

“ “ Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel, how
they might entangle him in *his* talk. “ “ And they sent out
unto him their disciples, with the Herodians, saying, “ Mas-
“ ter, we know, that thou art true, and teachest the way of
“ God in truth, neither, carest thou for any *man*: for, thou
“ regardest not the person of men. “ “ Tell us, therefore,
“ What thinkest thou? Is it lawful, to give tribute unto
“ Cæsar, or, not?”

“ “ But, Jesus, perceived their wickedness, and said, “ Why
“ tempt ye me, *ye* hypocrites? “ “ Shew me the tribute
“ money.”

And they brought unto him a penny.

“ “ And he saith unto them, “ Whose *is* this image and
“ superscription?”

CHAPTER XXII.

²¹ They say unto him, “Cæsar’s.”

Then saith he unto them, “Render, therefore, unto Cæsar, the things, which are Cæsar’s; and unto God, the things, that are God’s.”

²² When they had heard *these words*, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.

²³ The same day, came to him the Sadducees, which say, that there is no resurrection, and asked him, ²⁴ saying, “Master, Moses, said, ‘If a man die, having no children, his brother, shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.’ ²⁵ Now, there were, with us, seven brethren: “and the first, when he had married a wife, deceased, and, “having no issue, left his wife unto his brother: ²⁶ likewise, “the second also, and the third, unto the seventh. ²⁷ And, “last of all, the woman, died also. ²⁸ Therefore, in the resurrection, whose wife, shall she be of the seven? for, they all had her.”

²⁹ Jesus, answered, and said unto them, “Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures, nor, the power of God. ³⁰ For, in the resurrection, they neither marry, nor, are given in marriage, but, are, as the angels of God in heaven. ³¹ But, as touching the resurrection of the dead, have you not read that, which was spoken unto you by God, saying, ³² ‘I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?’ God, is not the God of the DEAD, but, of the LIVING.”

³³ And when the multitude, heard *this*, they were astonished at his doctrine.

³⁴ But, when the Pharisees, had heard, that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together. ³⁵ Then one of them, *which was a lawyer*, asked *him a question*, tempting him, and saying, ³⁶ “Master, which is the great commandment in the law?”

³⁷ Jesus, said unto him, “‘Thou shalt love the Lord thy God, with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.’ ³⁸ THIS, is the first, and great commandment. ³⁹ And the second, is like unto it, ‘Thou shalt love thy neighbour, as thyself.’ ⁴⁰ On these two commandments, hang all the Law, and the Prophets.”

⁴¹ While the Pharisees, were gathered together, Jesus,

asked them, ¹² saying, “What think ye of Christ? whose son, is he?”

They say unto him, “The Son of David.”

¹³ He saith unto them, “How, then, doth David, in spirit, call him Lord, saying, “‘The LORD, said unto my Lord, ‘Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool?’” ¹⁴ If David, then, call him Lord, how is he his son?”

¹⁵ And no man, was able, to answer him a word, neither durst any man, from that day forth, ask him any more questions.

CHAPTER XXIII.

¹ Christ admonisheth the people to follow the good doctrine, not the evil examples, of the Scribes and Pharisees. ⁵ His disciples must beware of their ambition. ¹³ He denounceth eight woes against their hypocrisy and blindness: ³⁴ and prophesieth of the destruction of Jerusalem.

¹ Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples, ² saying, “The Scribes, and the Pharisees, sit in Moses' seat: ³ all, therefore, whatsoever they bid you observe, *that observe, and do; but do not ye after their works: for, they say, and do not.* ⁴ For, they bind heavy burdens, and grievous to be borne, and lay *them* on men's shoulders, ⁵ but, they *themselves* will not move them with one of their fingers. ⁵ But, all their works they do, for to be seen of men: ⁶ they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments, ⁶ and love the uppermost rooms at feasts, ⁷ and the chief seats in the synagogues, ⁷ and greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, ‘Rabbi, Rabbi.’ ⁸ But, be not ye called ‘Rabbi:’ for, one, is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are brethren. ⁹ And call no man your father upon the earth: for, one, is your Father, which is in heaven. ¹⁰ Neither, be ye called masters: for, one, is your Master, even Christ. ¹¹ But, he, that is greatest among you, shall be your servant. ¹² And whosoever shall exalt himself, shall be abased; and he, that shall humble himself, shall be exalted.

¹³ “But, woe unto you, Scribes, and Pharisees, hypocrites! for, ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men:

CHAPTER XXIII.

“ for, ye neither go in *yourselves*, neither, suffer ye them, that
“ are entering, to go in.

“¹⁴ “ Woe unto you, Scribes, and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for,
“ ye devour widows' houses, and, for a pretence, make long
“ prayer : therefore, ye shall receive the greater damnation.

“¹⁵ “ Woe unto you, Scribes, and Pharisees, hypocrites !
“ for, ye compass sea, and land, to make ONE proselyte, and
“ when he is MADE, ye make him, twofold, more the child
“ of hell than yourselves.

“¹⁶ “ Woe unto you, *ye* blind guides, which say, ‘ Whoso-
“ ever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing ; but, who-
“ soever shall swear by the GOLD of the temple, he is a
“ debtor ! ’¹⁷ Ye fools, and blind : for, whether is greater, the
“ gold, or, the temple, that SANCTIFIETH the gold ?¹⁸ And,
“ ‘ Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing ; but,
“ ‘ whosoever sweareth by the gift, that is upon it, he is
“ ‘ guilty.’¹⁹ Ye fools, and blind : for, whether is greater,
“ the gift, or, the altar, that SANCTIFIETH the gift ?²⁰ Whoso, therefore, shall swear by the altar, sweareth by
“ it, and by all things thereon.²¹ And whoso shall swear
“ by the temple, sweareth by it, and by Him, that dwelleth
“ therein.²² And he, that shall swear by heaven, sweareth
“ by the throne of God, and by Him, that sitteth thereon.

“²³ “ Woe unto you, Scribes, and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for,
“ ye pay tithe of mint, and anise, and cumin, and have
“ omitted the weightier *matters* of the law, judgment, mercy,
“ and faith : these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the
“ other undone.²⁴ Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat,
“ and swallow a camel.

“²⁵ “ Woe unto you, Scribes, and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for,
“ ye make clean the OUTSIDE of the cup, and of the platter,
“ but, WITHIN, they are full of extortion, and excess.²⁶ Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse, first, that, *which*, is within
“ the cup, and platter, that the outside of them, may be clean
“ also.

“²⁷ “ Woe unto you, Scribes, and Pharisees, hypoerites ! for,
“ ye are like unto whitened sepulchres, which, indeed, appear
“ beautiful OUTWARD, but, are, WITHIN, full of dead men's
“ bones, and of all uncleanness.²⁸ Even so, ye, also, OUT-
“ WARILY, appear righteous unto men, but, WITHIN, ye are
“ full of hypocrisy, and iniquity.

SAINT MATTHEW.

²⁰ " Woe unto you, Scribes, and Pharisees, hypocrites !
" because, ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish
" the sepulchres of the righteous, ²⁰ and say, ' If we had
" been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been
" partakers, with them, in the blood of the prophets.'
" ²¹ Wherefore, ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are
" the children of them, which killed the prophets. ²² Fill ye up,
" then, the measure of your fathers. ²³ Ye serpents, ye gene-
" ration of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell ?
" ²⁴ " Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise
" men, and Scribes : and *some* of them ye shall kill, and cru-
" cify ; and *some* of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues,
" and persecute *them*, from city to city : ²⁵ that, upon **you**,
" may come all the righteous blood, shed upon the earth, from
" the blood of righteous Abel, unto the blood of Zacharias,
" son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple, and the
" altar. ²⁶ Verily I say unto you, All these things, shall come
" upon this generation.

²⁷ " O, Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *thou* that killest the prophets,
" and stonest them, which are sent unto thee, how often would
" I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen, gather-
" eth her chickens under *her* wings, and ye would not !
" ²⁸ Behold, your house, is left unto you desolate. ²⁹ For, I
" say unto you, Ye shall not see me, henceforth, till ye shall
" say, ' Blessed *is* he, that cometh in the name of the Lord.' "

CHAPTER XXIV.

I Christ foretelleth the destruction of the temple : 3 what and how great calamities shall be before it : 20 the signs of his coming to judgment. 36 And because that day and hour is unknown, 42 we ought to watch like good servants, expecting every moment our master's coming.

¹ And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple : and his disciples, came to him, for to shew him the buildings of the temple. ² And Jesus, said unto them, " See ye not all these things ? verily I say unto you, There " shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not " be thrown down."

³ And, as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the dis-

CHAPTER XXIV.

ciples, came unto him privately, saying, “Tell us, when shall “these things be ? and what *shall be* the sign of thy coming, “and of the end of the world ?”

⁴ And Jesus, answered, and said unto them, “Take heed, “that no man, deceive you. ⁵ For, many, shall come, in my “name, saying, ‘I am Christ ;’ and shall **DECEIVE** many. ⁶ And ye shall hear of wars, and **RUMOURS** of wars : see, “that ye be not troubled : for, all *these things*, must come “to pass, but, the end, is not yet. ⁷ For, nation, shall rise “against nation, and kingdom, against kingdom : and “there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in “divers places. ⁸ All these, *are* the beginning of sorrows. ⁹ Then, shall they deliver you up, to be afflicted, and shall “kill you : and ye shall be hated of all nations, for my “name’s sake. ¹⁰ And then, shall many be offended, and “shall betray one another, and shall **HATE** one another. ¹¹ And many false prophets, shall rise, and shall deceive “many. ¹² And, because, iniquity, shall abound, the love of “many, shall wax cold. ¹³ But, he, that shall endure unto “the end, the same, shall be saved.

¹⁴ “And this Gospel of the kingdom, shall be preached, in “all the world, for a witness unto all nations ; and **THEN**, “shall the end come.

¹⁵ “When ye, therefore, shall see the abomination of deso-“lation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy “placee, (whoso readeth, let him understand :) ¹⁶ then, let “them, which be in Judæa, flee into the mountains : ¹⁷ let “him, which is on the housetop, not come down, to take any “thing out of his house : ¹⁸ neither, let him, which is in the “field, return back, to take his clothes. ¹⁹ And woe unto “them, that are with child, and to them, that give suck in “those days ! ²⁰ But, pray ye, that your flight, be not in the “winter, neither, on the sabbath day : ²¹ for, then shall be “great tribulation, such as was not, since the beginning of “the world to this time, no, nor, ever shall be. ²² And, ex-“cept those days, should be shortened, there should no flesh “be saved : but, for the elect’s sake, those days, **SHALL** be “shortened.

²³ “Then, if any man shall say unto you, ‘Lo, here is “Christ,’ or, ‘there ;’ believe *it* not. ²⁴ For, there shall arise “**FALSE** Christs, and false **PROPHETS**, and shall shew great

“ signs, and wonders ; insomuch, that, if *it were* possible, they
 “ shall deceive the very elect. ²⁵ Behold, I have told you before.
 “ ²⁶ Wherefore, if they shall say unto you, ‘ Behold, he is in
 “ ‘ the desert ;’ go not forth : ‘ behold, *he is* in the secret
 “ ‘ chambers ;’ believe *it not*. ²⁷ For, as the lightning, cometh
 “ out of the east, and shineth even unto the west ; so, shall,
 “ also, the coming of the Son of man be. ²⁸ For, wheresoever
 “ the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered together.

²⁹ “ Immediately after the tribulation of those days, shall
 “ the sun be darkened, and the moon, shall not give her light,
 “ and the stars, shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the
 “ heavens, shall be shaken : ³⁰ and then, shall appear the sign
 “ of the Son of man in heaven : and then, shall all the tribes
 “ of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man,
 “ coming in the clouds of heaven, with power, and great
 “ glory. ³¹ And he shall send his angels, with a great sound
 “ of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect, from
 “ the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

³² “ Now, learn a parable of the fig tree ; When his branch,
 “ is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know, that sum-
 “ mer, *is* nigh : ³³ so, likewise, ye, when ye shall see all these
 “ things, know, that *IT* is near, *even* at the doors. ³⁴ Verily
 “ I say unto you, This generation, shall not pass, till all
 “ these things, be fulfilled. ³⁵ Heaven, and earth, shall pass
 “ away, but, my WORDS, shall NOT pass away.

³⁶ “ But, of that day, and hour, knoweth no *man*, no, not
 “ the angels of heaven, but, my Father only. ³⁷ But, as the
 “ days of Noe, *were*, so, shall, also, the coming of the Son
 “ of man be. ³⁸ For, as in the days, that were before the
 “ flood, they were eating, and drinking, marrying, and giving
 “ in marriage, until the day, that Noe, entered into the ark,
 “ ³⁹ and knew not, until the flood, came, and took them all
 “ away ; so, shall, ALSO, the coming of the Son of man be.
 “ ⁴⁰ Then, shall two be in the field ; the one, shall be taken,
 “ and the other, left. ⁴¹ Two *women*, shall be grinding at
 “ the mill ; the one, shall be taken, and the other, left.
 “ ⁴² Watch therefore : for, ye know not what hour, your
 “ Lord, doth come.

⁴³ “ But, know this, that if the goodman of the house had
 “ known, in what watch, the thief, would come, he would
 “ have watched, and would not have suffered, his house to be

CHAPTER XXV.

“ broken up. “ Therefore, be ye also ready : for, in such an hour as ye think not, the Son of man, cometh.

“ Who, then, is a faithful, and wise servant, whom his lord, hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season ? “ Blessed is that servant, whom his lord, when he cometh, shall find so doing. “ Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods.

“ But, and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, ‘ My lord, delayeth his coming ; ’ and shall begin, to smite his fellow-servants, and to eat, and drink with the drunken ; “ the lord of that servant, shall come, in a day, when he looketh not for him, and, in an hour, that he is not aware of, “ and shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites : there shall be weeping, and gnashing of teeth.

CHAPTER XXV.

1 The parable of the ten virgins, 14 and of the talents. 31 Also the description of the last judgment.

“ Then, shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth, to meet the bridegroom. “ And five of them, were wise, and five, were foolish. “ They, that were foolish, took their lamps, and took no oil with them : “ but, the wise, took oil in their vessels with their lamps.

“ While the bridegroom, tarried, they all slumbered, and slept.

“ And, at midnight, there was a cry made, ‘ Behold, the bridegroom, cometh ; go ye out, to meet him.’ “ Then all those virgins, arose, and trimmed their lamps.

“ And the foolish, said unto the wise, ‘ Give us of your oil ; for, our lamps, are gone out.’

“ But, the wise, answered, saying, ‘ Not so ; lest there be not enough for us, and you : but, go ye rather to them, that sell, and buy for yourselves.’

“ And while they went, to buy, the bridegroom, came ; and they, that were ready, went in with him, to the marriage : and the door, was shut.

SAINT MATTHEW.

" Afterward came, also, the other virgins, saying, 'Lord,
" ' Lord, open to us.'

" But, he answered, and said, 'Verily I say unto you, I
" ' know you not.'

" " Watch, therefore, for, ye know, neither, the day,
" nor, the hour, wherein, the Son of man, cometh.

" " For, *the kingdom of heaven, is* as a man, travel-
" ling into a far country, *who* called his own servants, and
" delivered unto them his goods. " And unto one, he gave
" FIVE talents, to another, TWO, and to another, ONE; to
" every man, according to his several ability; and, straight-
" way, took his journey.

" " Then, he, that had received the FIVE talents, went, and
" traded with the same, and made *them* OTHER five talents.
" " And likewise, he, that *had received* two, he, also, gained
" OTHER two. " But, he, that had received ONE, went, and
" digged in the earth, and HID his lord's money.

" " After a long time, the lord of those servants,
" cometh, and reckoneth with them.

" " And so, he, that had received five talents, came, and
" brought OTHER five talents, saying, 'Lord, thou deliver-
" edst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained, beside
" ' them, five talents MORE.'

" " His lord, said unto him, 'Well done, *thou* good, and
" faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a FEW things,
" ' I will make thee ruler over MANY things: enter thou into
" ' the joy of thy lord.'

" " He, also, that had received two talents, came, and
" said, 'Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold,
" ' I have gained two OTHER talents, beside them.'

" " His lord, said unto him, 'Well done, good, and faith-
" ful servant; THOU hast been faithful over a FEW things,
" ' I will make THEE ruler over many things: enter THOU
" ' into the joy of thy lord.'

" " Then he, which had received the one talent, came,
" and said, 'Lord, I knew thee, that thou art an hard man,
" ' reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where
" ' thou hast not strawed: " and I was afraid, and went, and
" hid thy talent in the earth: lo, *there* thou hast *that, is*
" ' thine.'

" " His lord, answered, and said unto him, 'Thou wicked,

CHAPTER XXV.

“ “ and slothful servant, thou knewest, that I reap where I
“ “ sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed: ²⁷ thou
“ “ oughtest, therefore, to have put my money to the ex-
“ “ changers, and *then*, at my coming, I should have received
“ “ mine own with usury. ²⁸ Take, therefore, the talent from
“ “ him, and give *it* unto him, which hath ten talents. ²⁹ For,
“ “ unto every one, that hath, shall be given, and he shall have
“ “ abundance: but, from him, that hath not, shall be taken
“ “ away even that, which he hath. ³⁰ And cast ye the un-
“ “ profitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weep-
“ “ ing, and gnashing of teeth.”

³¹ “ When the Son of man, shall come in his glory,
“ and all the holy angels with him, then, shall he sit upon
“ the THRONE of his glory: ³² and, before him, shall be
“ gathered all nations: and he shall separate them, one from
“ another, as a shepherd, divideth *his* sheep from the goats:
“ ³³ and he shall set the sheep on his RIGHT hand, but, the
“ goats on the LEFT. ³⁴ Then, shall the King say unto
“ them on his right hand, ‘Come, ye blessed of my Father,
“ inherit the kingdom, prepared for you from the foundation
“ of the world: ³⁵ For, I was an hungered, and ye gave me
“ meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a
“ stranger, and ye took me in: ³⁶ naked, and ye clothed me:
“ I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye
“ came unto me.’

³⁷ “ Then, shall the righteous answer him, saying, ‘Lord,
“ when saw we thee an hungered, and fed *thee*? or, thirsty,
“ and gave *thee* drink? ³⁸ When saw we thee a stranger,
“ and took *thee* in? or, naked, and clothed *thee*? ³⁹ Or,
“ when saw we thee sick, or, in prison, and came unto thee?’
⁴⁰ “ And the King, shall answer, and say unto them,
“ Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch, as ye have done *it* unto
“ one of the least of these, my brethren, ye have done *it* unto
“ ME.’

⁴¹ “ Then, shall he say, also, unto them on the left hand,
“ Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared
“ for the devil, and his angels: ⁴² for, I was an hungered,
“ and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me
“ no drink: ⁴³ I was a stranger, and ye took me not in:
“ naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and
“ ye visited me not.’

SAINT MATTHEW.

" Then, shall they, also, answer him, saying, ' Lord, when
" saw we thee an hungered, or, athirst, or, a stranger, or,
" naked, or, sick, or, in prison, and did NOT minister unto
" thee ? '

" " Then, shall he answer them, saying, ' Verily I say unto
" you, Inasmuch, as ye did it not to one of the least of these,
" ye did it NOT to ME.'

" " And these, shall go away into everlasting punishment :
" but, the righteous, into life eternal."

CHAPTER XXVI.

1 The rulers conspire against Christ. 6 The woman anointeth his head. 14 Judas selleth him. 17 Christ eateh the Passover : 26 instituteth his holy supper : 36 prayeth in the garden : 47 and being betrayed with a kiss, 57 is carried to Caiaphas, 69 and denied of Peter.

¹ And it came to pass, when Jesus, had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples, ² " Ye know, that after two days is the feast of the Passover, and the Son of man, is betrayed, to be crucified."

³ Then, assembled together the Chief Priests, and the Scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the High Priest, who was called Caiaphas, ⁴ and consulted, that they might take Jesus, by subtlety, and kill him. ⁵ But, they said, " Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar among the people."

⁶ Now, when Jesus, was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, ⁷ there came unto him a woman, having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his head, as he sat at meat.

⁸ But, when his disciples, saw it, they had indignation, saying, " To what purpose, is this waste ? ⁹ For, this ointment, might have been sold for much, and given to the poor."

¹⁰ When Jesus, understood it, he said unto them, " Why trouble ye the woman ? for, she hath wrought a good work upon me. ¹¹ For, ye have the poor ALWAYS with you ;

CHAPTER XXVI.

“ but, **ME** ye have **NOT** always. ¹² For, in that she hath
“ poured this ointment on my body, she did *it*, for my burial.
“ ¹³ Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this Gospel, shall be
“ preached, in the whole world, *there* shall also this, that this
“ woman, hath done, be told, for a memorial of her.”

¹⁴ Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto the Chief Priests, ¹⁵ and said *unto them*, “ What will ye give
“ me, and I will deliver him unto you?” — And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver.

¹⁶ And, from that time, he sought opportunity, to betray him.

¹⁷ Now, the first *day of the feast of unleavened bread*, the disciples, came to Jesus, saying unto him, “ Where wilt thou, that we prepare for thee, to eat the Passover?”

¹⁸ And he said, “ Go into the city to such a man, and say unto him, ‘ The Master, saith, My time, is at hand; I will keep the Passover, at thy house, with my disciples.’ ”

¹⁹ And the disciples, did as Jesus, had appointed them; and they made ready the Passover.

²⁰ Now, when the even, was come, he sat down with the twelve. ²¹ And, as they did eat, he said, “ Verily I say unto you, that one of **YOU**, shall betray me.”

²² And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began, every one of them, to say unto him, “ Lord, is it I?”

²³ And he answered, and said, “ He, that dippeth *his* hand with me in the dish, the same, shall betray me. ²⁴ The Son of man, goeth as it is written of him: but, woe unto that man, by whom, the Son of man, is betrayed! it had been good for that man, if he had not been born.

²⁵ Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered, and said, “ Master, is it I?”

He said unto him, “ Thou hast said.”

²⁶ And as they were eating, Jesus, took bread, and blessed *it*, and brake *it*, and gave *it* to the disciples, and said, “ Take, eat; this, is my body.” ²⁷ And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave *it* to them, saying, “ Drink ye all of it; ²⁸ for, this, is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many, for the remission of sins. ²⁹ But, I say unto you, I will not drink, henceforth, of this fruit of the vine,

SAINT MATTHEW.

“ until that day, when I drink it new, with you, in my Father’s kingdom.”

“ And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

“ Then saith Jesus unto them, “ All ye shall be offended, because of me, this night: for, it is written, ‘ I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock, shall be scattered abroad.’ But, after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee.”

“ Peter, answered, and said unto him, “ Though ALL men, shall be offended because of thee, yet, will I never be offended.”

“ Jesus, said unto him, “ Verily I say unto thee, That this night, before the cock, crow, THOU shalt deny me THREE.”

“ Peter, said unto him, “ Though I should die WITH thee, yet, will I NOT deny thee.”

Likewise, also, said all the disciples.

“ Then cometh Jesus, with them, unto a place called Gethsemane, and saith unto the disciples, “ Sit ye here, while I go, and pray yonder.”

“ And he took with him Peter, and the two sons of Zebedee, and began, to be sorrowful, and very heavy. “ Then, saith he unto them, “ My soul, is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with me.”

“ And he went a little farther, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, “ O, my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless, not as I will, but, as THOU wilt.”

“ And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter, “ What, could ye not watch with me one hour? “ Watch, and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit, indeed, is willing, but, the flesh, is weak.”

“ He went away again, the second time, and prayed, saying, “ O, my Father, if this cup may NOT pass away from me, except I drink it, Thy WILL be done.”

“ And he came, and found them asleep again: for, their eyes, were heavy. “ And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words. “ Then, cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them, “ Sleep on

CHAPTER XXVI.

“ now, and take *your* rest : behold, the hour, is at hand, and
“ the Son of man, is betrayed into the hands of sinners.
“ ⁴⁶ Rise, let us be going : behold, he is at hand, that doth
“ betray me.”

⁴⁷ And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and, with him, a great multitude, with swords, and staves, from the Chief Priests, and elders of the people.

⁴⁸ Now, he, that betrayed him, gave them a sign, saying, “ Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same, is he : hold him fast.”

⁴⁹ And, forthwith, he came to Jesus, and said, “ Hail, Mas-

“ ter ;” and kissed him.

⁵⁰ And Jesus, said unto him, “ Friend, wherefore art thou
“ come ? ”

Then came they, and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

⁵¹ And, behold, one of them, which were with Jesus, stretched out *his* hand, and drew his sword, and struck a servant of the High Priest’s, and smote off his ear.

⁵² Then, said Jesus unto him, “ Put up again thy sword
“ into his place : for, all they, that take the sword, shall
“ PERISH with the sword. ⁵³ Thinkest thou, that I cannot,
“ now, pray to my Father, and He shall, presently, give me
“ more than twelve legions of angels ? ⁵⁴ But how, then,
“ shall the Scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be ? ”

⁵⁵ In that same hour, said Jesus to the multitudes,
“ Are ye come out, as against a thief, with swords, and staves,
“ for to take me ? I sat daily with you, teaching in the tem-
“ ple, and ye laid no hold on me.”

⁵⁶ But, all this, was done, that the Scriptures of the proph-
ets, might be fulfilled.

Then, all the disciples, forsook him, and fled.

⁵⁷ And they, that had laid hold on Jesus, led *him* away to Caiaphas the High Priest, where the Scribes, and the elders, were assembled.

⁵⁸ But, Peter, followed him, afar off, unto the High Priest’s palace, and went in, and sat, with the servants, to see the end.

⁵⁹ Now, the Chief Priests, and elders, and all the council, sought false witness against Jesus, to put him to death ; ⁶⁰ but, found none : yea, though many false witnesses, CAME, yet, found they none. At the last, came two false witnesses,
⁶¹ and said, “ This fellow, said, ‘ I am able, to destroy the
“ temple of God, and to build it in three days.’ ”

⁶² And the High Priest, arose, and said unto him, “ Answerest thou nothing? what is it, which these, witness against thee?”

⁶³ But, Jesus, held his peace.

And the High Priest, answered, and said unto him, “ I adjure thee, by the living God, that thou tell us, whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God.”

⁶⁴ Jesus, smit unto him, “ Thou hast said: nevertheless, I say unto you, Hereafter, shall ye see the Son of man, sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.”

⁶⁵ Then, the High Priest, rent his clothes, saying, “ He hath spoken blasphemy; what further need have we of WITNESSES? behold, now, ye have HEARD his blasphemy.

⁶⁶ What think ye?”

They answered, and said, “ He is guilty of death.”

⁶⁷ Then, did they spit in his face, and buffeted him; and others, smote him with the palms of their hands, saying, “ Prophesy unto us, thou Christ, Who is he, that smote thee?”

⁶⁸ Now, Peter, sat without in the palace: and a damsel, came unto him, saying, “ Thou, also, wast with Jesus of Galilee.”

⁶⁹ But, he denied before them all, saying, “ I know not what thou sayest.”

⁷⁰ And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid, saw him, and said unto them, that were there, “ This fellow, was, also, with Jesus of Nazareth.”

⁷¹ And, again, he denied, with an oath, “ I do not know the man.”

⁷² And, after a while, came unto him they, that stood by, and said to Peter, “ SURELY thou, also, art one of them; for, thy speech, bewrayeth thee.”

⁷³ Then began he, to curse, and to swear, saying, “ I know not the man.”

And, immediately, the cock, crew.

⁷⁴ And Peter, remembered the word of Jesus, which said unto him, “ Before the cock, crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.”

And he went out, and wept bitterly.

CHAPTER XXVII.

CHAPTER XXVII.

1 Christ is delivered bound to Pilate. **3** Judas hangeth himself. **19** Pilate, admonished of his wife, **24** washeth his hands : **26** and looseth Barabbas. **29** Christ is crowned with thorns, **34** crucified, **40** reviled, **50** dieth, and is buried : **66** his sepulchre is sealed, and watched.

1 When the morning was come, all the Chief Priests, and elders of the people, took counsel against Jesus, to put him to death : **2** and when they had bound him, they led him away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor.

3 Then, Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw, that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver, to the Chief Priests, and elders, **4** saying, “I have sinned, in that I have betrayed the innocent blood.”

And they said, “What is *that* to us? see thou *to that*.”

5 And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went, and hanged himself.

6 And the Chief Priests, took the silver pieces, and said, “It is not lawful, for to put them into the treasury, because, “it is the price of blood.” **7** And they took counsel, and bought with them the potter’s field, to bury strangers in. **8** Wherefore, that field, was called, The field of blood, unto this day.—**9** Then was fulfilled that, which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, “And they took the thirty pieces “of silver, the price of him, that was valued, whom they, of “the children of Israel, did value; **10** and gave them for the “potter’s field, as the Lord, appointed me.”

11 And Jesus, stood before the governor : and the governor, asked him, saying, “Art thou the King of the “Jews?”

And Jesus, said unto him, “Thou sayest.”

12 And when he was accused of the Chief Priests, and elders, he answered nothing.

13 Then, said Pilate unto him, “Hearest thou not, how “many things they witness against thee?”

14 And he answered him to never a word; insomuch, that the governor, marvelled greatly.

15 Now, at *that* feast, the governor, was wont to release

SAINT MATTHEW.

unto the people a prisoner, whom they would. ¹⁶ And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas. ¹⁷ Therefore, when they were gathered together, Pilate, said unto them, “ Whom will ye, that I release unto you ? Barabbas, or, Jesus, “ which is called Christ ? ” (¹⁸ For, he knew, that, for envy, they had delivered him.)

¹⁹ When he was set down on the judgment seat, his wife, sent unto him, saying, “ Have thou nothing to do with “ that just man : for, I have suffered many things this day, in “ a dream, because of him.”

²⁰ But, the Chief Priests, and elders, persuaded the multitude, that they should ask Barabbas, and DESTROY Jesus.

²¹ The governor, answered, and said unto them, “ Whether “ of the twain, will ye, that I release unto you ? ”

They said, “ Barabbas.”

²² Pilate, saith unto them, “ What shall I do, then, with “ Jesus, which is called Christ ? ”

They all say unto him, “ Let him be crucified.”

²³ And the governor, said, “ Why, what evil hath he done ? ”

But, they cried out the more, saying, “ Let him be cruci-“ fied.”

²⁴ When Pilate, saw, that he could prevail nothing, but, *that* rather a tumult, was made, he took water, and washed *his* hands, before the multitude, saying, “ I am innocent “ of the blood of this just person : see ye *to it*.”

²⁵ Then answered all the people, and said, “ His blood *be* “ on us, and on our children.”

²⁶ Then, released he Barabbas unto them : and when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered *him*, to be crucified.

²⁷ Then, the soldiers of the governor, took Jesus into the common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band *of* soldiers. ²⁸ And they stripped him, and put on him a scar-let robe. ²⁹ And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put *it* upon his head, and a reed in his right hand : and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, “ Hail, king of the Jews ! ” ³⁰ And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head.

³¹ And, after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away, to crucify *him*. ³² And as they came out, they found

CHAPTER XXVII.

a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled, to bear his cross. ³³ And when they were come unto a place, called Golgotha, that is to say, A place of a skull, ³⁴ they gave him vinegar to drink, mingled with gall: and when he had tasted *thereof*, he would not drink.

³⁵ And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the prophet, “They parted my garments among them, and, “upon my vesture, did they cast lots.” ³⁶ And, sitting down, they watched him there; ³⁷ and set up over his head his accusation, written,

“THIS IS JESUS, THE KING OF THE JEWS.”

³⁸ Then were there two thieves crucified with him, one, on the right hand, and another, on the left.

³⁹ And they, that passed by, reviled him, wagging their heads, ⁴⁰ and saying, “Thou, that destroyest the temple, and “buildest *it*, in three days, save thyself. If thou be the Son “of God, come down from the cross.”

⁴¹ Likewise, also, the Chief Priests, mocking *him*, with the Scribes, and elders, said, ⁴² “He saved others; himself he “cannot save. If he be the King of Israel, let him, now, “come down from the cross, and we will believe him. ⁴³ He “trusted in God; let Him deliver him now, if He will have “him: for, he said, ‘I am the Son of God.’”

⁴⁴ The thieves, also, which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth.

⁴⁵ Now, from the sixth hour, there was darkness over all the land, unto the ninth hour. ⁴⁶ And, about the ninth hour, Jesus, cried with a loud voice, saying, “Eli, Eli, lama sa-“bachthani?” that is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

⁴⁷ Some of them, that stood there, when they heard *that*, said, “This *man*, calleth for Elias.” ⁴⁸ And, straightway, one of them, ran, and took a sponge, and filled *it* with vine-
gar, and put *it* on a reed, and gave him, to drink. ⁴⁹ The rest, said, “Let be, let us see, whether Elias, will come, to “save him.”

⁵⁰ Jesus, when he had cried, again, with a loud voice, yielded up the ghost.

⁵¹ And, behold, the veil of the temple, was rent in

twain, from the top to the bottom ; and the earth, did quake, and the rocks, rent ; ⁵² and the graves, were opened ; and many bodies of the saints, which slept, arose, ⁵³ and came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

⁵⁴ Now, when the centurion, and they, that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things, that were done, they feared greatly, saying, “ Truly, this, was “ the Son of God.”

⁵⁵ And many women, were there, beholding afar off, which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him : ⁵⁶ among which, was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Joses, and the mother of Zebedee’s children.

⁵⁷ When the even, was come, there came a rich man of Arimathaea, named Joseph, who, also, himself was Jesus’ disciple : ⁵⁸ he went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus. Then, Pilate, commanded, the body to be delivered. ⁵⁹ And when Joseph, had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, ⁶⁰ and laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock : and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed.

⁶¹ And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulchre.

⁶² Now, the next day, that followed the day of the preparation, the Chief Priests, and Pharisees, came together unto Pilate, ⁶³ saying, “ Sir, we remember, that that deceiver, “ said, while he was yet alive, ‘ After three days, I will rise “ ‘ again.’ ⁶⁴ Command, therefore, that the sepulchre, be made “ SURE, until the third day, lest his disciples, come by night, “ and steal him away, and say unto the people, ‘ He is risen “ ‘ from the dead :’ so, the last error, shall be worse than “ the first.”

⁶⁵ Pilate, said unto them, “ Ye have a watch: go your “ way, make *it* as sure as ye can.”

⁶⁶ So, they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

1 Christ's resurrection is declared by an angel to the women. 9 He himself appeareth unto them. 11 The High Priests give the soldiers money to say that he was stolen out of his sepulchre. 16 Christ appeareth to his disciples, 19 and sendeth them to baptize and teach all nations.

¹ In the end of the sabbath, as it began, to dawn toward the first *day* of the week, came Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, to see the sepulchre.

² And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for, the angel of the Lord, descended from heaven, and came, and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. ³ His countenance, was like lightning, and his raiment, white as snow: ⁴ and, for fear of him, the keepers, did shake, and became as dead *men*.

⁵ And the angel, answered, and said unto the women, “ Fear not ye: for, I know, that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified. ⁶ He is not here: for, he is risen, as he said. Come, “ see the place, where the Lord, lay. ⁷ And go, quickly, and “ tell his disciples, ‘that he is risen from the dead; and, “ ‘behold, he goeth before you into Galilee; there shall ye “ ‘see him:’ lo, I have told you.”

⁸ And they departed, quickly, from the sepulchre, with fear, and great joy; and did run, to bring his disciples word.

⁹ And as they went, to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus, met them, saying, “ All hail.”

And they came, and held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

¹⁰ Then said Jesus unto them, “ Be not afraid: go tell my “ brethren, that they go into Galilee, and there shall THEY “ see me.”

¹¹ Now, when they were going, behold, some of the watch, came into the city, and shewed unto the Chief Priests all the things, that were done. ¹² And when they were assembled, with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers, ¹³ saying, “ Say ye, ‘ His disciples, came by night, and stole him away while we slept.’ “ ¹⁴ And if this come to the governor’s ears, we will persuade “ HIM, and secure YOU.” ¹⁵ So, they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saving, is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

SAINT MATTHEW.

¹⁶ Then the eleven disciples, went away into Galilee, into a mountain, where Jesus, had appointed them. ¹⁷ And when they saw him, they worshipped him : but, some, doubted.

¹⁸ And Jesus, came, and spake unto them, saying, “ All power, is given unto me, in heaven, and in earth. ¹⁹ Go ye, therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them, in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost : ²⁰ teaching them, to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you : and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.”

TABLE OF QUOTATIONS, &c.

ILLUSTRATIVE OF THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. MATTHEW.

CHAPTER I. Verse 23—Isaiah, vii. 14.
CHAPTER II. Verse 6—Micah, v. 2. Verse 15—Hosea, xi. 1.
Verse 18—Jeremiah, xxxi. 15.
CHAPTER III. Verse 3—Isaiah, xl. 3.
CHAPTER IV. Verse 4—Deuteronomy, viii. 3. Verse 6—Psalm, xcii. 11, 12. Verse 7—Deuteronomy, vi. 16. Verse 10—Deuteronomy, vi. 13. Verse 15—Isaiah, ix. 1, 2.
CHAPTER V. Verse 5—Psalm, xxxvii. 11. Verse 21—Exodus, xx. 13. Verse 27—Exodus, xx. 14. Verse 31—Deuteronomy, xxiv. 1. Verse 33—Exodus, xx. 7. Verse 38—Exodus, xxi. 21; and Leviticus, xxiv. 20. Verse 43—Leviticus, xix. 18; and Deuteronomy, xxiii. 6.
CHAPTER VIII. Verse 4—Leviticus, xiv. 2, &c. Verse 17—Isaiah, liii. 4.
CHAPTER IX. Verse 13—Hosea, vi. 6.
CHAPTER X. Verses 35, 36—Micah, vii. 5, 6.
CHAPTER XI. Verse 5—Isaiah, xxix. 18; and xxxv. 5, 6. Verse 10—Malachi, iii. 1. Verse 14—Malachi, iv. 5.
CHAPTER XII. Verse 3—1 Samuel, xxi. 6. Verse 5—Numbers, xxviii. 9. Verse 7—Hosea, vi. 6. Verses 18—21—Isaiah, xlvi. 1. Verse 40—Jonah, i. 17. Verse 42—1 Kings, x. 1.
CHAPTER XIII. Verses 14, 15—Isaiah, vi. 9. Verse 35—Psalm, lxxviii. 2.
CHAPTER XV. Verse 4—Exodus, xx. 12; Deuteronomy, v. 16; and Exodus, xxi. 17. Verses 8, 9—Isaiah, xxix. 13.
CHAPTER XVIII. Verse 15—Leviticus, xix. 17.
CHAPTER XIX. Verse 5—Genesis, ii. 24. Verses 7, 8—Deuteronomy, xxiv. 1. Verses 18, 19—Exodus, xx. 13; and Leviticus, xix. 18.
CHAPTER XXI. Verse 5—Zechariah, ix. 9. Verse 13—Isaiah, lvi. 7; and Jeremiah, vii. 11. Verse 16—Psalm, viii. 2. Verse 33—Jeremiah, ii. 21. Verse 42—Psalm, cxviii. 22. Verse 41—Isaiah, viii. 14, 15; and Zechariah, xii. 3.
CHAPTER XXII. Verse 24—Deuteronomy, xxv. 5. Verse 32—Exodus, iii. 6. Verse 37—Deuteronomy, vi. 5. Verse 39—Leviticus, xix. 18. Verses 43, 44—Psalm, cx. 1.
CHAPTER XXIII. Verse 35—Genesis, iv. 8; and 2 Chronicles, xxiv. 21, 22. Verse 39—Psalm, cxviii. 26.
CHAPTER XXIV. Verse 15—Daniel, ix. 27. Verse 29—Isaiah, xiii. 9, 10; and Joel, iii. 15.
CHAPTER XXVI. Verse 31—Zechariah, xiii. 7. Verse 52—Genesis, ix. 6.
CHAPTER XXVII. Verse 9—Jeremiah, xxxii. 6; and Zechariah, xi. 12. Verse 35—Psalm, xxii. 18. Verse 43—Psalm, xxii. 7—9. Verse 46—Psalm, xxii. 1.

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. MARK.

NOTE.—This Gospel was written at Rome, about A. D. 61.

CHAPTER I.

1 The office of John the Baptist. 9 Jesus is baptized, 12 tempted, 14 he preacheth : 16 calleth Peter, Andrew, James and John : 23 healeth one that had a devil, 29 Peter's mother in law, 32 many diseased persons, 41 and cleanseth the leper.

¹ THE beginning of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God ; ² as it is written in the prophets, “ Behold, I “ send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy “ way before thee. ³ The voice of one, crying in the wilder-“ ness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths “ straight.”

⁴ John, did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of repentance, for the remission of sins. ⁵ And there went out unto him, all the land of Judæa, and they of Jerusalem, and were all baptized of him, in the river of Jordan, confessing their sins.

⁶ And John, was clothed with camel's hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his loins ; and he did eat locusts, and wild honey ; ⁷ and preached, saying, “ There cometh one, “ mightier than I, after me, the latchet of whose shoes, I am “ not worthy, to stoop down, and unloose. ⁸ I, indeed, have “ baptized you with WATER : but, HE shall baptize you with “ the HOLY GHOST.”

⁹ And it came to pass, in those days, that Jesus, came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan. ¹⁰ And, straightway, coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit, like a dove, descend-

CHAPTER I.

ing upon him : ¹¹ and there came a voice, from heaven, *saying*, “ Thou art my beloved Son, in whom, I am well pleased.”

¹² And, immediately, the spirit, driveth him into the wilderness. ¹³ And he was there, in the wilderness, forty days, tempted of Satan ; and was with the wild beasts ; and the angels, ministered unto him.

¹⁴ Now, after that John, was put in prison, Jesus, came into Galilee, preaching the Gospel of the kingdom of God, ¹⁵ and saying, “ The time, is fulfilled, and the kingdom “ of God, is at hand : repent ye, and believe the Gospel.”

¹⁶ Now, as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea : for, they were fishers. ¹⁷ And Jesus, said unto them, “ Come “ ye after me, and I will make you, to become fishers of men.” ¹⁸ And, straightway, they forsook their nets, and followed him.

¹⁹ And when he had gone a little farther thence, he saw James the *son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, who, also, were in the ship, mending their nets. ²⁰ And, straight-way, he called them : and they left their father Zebedee in the ship, with the hired servants, and went after him.

²¹ And they went into Capernaum ; and, straightway, on the sabbath day, he entered into the synagogue, and taught. ²² And they were astonished at his doctrine : for, he taught them, as one, that had authority, and not as the Scribes.

²³ And there was, in their synagogue, a man with an unclean spirit ; and he cried out, ²⁴ saying, “ Let *us* alone ; “ what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth ? “ art thou come, to destroy us ? I know thee who thou art, “ the Holy One of God.”

²⁵ And Jesus, rebuked him, saying, “ Hold thy peace, and “ come out of him.”

²⁶ And when the unclean spirit, had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him.

²⁷ And they were all amazed, insomuch, that they questioned among themselves, saying, “ What thing is this ? what “ new DOCTRINE is this ? for, with authority, commandeth he “ even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him.”

²⁸ And, immediately, his fame, spread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee.

SAINT MARK.

²⁹ And, forthwith, when they were come out of the synagogue, they entered into the house of Simon, and Andrew, with James, and John. ³⁰ But, Simon's wife's mother, lay sick of a fever, and, anon, they tell him of her. ³¹ And he came, and took her by the hand, and lifted her up ; and, immediately, the fever, left her, and she ministered unto them.

³² And, at even, when the sun, did set, they brought unto him all, that were diseased, and them, that were possessed with devils. ³³ And all the city, was gathered together at the door. ³⁴ And he healed many, that were sick of divers diseases, and cast out many devils ; and suffered not the devils, to speak, because, they knew him.

³⁵ And, in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed. ³⁶ And Simon, and they, that were with him, followed after him. ³⁷ And when they had found him, they said unto him, " All men, seek for thee."

³⁸ And he said unto them, " Let us go into the next towns, " that I may preach there also : for, therefore came I forth."

³⁹ And he preached in their synagogues, throughout all Galilee, and cast out devils.

⁴⁰ And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying unto him, " If thou " wilt, thou canst make me clean."

" And Jesus, moved with compassion, put forth his hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, " I will ; be thou " clean."

⁴² And as soon as he had spoken, immediately, the leprosy, departed from him, and he was cleansed. ⁴³ And he straitly charged him, and, forthwith, sent him away ; ⁴⁴ and saith unto him, " See, thou say nothing to any man : but, go thy " way, shew thyself to the Priest, and offer, for thy cleansing, those things, which Moses, commanded, for a testimony unto them."

⁴⁵ But, he went out, and began, to publish it much, and to blaze abroad the matter, insomuch, that Jesus, could no more, openly, enter into the city, but, was without in desert places : and they came to him from every quarter.

CHAPTER II.

¹ Christ healeth one sick of the palsy, ¹⁴ calleth Matthew from the receipt of custom, ¹⁵ eateth with Publicans and sinners, ¹⁸ excuseth his disciples for not fasting, ²³ and for plucking the ears of corn on the sabbath day.

¹ And, again, he entered into Capernaum, after some days; and it was noised, that he was in the house. ² And, straightway, many, were gathered together, insomuch, that there was no room, to receive them, no, not so much as about the door: and he preached the word unto them.

³ And they come unto him, bringing one, sick of the palsy, which was borne of four. ⁴ And when they could not come nigh unto him, for the press, they uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken it up, they let down the bed, wherein, the sick of the palsy, lay.

⁵ When Jesus, saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsy, " Son, thy sins be forgiven thee."

⁶ But, there were certain of the Scribes, sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts, ⁷ " Why doth this man, thus, speak blasphemies? who can forgive sins, but, God only?"

⁸ And, immedately, when Jesus, perceived in his spirit, that they so reasoned within themselves, he said unto them, " Why reason ye these things in your hearts? ⁹ Whether is it easier, to say to the sick of the palsy, ' Thy sins be forgiven thee; ' or, to say, ' Arise, and take up thy bed, and walk?' ¹⁰ But, that ye may know, that the Son of man, hath power, on earth, to forgive sins," (he saith to the sick of the palsy,) ¹¹ " I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thine house."

¹² And, immedately, he arose, took up the bed, and went forth before them all; insomuch, that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, " We never saw it on this fashion."

¹³ And he went forth, again, by the sea side; and all the multitude, resorted unto him, and he taught them. ¹⁴ And as he passed by, he saw Levi, the son of Alphæus, sitting at the receipt of custom, and said unto him, " Follow me." And he arose, and followed him.

¹⁵ And it came to pass, that, as Jesus sat at meat in

his house, many Publicans, and sinners, sat, also, together with Jesus, and his disciples : for, there were many, and they followed him. ¹⁶ And when the Scribes, and Pharisees, saw him eat with Publicans, and sinners, they said unto his disciples, “ How is it, that he eateth, and drinketh, with Publicans, and sinners ? ”

¹⁷ When Jesus, heard it, he saith unto them, “ They, that are whole, have no need of the physician, but they, that are sick : I came not, to call the **RIGHTEOUS**, but, **SINNERS** “ to repentance.”

¹⁸ And the disciples of John, and of the Pharisees, used to fast : and they come, and say unto him, “ Why do the disciples of John, and of the Pharisees, fast, but, thy “ disciples, fast not ? ”

¹⁹ And Jesus, said unto them, “ Can the children of the “ bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom, is with them ? as “ long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot “ fast. ²⁰ But, the days, will come, when the bridegroom, “ shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast “ in those days.

²¹ “ No man, also, seweth a piece of new cloth on an old “ garment : else, the new piece, that filled it up, taketh away “ from the old, and the rent, is made worse. ²² And no man, “ putteth new wine into old bottles : else, the new wine, doth “ burst the bottles, and the wine, is spilled, and the bottles, will “ be marred : but, new wine, must be put into new bottles.”

²³ And it eame to pass, that he went through the corn fields, on the sabbath day ; and his disciples, began, as they went, to pluck the ears of corn.

²⁴ And the Pharisees, said unto him, “ Behold, why do “ they, on the sabbath day, that, which is not lawful ? ”

²⁵ And he said unto them, “ Have ye never read, what “ David, did, when he had need, and was an hungered, lie, “ and they, that were with him ? ²⁶ How he went into the “ house of God, in the days of Abiathar the High Priest, “ and did eat the shewbread, which is not lawful, to eat, but, “ for the Priests, and gave, also, to them, which were with “ him ” ? ²⁷ And he said unto them, “ The sabbath, was “ made for man, and not man for the sabbath : ²⁸ therefore “ the Son of man, is Lord, also, of the sabbath.”

CHAPTER III.

I Christ healeth the withered hand, 10 and many other infirmities : 11 rebuketh the unclean spirits : 13 chooseth his twelve apostles : 22 convinceth the blasphemy of casting out devils by Beelzebub : 31 and sheweth who are his brother, sister, and mother.

¹ And he entered, again, into the synagogue ; and there was a man there, which had a withered hand. ² And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath day ; that they might accuse him.

³ And he saith unto the man, which had the withered hand, “ Stand forth.” ⁴ And he saith unto them, “ Is it lawful, to do good on the sabbath days, or, to do evil ? to save life, or, to kill ?”—But, they held their peace.—⁵ And when he had looked round about on them, with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he saith unto the man, “ Stretch forth thine hand.”

And he stretched *it* out : and his hand, was restored whole as the other.

⁶ And the Pharisees, went forth, and, straightway, took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him. ⁷ But, Jesus, withdrew himself, with his disciples, to the sea : and a great multitude, from Galilee, followed him, and from Judæa, ⁸ and from Jerusalem, and from Idumæa, and *from* beyond Jordan ; and they about Tyre, and Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard, what great things he did, came unto him.

⁹ And he spake to his disciples, that a small ship, should wait on him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him. ¹⁰ For, he had healed many ; insomuch, that they pressed upon him, for to touch him, as many, as had plagues. ¹¹ And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, “ Thou art the Son of God.” ¹² And he straitly charged them, that they should not make him known.

¹³ And he goeth up into a mountain, and calleth *unto* him whom he would : and they came unto him. ¹⁴ And he ordained twelve, that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth, to preach, ¹⁵ and to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils : ¹⁶ and Simon he sur-

named Peter ; ¹⁷ and James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James ; and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sons of thunder : ¹⁸ and Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alphæus, and Thaddæus, and Simon the Canaanite, ¹⁹ and Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him :—And they went into an house.

²⁰ And the multitude, cometh together again, so, that they could not so much as eat bread. ²¹ And when his friends, heard of it, they went out, to lay hold on him : for, they said, “ He is beside himself.”

²² And the Scribes, which came down from Jerusalem, said, “ He hath Beelzebub, and, by the prince of the devils, “ casteth he out devils.”

²³ And he called them unto him, and said unto them, in parables, “ How can Satan cast out Satan ? ²⁴ And if a king-“ dom be divided against itself, that kingdom, cannot stand. “ ²⁵ And if a house be divided against itself, that house, can-“ not stand. ²⁶ And if Satan rise up against himself, and “ be divided, he cannot stand, but, hath an end.

²⁷ “ No man, can enter into a strong man’s house, and spoil “ his goods, except he will, first, bind the strong man ; and “ THEN he will spoil his house.

²⁸ “ Verily I say unto you, All sins, shall be forgiven unto “ the sons of men, and blasphemies, wherewith soever they shall “ blaspheme : ²⁹ but, he, that shall blaspheme against the “ Holy Ghost, hath never forgiveness, but, is in danger of “ eternal damnation : ” ³⁰ (because, they said, “ He hath an “ unclean spirit.”)

³¹ There came then his brethren, and his mother, and, standing without, sent unto him, calling him. ³² And the multitude, sat about him, and they said unto him, “ Behold, “ thy mother, and thy brethren, without, seek for thee.”

³³ And he answered them, saying, “ Who is my mother, or, “ my brethren ? ” ³⁴ And he looked round about on them, which sat about him, and said, “ Behold my mother, and “ my brethren ! ³⁵ for, whosoever shall do the will of God, “ the same, is my brother, and my sister, and mother.”

CHAPTER IV.

CHAPTER IV

1 *The parable of the sower, 14 and the meaning thereof.* **21** *We must communicate the light of our knowledge to others.* **26** *The parable of the seed growing secretly, 30 and of the mustard seed.* **35** *Christ stilleth the tempest on the sea.*

1 And he began, again, to teach by the sea side: and there was gathered unto him a great multitude, so, that he entered into a ship, and sat in the sea; and the whole multitude, was by the sea on the land.

2 And he taught them many things, by parables, and said unto them, in his doctrine, **3** “Hearken; Behold, there “went out a sower, to sow: **4** and it came to pass, as he sow-“ed, some, fell by the way side, and the fowls of the air, “came, and devoured it up. **5** And some, fell on stony ground, “where it had not much earth; and, immediately, it sprang “up, because, it had no DEPTH of earth: **6** but, when the “sun, was up, it was scorched; and, because it had no root, “it withered away. **7** And some, fell among thorns, and the “thorns, grew up, and choked it, and it yielded no fruit. “**8** And other, fell on good ground, and did yield fruit, that “sprang up, and increased; and brought forth, some, thirty, “and some, sixty, and some, an hundred.” **9** And he said unto them, “He, that hath ears to hear, let him hear.”

10 And when he was alone, they, that were about him, with the twelve, asked of him the parable.

11 And he said unto them, “Unto you it is given, to know “the mystery of the kingdom of God: but, unto them, that “are without, all *these* things, are done in parables: **12** that “seeing, they may see, and not perceive; and hearing, they “may hear, and not understand; lest, at any time, they should “be converted, and *their* sins, should be forgiven them.” **13** And he said unto them, “Know ye not this parable? and “how, then, will ye know ALL parables?

14 “The sower, soweth the word. **15** And these, are they, “by the way side, where the word, is sown; but, when they “have heard, Satan, cometh immediately, and taketh away “the word, that was sown in their hearts. **16** And these, are “they, likewise, which are sown on stony ground; who, “when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with “gladness; **17** and have no root in themselves, and so, endure

“ but for a time : afterward, when affliction, or, persecution ariseth for the word’s sake, immediately, they are offended.
 “ ¹⁸ And these, are they, which are sown among thorns ; such as hear the word,¹⁹ and the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things, entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful.²⁰ And these, are they, which are sown on good ground ; such, as hear the word, and receive *it*, and bring forth fruit, some, thirtyfold, some, sixty, and some, an hundred.”

²¹ And he said unto them, “ Is a candle brought, to be put under a bushel, or, under a bed ? and not to be set on a candlestick ? ²² For, there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested ; neither, was any thing kept secret, but, that it should come abroad. ²³ If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.”

²⁴ And he said unto them, “ Take heed, what ye hear : with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you : and unto you, that hear, shall more be given. ²⁵ For, he, that hath, to him shall be given : and he, that hath not, from him shall be taken even that, which he hath.”

²⁶ And he said, “ So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground ; ²⁷ and should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed, should spring, and grow up, he knoweth not how. ²⁸ For, the earth, bringeth forth fruit of herself ; first, the blade, then, the ear, after that, the full corn in the ear. ²⁹ But, when the fruit, is brought forth, immediately, he putteth in the sickle, because, the harvest, is come.”

³⁰ And he said, “ Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God ? or, with what comparison, shall we compare it ? ³¹ It is like a grain of mustard seed, which, when it is sown in the earth, is less than all the seeds, that be in the earth : ³² but, when it is sown, it groweth up, and becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches ; so, that the fowls of the air, may lodge under the shadow of it.”

³³ And, with many such parables, spake he the word unto them, as they were able, to hear *it*. ³⁴ But, without a parable, spake he not unto them : and when they were alone, he expounded all things to his disciples.

³⁵ And, the same day, when the even, was come, he saith unto them, “ Let us pass over unto the other side.”

CHAPTER V.

³⁶ And when they had sent away the multitude, they took him even as he was in the ship. And there were, also, with him other little ships. ³⁷ And there arose a great storm of wind, and the waves, beat into the ship, so, that it was now full.

³⁸ And he was in the hinder part of the ship, asleep on a pillow: and, they awake him, and say unto him, " Master, " carest thou not, that we perish ? "

³⁹ And he arose, and rebuked the wind, and said unto the sea, " Peace, be still."—And the wind, ceased, and there was a great calm.

⁴⁰ And he said unto them, " Why are ye so fearful? how " is it, that ye have no faith ? "

⁴¹ And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, " What manner of man, is this, that even the wind, and the " sea, OBEY him ? "

CHAPTER V.

¹ Christ delivering the possessed of the legion of devils, 13 they enter into the swine. 25 He healeth the woman of the bloody issue, 35 and raiseth from death Jairus his daughter.

¹ And they came over unto the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes.

² And when he was come out of the ship, immediately, there met him, out of the tombs, a man with an unclean spirit, ³ who had his dwelling among the tombs; and no man, could bind him, no, not with chains: ⁴ because, that he had been often bound with fetters, and chains, and the chains, had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters, broken in pieces: neither, could any man tame him. ⁵ And always, night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones.

⁶ But, when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran, and worshipped him, ⁷ and cried with a loud voice, and said, " What have I " to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most high God? " I adjure thee, by God, that thou torment me not." ⁽⁸⁾ For he said unto him, " Come out of the man, thou unclean " spirit.")

⁹ And he asked him, " What is thy name? "

SAINT MARK.

And he answered, saying, “ My name, *is Legion* : for, we “ are many.” ¹⁰ And he besought him much, that he would not send them away out of the country.

¹¹ Now, there was there, nigh unto the mountains, a great herd of swine, feeding. ¹² And all the devils, besought him, saying, “ Send us into the swine, that we may enter into “ them.” ¹³ And, forthwith, Jesus, gave them leave. And the unclean spirits, went out, and entered into the swine : and the herd, ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand;) and were choked in the sea.

¹⁴ And they, that fed the swine, fled, and told *it* in the city, and in the country. And they went out, to see what it was, that was done. ¹⁵ And they come to Jesus, and see him, that was possessed with the devil, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind : and they were afraid. ¹⁶ And they, that saw *it*, told them, how it befell to him, that was possessed with the devil, and *also* concerning the swine. ¹⁷ And they began, to pray him, to depart out of their coasts.

¹⁸ And when he was come into the ship, he, that had been possessed with the devil, prayed him, that he might be with him. ¹⁹ Howbeit, Jesus, suffered him not, but, saith unto him, “ Go home to thy friends, and tell them, how great “ things, the Lord, hath done for thee, and hath had com-“ passion on thee.”

²⁰ And he departed, and began, to publish in Decapolis, how great things, Jesus, had done for him : and all *men*, did marvel.

²¹ And when Jesus, was passed over again, by ship, unto the other side, much people, gathered unto him : and he was nigh unto the sea. ²² And, behold, there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name ; and when he saw him, he fell at his feet, ²³ and besought him greatly, saying, “ My little daughter, lieth at the point of death : *I pray thee*, come, and lay thy hands on her, that she may be “ healed ; and she shall live.”

²⁴ And *Jesus*, went with him ; and much people, followed him, and thronged him.

²⁵ And a certain woman, which had an issue of blood twelve years, ²⁶ and had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all, that she had, and was nothing

CHAPTER V.

bettered, but, rather grew worse, ²⁷ when she had heard of Jesus, came in the press behind, and touched his garment. ²⁸ For, she said, "If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole." ²⁹ And, straightway, the fountain of her blood, was dried up; and she felt in *her* body, that she was healed of that plague.

³⁰ And Jesus, immediately knowing in himself, that virtue, had gone out of him, turned him about in the press, and said, "Who touched my clothes?"

³¹ And his disciples, said unto him, "Thou seest the multitude, thronging thee, and sayest thou, 'Who touched me?'"

³² And he looked round about, to see her, that had done this thing. ³³ But, the woman, fearing, and treinbling, knowing, what was done in her, came, and fell down before him, and told him all the truth.

³⁴ And he said unto her, "Daughter, thy faith, hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy plague."

³⁵ While he yet spake, there came, from the ruler of the synagogue's *house, certain*, which said, "Thy daughter, is dead: why troublest thou the Master any further?"

³⁶ As soon as Jesus, heard the word, that was spoken, he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, "Be not afraid, only believe."

³⁷ And he suffered no man, to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of Jaines. ³⁸ And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them, that wept, and wailed greatly. ³⁹ And when he was come in, he saith unto them, "Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damsel, is not dead, but sleepeth."—⁴⁰ And they laughed him to scorn.

But, when he had put them all out, he taketh the father, and the mother of the damsel, and them, that were with him, and entereth in, where the damsel, was lying. ⁴¹ And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, "Talitha, cumi;" which is, being interpreted, 'Damsel, I say unto thee, arise.'

⁴² And, straightway, the damsel, arose, and walked; for, she was *of the age* of twelve years. And they were astonished with a great astonishment. ⁴³ And he charged them straitly, that no man, should know it; and commanded, that something should be given her to eat.

CHAPTER VI.

1 Christ is contemned of his countrymen. 7 He giveth the twelve power over unclean spirits. 14 Divers opinions of Christ. 18 John Baptist is beheaded, 29 and buried. 30 The apostles return from preaching. 34 The miracle of five loaves and two fishes. 45 Christ walketh on the sea : 53 and healeth all that touch him.

1 And he went out from thence, and came into his own country ; and his disciples, follow him.

2 And when the sabbath day, was come, he began, to teach in the synagogue : and many, hearing him, were astonished, saying, “ From whence hath this *man* these things ? and “ what wisdom, *is* this, which is given unto him, that even “ such mighty works, are wrought by his hands ? ” **3** Is not “ this, the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, “ and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon ? and are not his sisters “ here with us ? ” And they were offended at him.

4 But, Jesus, said unto them, “ A prophet, is not without “ honour, but, in his own country, and among his own kin, “ and in his own house.”

5 And he could, there, do no mighty work, save, that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed *them*.

6 And he marvelled, because of their unbelief.

And he went round about the villages, teaching

7 And he called *unto him* the twelve, and began, to send them forth by two and two ; and gave them power over unclean spirits ; **8** and commanded them, that they should take nothing for *their* journey, save a staff only ; no scrip, no bread, no money in *their* purse : **9** but be shod with sandals ; and not put on two coats. **10** And he said unto them, “ In “ what place soever, ye enter into an house, there abide, till ye “ depart from that place. **11** And whosoever shall not receive “ you, nor, hear you, when ye depart thence, shake off the “ dust under your feet, for a testimony against them. Verily “ I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Sodom, and “ Gomorrah, in the day of judgment, than for that city.”

12 And they went out, and preached, that men, should repent. **13** And they cast out many devils, and anointed, with oil, many, that were sick, and healed *them*.

CHAPTER VI.

¹⁴ And king Herod, heard *of him*; (for, his name, was spread abroad;) and he said, “That John the Baptist, “was risen from the dead, and, therefore, mighty works, do “shew forth themselves in him.” ¹⁵ Others, said, “That it “is Elias.” And others, said, “That it is a prophet, or, as “one of the prophets.” ¹⁶ But, when Herod, heard *thereof*, he said, “It is John, whom I beheaded: he is risen from the “dead.”

¹⁷ (For, Herod himself, had sent forth, and laid hold upon John, and bound him in prison for Herodias’ sake, his brother Philip’s wife: for, he had married her. ¹⁸ For, John, had said unto Herod, “It is not lawful, for thee to have thy “brother’s wife.” ¹⁹ Therefore, Herodias, had a quarrel against him, and would have killed him; but, she could not: ²⁰ for, Herod, feared John, knowing, that he was a just man, and an holy, and observed him; and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

²¹ And when a convenient day, was come, that Herod, on his birthday, made a supper to his lords, high captains, and chief *estates* of Galilee; ²² and when the daughter of the said Herodias, came in, and danced, and pleased Herod, and them, that sat with him, the king, said unto the damsel, “Ask of “me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give *it* thee.” ²³ And he sware unto her, “Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will “give *it* thee, unto the half of my kingdom.”

²⁴ And she went forth, and said unto her mother, “What “shall I ask?”

And she said, “The head of John the Baptist.”

²⁵ And she came in straightway, with haste, unto the king, and asked, saying, “I will, that thou give me, by and by, in “a charger, the head of John the Baptist.”

²⁶ And the king, was exceeding sorry, *yet*, for his oath’s sake, and for their sakes, which sat with him, he would not reject her. ²⁷ And, immediately, the king, sent an executioner, and commanded, his head to be brought: and he went, and beheaded him in the prison, ²⁸ and brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel: and the damsel, gave it to her mother.

²⁹ And when his disciples, heard *of it*, they came, and took up his corpse, and laid it in a tomb.)

³⁰ And the apostles, gathered themselves together unto Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done; and what they had taught. ³¹ And he said unto them, “ Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest a while : ” for, there were many, coming, and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat. ³² And they departed into a desert place, by ship, privately. ³³ And the people, saw them departing, and many, knew him, and ran afoot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him. ³⁴ And Jesus, when he came out, saw much people, and was moved with compassion toward them, because, they were as sheep not having a shepherd : and he began, to teach them many things.

³⁵ And when the day, was, now, far spent, his disciples came unto him, and said, “ This, is a desert place, and now “ the time, is far passed : ³⁶ send them away, that they may “ go into the country round about, and into the villages, and “ buy themselves bread : for, they have nothing to eat.”

³⁷ He answered, and said unto them, “ Give ye them to “ eat.”

And they say unto him, “ Shall we go, and buy two hundred pennyworth of bread, and give them to eat ? ”

³⁸ He saith unto them, “ How many loaves have ye ? go, “ and see.”

And when they knew, they say, “ Five, and two fishes.”

³⁹ And he commanded them, to make all sit down, by companies, upon the green grass. ⁴⁰ And they sat down in ranks, by hundreds, and by fifties. ⁴¹ And when he had taken the five loaves, and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and blessed, and brake the loaves, and gave *them* to his disciples, to set before them ; and the two fishes divided he among them all. ⁴² And they did all eat, and were filled. ⁴³ And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes. ⁴⁴ And they, that did eat of the loaves, were about five thousand men.

⁴⁵ And, straightway, he constrained his disciples, to get into the ship, and to go to the other side before unto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people. ⁴⁶ And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain, to pray. ⁴⁷ And when even, was come, the ship, was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land. ⁴⁸ And he saw their toil-

CHAPTER VII.

ing in rowing ; for, the wind, was contrary unto them : and, about the fourth watch of the night, he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them. ⁴⁹ But, when they saw him, walking upon the sea, they supposed, it had been a spirit, and cried out : ⁵⁰ for, they all saw him, and were troubled. And, immedately, he talked with them, and saith unto them, “ Be of good cheer : it is I ; be “ not afraid.”

⁵¹ And he went up unto them into the ship ; and the wind, ceased : and they were sore amazed in themselves, beyond measure, and wondered. ⁵² For, they considered not *the miracle* of the loaves : for, their heart, was hardened.

⁵³ And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Gennesaret, and drew to the shore. ⁵⁴ And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him, ⁵⁵ and ran through that whole region round about, and began, to carry about, in beds, those, that were sick, where they heard he was. ⁵⁶ And whithersoever he entered, into villages, or, cities, or, country, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him, that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment : and as many, as touched him, were made whole.

CHAPTER VII.

1 *The Pharisees find fault at the disciples for eating with unwashen hands. 8 They break the commandment of God by the traditions of men. 14 Meat defileth not the man. 24 He healeth the Syrophoenician woman's daughter of an unclean spirit, 31 and one that was deaf, and stammered in his speech.*

¹ Then came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the Scribes, which came from Jerusalem. ² And when they saw some of his disciples, eat bread with defiled, that is to say, with unwashen, hands, they found fault. ³ For, the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash *their* hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders. ⁴ And *when they come* from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, *as* the washing of cups, and pots, brasen vessels, and of tables.

⁵ Then the Pharisees, and Scribes, asked him, “ Why walk

" not thy disciples, according to the tradition of the elders,
" but, eat bread with unwashen hands ? "

⁶ He answered, and said unto them, " Well hath Esaias prophesied of you, hypocrites, as it is written, ' This people honoureth me with *their* lips, but, their heart, is far from me. ⁷ Howbeit, in vain do they worship me, teaching, ^{for} doctrines, the commandments of men.' ⁸ For, laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, *as* the washing of pots, and cups : and many other such like things ye do." ⁹ And he said unto them, " Full well, ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition. ¹⁰ For, Moses, said, ' Honour thy father, and thy mother ; ' and, ' Whoso curseth father, or, mother, let him die the death : ' ¹¹ but, ye say, ' If a man shall say to his father, or, mother, *It is Corban*, ' (that is to say, a gift,) ' by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me ; *he shall be free.*' ¹² And ye suffer him, no more, to do ought for his father, or, his mother ; ¹³ making the word of God of none effect, through your tradition, which ye have delivered : and many such like things do ye."

¹⁴ And when he had called all the people *unto him*, he said unto them, " Hearken unto me every one *of you*, and understand : ¹⁵ There is nothing from without a man, that, entering into him, can defile him : but, the things, which come *OUT* of him, those, are they, that defile the man. ¹⁶ If any man have ears to hear, let him hear."

¹⁷ And when he was entered into the house, from the people, his disciples, asked him, concerning the parable.

¹⁸ And he saith unto them, " Are ye so without understanding also ? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing, from without, entereth into the man, *it* cannot defile him ; ¹⁹ because, it entereth not into his heart, but, into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats ? " ²⁰ And he said, " That, which cometh *OUT* of the man, THAT, defileth the man. ²¹ For, from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, ²² thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness : ²³ all these evil things, come from within, and defile the man."

²⁴ And, from thence, he arose, and went into the bor-

CHAPTER VIII.

ders of Tyre, and Sidon, and entered into an house, and would have no man know *it*: but, he could not be hid. ²⁵ For, a certain woman, whose young daughter, had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came, and fell at his feet: (²⁶ the woman, was a Greek, a Syrophenician by nation;) and she besought him, that he would cast forth the devil out of her daughter.

²⁷ But, Jesus, said unto her, " Let the children, first, be filled: for, it is not meet, to take the children's bread, and " to cast *it* unto the dogs."

²⁸ And she answered, and said unto him, " Yes, Lord: yet, " the dogs, under the table, eat of the children's crumbs."

²⁹ And he said unto her, " For this saying, go thy way; " the devil, is gone out of thy daughter."

³⁰ And when she was come to her house, she found, the devil, gone out, and her daughter, laid upon the bed.

³¹ And again, departing from the coasts of Tyre, and Sidon, he came unto the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis.

³² And they bring unto him one, that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech; and they beseech him, to put his hand upon him. ³³ And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue; ³⁴ and, looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him, " Ephphatha," (that is, Be opened.) ³⁵ And, straightway, his ears, were opened, and the string of his tongue, was loosed, and he spake plain.

³⁶ And he charged them, that they should tell no man: but, the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published *it*; ³⁷ and were, beyond measure, astonished, saying, " He hath done all things well: he maketh both the " deaf, to hear, and the dumb, to speak."

CHAPTER VIII.

1 Christ feedeth the people miraculously: 10 refuseth to give a sign to the Pharisees: 14 admonisheth his disciples to beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod: 22 giveth a blind man his sight: 27 acknowledgeth that he is the Christ, who should suffer and rise again: 34 and exhorteth to patience in persecution for the profession of the Gospel.

¹ In those days, the multitude, being very great, and having nothing to eat, Jesus, called his disciples *unto him*, and saith unto them, ² “ I have compassion on the multitude, “ because, they have, now, been with me three days, and have “ nothing to eat : ³ and if I send them away fasting to their “ own houses, they will faint by the way : for, divers of “ them, came from afar.”

⁴ And his disciples, answered him, “ From whence, can a “ man satisfy these *men* with bread, here in the wilderness ? ”

⁵ And he asked them, “ How many loaves have ye ? ”
And they said, “ Seven.”

⁶ And he commanded the people, to sit down on the ground : and he took the seven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples, to set before *them* ; and they did set *them* before the people. ⁷ And they had a few small fishes: and he blessed, and commanded, to set them, also, before *them*. ⁸ So, they did eat, and were filled : and they took up of the broken *meat*, that was left, seven baskets. ⁹ And they, that had eaten, were about four thousand : and he sent them away.

¹⁰ And, straightway, he entered into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

¹¹ And the Pharisees, came forth, and began, to question with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him.

¹² And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, “ Why “ doth this generation seek after a sign ? verily I say unto “ you, There shall no sign be given unto this generation.”

¹³ And he left them, and, entering into the ship again, departed to the other side. ¹⁴ Now, *the disciples*, had forgotten to take bread, neither, had they in the ship with them more than one loaf. ¹⁵ And he charged them, saying, “ Take “ heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the “ leaven of Herod.”

¹⁶ And they reasoned among themselves, saying, “ *It is*, “ because, we have no bread.”

¹⁷ And when Jesus, knew *it*, he saith unto them, “ Why “ reason ye, because, ye have no bread ? perceive ye not yet, “ neither understand ? have ye your heart yet hardened ? “ ¹⁸ having eyes, see ye not ? and having ears, hear ye not ?

CHAPTER VIII.

“ and do ye not remember ? ¹⁹ When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up ? ”

They say unto him, “ Twelve.”

²⁰ “ And when the seven among four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up ? ”

And they said, “ Seven.”

²¹ And he said unto them, “ How is it, that ye do not understand ? ”

²² And he cometh to Bethsaida ; and they bring a blind man unto him, and besought him, to touch him. ²³ And he took the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the town ; and when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him, if he saw ought.

²⁴ And he looked up, and said, “ I see men, as trees, walking.”

²⁵ After that, he put his hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up : and he was restored, and saw every man clearly. ²⁶ And he sent him away to his house, saying, “ Neither, go into the town, nor, tell it to any in the town.”

²⁷ And Jesus, went out, and his disciples, into the towns of Cæsarea Philippi : and, by the way, he asked his disciples, saying unto them, “ Whom do men say, that I am ? ”

²⁸ And they answered, “ John the Baptist : but, some, say, “ Elias ; and others, One of the prophets.”

²⁹ And he saith unto them, “ But, whom say ye, that I am ? ”

And Peter, answereth, and saith unto him, “ Thou art the Christ.”

³⁰ And he charged them, that they should tell no man of him.

³¹ And he began, to teach them, that the Son of man, must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and of the Chief Priests, and Scribes, and be killed, and, after three days, rise again. ³² And he spake that saying openly. And Peter, took him, and began, to rebuke him.

³³ But, when he had turned about, and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, “ Get thee behind me, Satan : “ for, thou savourest not the things, that be of God, but, the “ things, that be of men.”

³⁴ And when he had called the people *unto him*, with his disciples also, he said unto them, “ Whosoever will come

“ after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. ³⁵ For, whosoever will save his life, shall lose it ; but, whosoever shall lose his life, for my sake, and the Gospel’s, the same, shall save it. ³⁶ For, what shall it profit a man, if he shall GAIN the whole world, and LOSE his own soul ? ³⁷ or, what shall a man give in EXCHANGE for his soul ? ³⁸ Whosoever, therefore, shall be ashamed of ME, and of my words, in this adulterous, and sinful generation ; of HIM, also, shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh, in the glory of his Father, with the holy angels.”

CHAPTER IX.

2 Jesus is transfigured. 11 He instructeth his disciples concerning the coming of Elias : 14 casteth forth a dumb and deaf spirit : 30 foretelleth his death and resurrection : 33 exhorteth his disciples to humility : 38 bidding them not to prohibit such as be not against them, nor to give offence to any of the faithful.

1 And he said unto them, “ Verily I say unto you, “ That there be some of them, that stand here, which shall not “ taste of death, till they have seen, the kingdom of God come “ with power.”

2 And, after six days, Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into an high mountaintop, apart by themselves : and he was transfigured before them. **3** And his raiment, became shining, exceeding white—as snow ; so, as no fuller on earth, can white them. **4** And there appeared unto them, Elias with Moses : and they were talking with Jesus.

5 And Peter, answered, and said to Jesus, “ Master, it is “ good, for us to be here : and let us make three tabernacles ; “ one, for thee, and one, for Moses, and one, for Elias.”

6 For, he wist not what to say ; for, they were sore afraid.

7 And there was a cloud, that overshadowed them : and a voice, came out of the cloud, saying, “ This, is my beloved Son : hear him.” **8** And, suddenly, when they had looked round about, they saw no man any more, save Jesus only with themselves.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them, that they should tell no man, what things they had seen,

CHAPTER IX.

till the Son of man were risen from the dead. ¹⁰ And they kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another, what the rising from the dead, should mean.

¹¹ And they asked him, saying, "Why say the Scribes, that Elias must first come?"

¹² And he answered, and told them, "Elias, verily, cometh first, and restoreth all things; and how it is written of the Son of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought. ¹³ But, I say unto you, That Elias is, indeed, come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him."

¹⁴ And when he came to *his* disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the Scribes, questioning with them.

¹⁵ And, straightway, all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and, running to *him*, saluted him.

¹⁶ And he asked the Scribes, "What question ye with them?"

¹⁷ And one of the multitude, answered, and said, "Master, I have brought unto thee my son, which hath a dumb spirit; ¹⁸ and wheresoever he taketh him, he teareth him: and he foameth, and gnasheth with his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples, that they should cast him out; and they could not."

¹⁹ He answereth him, and saith, "O, faithless generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I SUFFER you? Bring him unto me."

²⁰ And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him, straightway, the spirit tare him; and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming.

²¹ And he asked his father, "How long is it ago, since this, came unto him?"

And he said, "Of a child. ²² And, oftentimes, it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters, to destroy him: but, if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us."

²³ Jesus, said unto him, "If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him, that believeth."

²⁴ And straightway, the father of the child, cried out, and said, with tears, "Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief."

²⁵ When Jesus saw, that the people, came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, "Thou dumb

" and deaf spirit, I charge thee, come out of him, and enter " no more into him."

²⁶ And *the spirit*, cried, and rent him sore, and came out of him : and he was as one dead ; insomuch, that many, SAID, " He is dead." ²⁷ But, Jesus, took him by the hand, and lifted him up ; and he arose.

²⁸ And when he was come into the house, his disciples, asked him privately, " Why could not we cast him out ? "

²⁹ And he said unto them, " This kind, can come forth by " nothing, but, by prayer, and fasting."

³⁰ And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee ; and he would not, that any man, should know it. ³¹ For, he taught his disciples, and said unto them, " The Son of man, " is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him ; " and, after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day." —³² But, they understood not that saying, and were afraid, to ask him.

³³ And he came to Capernaum : and, being in the house, he asked them, " What was it, that ye disputed among " yourselves by the way ? " —³⁴ But, they held their peace : for, by the way, they had disputed among themselves, who *should be* the greatest.—³⁵ And he sat down, and called the twelve, and saith unto them, " If any man desire to be first, " *the same*, shall be last of all, and SERVANT of all." ³⁶ And he took a child, and set him in the midst of them : and, when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto them, ³⁷ " Who- " soever shall receive one of such children, in my name, re- " ceiveth ME : and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth " not me, but, Him, that sent me."

³⁸ And John, answered him, saying, " Master, we saw one, " casting out devils in thy name, and he followeth not us : " and we forbade him, BECAUSE, he followeth not us."

³⁹ But, Jesus, said, " Forbid him not : for, there is no man, " which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak " evil of me. ⁴⁰ For, he, that is not against us, is on our part.

" ⁴¹ For, whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink, in " my name, because, ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto " you, he shall not lose his reward. ⁴² And whosoever shall " offend one of *these* little ones, that believe in me, it is better

CHAPTER X.

“ for him, that a millstone, were hanged about his neck, and
“ he were cast into the sea.

“⁴³ “ And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better, for
“ thee to enter into life maimed, than, having two hands, to
“ go into hell, into the fire, that never shall be quenched :
“⁴⁴ where their worm, dieth not, and the fire, is not quenched.

“⁴⁵ “ And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better, for
“ thee to enter halt into life, than, having two feet, to be cast
“ into hell, into the fire, that never shall be quenched :⁴⁶ where
“ their worm, dieth not, and the fire, is not quenched.

“⁴⁷ “ And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better
“ for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than,
“ having two eyes, to be cast into hell fire :⁴⁸ where their
“ worm, dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

“⁴⁹ “ For, every one, shall be salted with fire, and every sacri-
“ fice, shall be salted with salt.⁵⁰ Salt, is good: but, if the
“ salt have lost his saltiness, wherewith will ye season it?
“ Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another.’

CHAPTER X.

*2 Christ disputeth with the Pharisees touching divorceement: 13 bles-
eth the children that are brought unto him: 17 resolveth a rich man
how he may inherit life everlasting: 23 telleth his disciples of the
danger of riches: 28 promiseth rewards to them that forsake any
thing for the Gospel: 32 foretelleth his death and resurrection:
35 biddeth the two ambitious suitors to think rather of suffering
with him: 46 and restoreth to Bartimæus his sight.*

¹ And he arose from thence, and cometh into the coasts of Judæa, by the farther side of Jordan: and the people, resort unto him again; and, as he was wont, he TAUGHT them again.

² And the Pharisees, came to him, and asked him, “ Is it lawful, for a man to put away his wife? ” (tempting him.)

³ And he answered, and said unto them, “ What did Moses command you? ”

⁴ And they said, “ Moses, suffered, to write a bill of divorce-
“ ment, and to put her away.”

⁵ And Jesus, answered, and said unto them, “ For the hardness of your heart, he wrote you this precept. ⁶ But, from
“ the beginning of the creation, God, made them male, and
“ female. ⁷ For this cause, shall a man leave his father, and

SAINT MARK.

“ ‘ mother, and cleave to his wife ; ⁸ and they twain, shall be “ ‘ one flesh : ’ so, then, they are no more twain, but, one flesh. “ ‘ What, therefore, GOD, hath joined together, let not man “ put asunder.’ ”

¹⁰ And, in the house, his disciples, asked him again of the same *matter*.

¹¹ And he saith unto them, “ Whosoever shall put away “ his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against “ her. ¹² And if a woman shall put away her husband, and “ be married to another, she committeth adultery.”

¹³ And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them : and *his* disciples, rebuked those, that brought *them*. ¹⁴ But, when Jesus, saw *it*, he was much displeased, and said unto them, “ Suffer the little children, to “ come unto me, and forbid them not : for, of such, is the “ kingdom of God. ¹⁵ Verily I say unto you, Whosoever “ shall not receive the kingdom of God, As a little child, “ he shall not enter therein.” ¹⁶ And he took them up in his arms, put *his* hands upon them, and blessed them.

¹⁷ And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one, running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, “ Good Master, what shall I do, that I may inherit eternal “ life ? ”

¹⁸ And Jesus, said unto him, “ Why callest thou me good ? “ *there is* none good, but one, *that is*, God. ¹⁹ Thou know-“ est the commandments, ‘ Do not commit adultery, Do not “ kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, “ Honour thy father, and mother.’ ”

²⁰ And he answered, and said unto him, “ Master, all these “ have I observed from my youth.”

²¹ Then Jesus, beholding him, loved him, and said unto him, “ One thing thou lackest : go thy way, sell whatsoever “ thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have trea-“ sure in heaven : and come, take up the cross, and follow “ me.”

²² And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved : for, he had great possessions.

²³ And Jesus, looked round about, and saith unto his disciples, “ How hardly shall they, that have riches, enter into “ the kingdom of God ! ”

CHAPTER X.

²⁴ And the disciples, were astonished at his words. But, Jesus, answereth again, and saith unto them, "Children, how hard is it, for them, that TRUST in riches, to enter into the kingdom of God ! ²⁵ It is easier, for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than, for a rich man, to enter into the kingdom of God."

²⁶ And they were astonished, out of measure, saying among themselves, "Who, then, can be saved ?"

²⁷ And Jesus, looking upon them, saith, "With men, it is impossible, but, not with God : for, with God, all things, are possible."

²⁸ Then Peter, began, to say unto him, "Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee."

²⁹ And Jesus, answered, and said, "Verily I say unto you, There is no man, that hath left house, or, brethren, or, sisters, or, father, or, mother, or, wife, or, children, or, lands, for my sake, and the Gospel's, ³⁰ but, he shall receive an hundredfold, now, in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions ; and, in the world to come, eternal life. ³¹ But, many, that are first, shall be last ; and the last, first."

³² And they were in the way, going up to Jerusalem ; and Jesus, went before them : and they were amazed ; and, as they followed, they were afraid. And he took again the twelve, and began, to tell them, what things, should happen unto him, ³³ saying, "Behold, we go up to Jerusalem ; and the Son of man, shall be delivered unto the Chief Priests, and unto the Scribes ; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles : ³⁴ and they shall mock him, and shall scourge him, and shall spit upon him, and shall kill him : and, the third day, he shall rise again."

³⁵ And James, and John, the sons of Zebedee, come unto him, saying, "Master, we would, that thou shouldest do for us, whatsoever we shall desire."

³⁶ And he said unto them, "What would ye, that I should do for you ?"

³⁷ They said unto him, "Grant unto us, that we may sit, one, on thy right hand, and the other, on thy left hand, in thy glory."

³⁸ But, Jesus, said unto them, "Ye know not, what ye ask :

SAINT MARK.

“ can ye drink of the cup, that I drink of? and be baptized with the baptism, that I am baptized with?”

“³⁹ And they said unto him, “ We can.”

And Jesus, said unto them, “ Ye shall, indeed, drink of the cup, that I drink of; and, with the baptism, that I am baptized withal, shall ye be baptized: ⁴⁰ but, to sit on my right hand, and on my left hand, is not mine to give; but, it shall be given to them, for whom it is prepared.”

“⁴¹ And when the ten, heard it, they began, to be much displeased with James, and John.

“⁴² But, Jesus, called them *to him*, and saith unto them, “ Ye know, that they, which are accounted, to rule over the Gentiles, exercise lordship over them; and their great ones, exercise authority upon them. ⁴³ But, so, shall it not be among you: but, whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister: ⁴⁴ and whosoever of you, will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all. ⁴⁵ For, even the Son of man, came, not to be ministered unto, but, to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.”

“⁴⁶ And they came to Jericho: and, as he went out of Jericho, with his disciples, and a great number of people, blind Bartimæus, the son of Timæus, sat by the highway side, begging. ⁴⁷ And when he heard, that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began, to cry out, and say, “ Jesus, thou Son of David, have mercy on me.” ⁴⁸ And many, charged him, that he should hold his peace: but, he cried the more a great deal, “ Thou Son of David, have mercy on me.”

“⁴⁹ And Jesus, stood still, and commanded him, to be called.

And they call the blind man, saying unto him, “ Be of good comfort, rise; he calleth thee.” ⁵⁰ And he, casting away his garment, rose, and came to Jesus.

“⁵¹ And Jesus, answered, and said unto him, “ What wilt thou, that I should do unto thee?”

The blind man, said unto him, “ Lord, that I might receive my sight.”

“⁵² And Jesus, said unto him, “ Go thy way; thy faith, hath made thee whole.”

And, immediately, he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way.

CHAPTER XI.

1 Christ rideth with triumph into Jerusalem : 12 curseth the fruitless leafy tree : 15 purgeth the temple : 20 exhorteth his disciples to stedfastness of faith, and to forgive their enemies : 27 and defendeth the lawfulness of his actions, by the witness of John, who was a man sent of God.

1 And when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage, and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sendeth forth two of his disciples, **2** and saith unto them, “ Go your way into the village over against you : and, as soon as ye be entered into it, ye shall find a colt tied, whereon, never man, sat ; loose him, and bring him. **3** And if any man say unto you, ‘ Why do ye this ? ’ say ye, that the Lord, hath need of him ; and, straightway, he will send him hither.”

4 And they went their way, and found the colt, tied by the door without, in a place, where two ways, met ; and they loose him. **5** And certain of them, that stood there, said unto them, “ What do ye, loosing the colt ? ” **6** And they said unto them, even as Jesus, had commanded : and they let them go.

7 And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him ; and he sat upon him. **8** And many, spread their garments in the way : and others, cut down branches off the trees, and strawed *them* in the way. **9** And they, that went before, and they, that followed, cried, saying, “ Hosanna ; “ **10** Blessed is he, that cometh in the name of the Lord : “ **11** Blessed be the kingdom of our father David, that cometh “ in the name of the Lord : Hosanna in the highest.”

11 And Jesus, entered into Jerusalem, and into the temple : and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now, the eventide, was come, he went out unto Bethany, with the twelve.

12 And, on the morrow, when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry : **13** and seeing a fig tree, afar off, having leaves, he came, if haply he might find any thing thereon : and when he came to it, he found nothing, but, leaves ; for, the time of figs, was not *yet*. **14** And Jesus, answered, and said unto it, “ No man eat fruit of thee, hereafter for ever.”—And his disciples, heard *it*.

15 And they come to Jerusalem : and Jesus, went into

the temple, and began to cast out them, that sold, and bought, in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them, that sold doves ; ¹⁶ and would not suffer, that any man, should carry *any* vessel through the temple. ¹⁷ And he taught, saying unto them, “ Is it not written, “ ‘ My house, shall be called, of all nations, the house of “ ‘ prayer ? but, ye have made it a den of thieves.’ ”

¹⁸ And the Scribes, and Chief Priests, heard *it*, and sought, how they might destroy him : for, they feared him, because, all the people, was astonished at his doctrine.

¹⁹ And when even, was come, he went out of the city.

²⁰ And, in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig tree, dried up from the roots. ²¹ And Peter, calling to remembrance, saith unto him, “ Master, behold, the fig tree, “ which thou cursedst, is withered away.”

²² And Jesus, answering, saith unto them, “ Have faith in “ God. ²³ For, verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall “ say unto this mountain, ‘ Be thou removed, and be thou “ ‘ cast into the sea ; ’ and shall not doubt in his heart, but, “ shall believe, that those things, which he saith, shall come “ to pass ; he shall have whatsoever he saith.

²⁴ “ Therefore, I say unto you, What things soever ye de-“ sire, when ye pray, believe, that ye receive *them*, and ye “ shall have *them*. ²⁵ And when ye stand, praying, forgive, “ if ye have ought against any : that your Father, also, which “ is in heaven, may forgive you your trespasses. ²⁶ But, if ye “ do not forgive, neither will your Father, which is in hea-“ ven, forgive your trespasses.”

²⁷ And they come again to Jerusalem : and, as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the Chief Priests, and the Scribes, and the elders, ²⁸ and say unto him, “ By “ what authority doest thou these things ? and who GAVE “ thee this authority, to do these things ? ”

²⁹ And Jesus, answered, and said unto them, “ I will, also, “ ask of you one question, and answer me, and I will tell you, “ by what authority I do these things. ³⁰ The baptism of “ John, was *it* from heaven, or, of men ? answer me.”

³¹ And they reasoned with themselves, saying, “ If we shall “ say, ‘ From heaven ; ’ he will say, ‘ Why, then, did ye not
100

CHAPTER XII.

“ ‘ believe him ? ’ ³² But, if we shall say, ‘ Of men ; ’ they “ feared the people : for, all *men*, counted John, that he was “ a prophet indeed.”—³³ And they answered, and said unto Jesus, “ We cannot tell.”

And Jesus, answering, saith unto them, “ Neither, do I tell “ you, by what authority I do these things.”

CHAPTER XII.

1 *In a parable of the vineyard let out to unthankful husbandmen, Christ foretelleth the reprobation of the Jews, and the calling of the Gentiles. 13 He avoideth the snare of the Pharisees and Herodians about paying tribute to Cæsar : 18 convinceth the error of the Sadducees, who denied the resurrection : 28 resolveth the Scribe, who questioned of the first commandment : 35 refuteth the opinion that the Scribes held of Christ : 38 bidding the people to beware of their ambition and hypocrisy : 41 and commendeth the poor widow for her two mites, above all.*

¹ And he began, to speak unto them by parables. “ A “ certain man, planted a vineyard, and set an hedge about it, “ and digged a place for the winefat, and built a tower, and “ let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country. “ ² And, at the season, he sent to the husbandmen a servant, “ that he might receive, from the husbandmen, of the fruit of “ the vineyard. ³ And they caught him, and beat him, and “ sent him away empty. ⁴ And, again, he sent unto them “ another servant ; and at him they cast stones, and wounded “ him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled. ⁵ And, again, he sent another ; and him they killed, and “ many others ; beating some, and killing some.

⁶ “ Having yet, therefore, one son, his wellbeloved, he sent “ him, also, last unto them, saying, ‘ They will reverence my “ son.’

⁷ “ But, those husbandmen, said among themselves, ‘ This, “ is the heir ; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance, “ shall be ours.’—⁸ And they took him, and killed him, and “ cast him out of the vineyard.

⁹ “ What shall, therefore, the lord of the vineyard do ? He “ will come, and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the “ vineyard unto OTHERS. ¹⁰ And have ye not read this “ Scripture ; ‘ The stone, which the builders, rejected, is

“ ‘ become the head of the corner : “ this, was the Lord’s
“ ‘ doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes ? ” ”

¹² And they sought, to lay hold on him, but, feared the people : for, they knew, that he had spoken the parable against them : and they left him, and went their way.

¹³ And they send unto him certain of the Pharisees, and of the Herodians, to catch him in *his* words. ¹⁴ And when they were come, they say unto him, “ Master, we know, “ that thou art true, and carest for no man, for, thou regardest “ not the person of men, but, teachest the way of God in “ truth : Is it lawful, to give tribute to Cæsar, or, not ?
¹⁵ shall we give, or, shall we NOT give ? ”

But, he, knowing their hypoerisy, said unto them, “ Why “ tempt ye me ? bring me a penny, that I may see it.”—
¹⁶ And they brought it.—And he saith unto them, “ Whose “ is this image, and superscription ? ”

And they said unto him, “ Cæsar’s.”

¹⁷ And Jesus, answering, said unto them, “ Render to Cæsar “ the THINGS, that are Cæsar’s, and to God the things, that “ are GOD’s.”

And they marvelled at him.

¹⁸ Then come unto him the Sadducees, which say, there is no resurrection ; and they asked him, saying, ¹⁹ “ Mas-
ter, Moscs, wrote unto us, ‘ If a man’s brother die, and
“ ‘ leave his wife behind him, and leave no children, that
“ ‘ his brother, should take his wife, and raise up seed
“ ‘ unto his brother.’ ²⁰ Now, there were seven brethren :
“ and the first, took a wife, and, dying, left no seed. ²¹ And
“ the second, took her, and died, neither left he any seed :
“ and the third, likewise. ²² And the seven, had her, and left
“ no seed : last of all, the woman, died also. ²³ In the resur-
“ rection, therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife, shall she
“ be of them ? for, the SEVEN, had her to wife.”

²⁴ And Jesus, answering, said unto them, “ Do ye not,
“ therefore, err, beeause, ye know not the Scriptures, neither,
“ the power of God ? ²⁵ For, when they shall rise from the
“ dead, they neither marry, nor, are given in marriage ; but,
“ are as the angels, which are in heaven. ²⁶ And, as touching
“ the dead, that they rise : have ye not read, in the book of
“ Moses, how, in the bush, God, spake unto him, saying,
“ ‘ I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and

CHAPTER XII.

“ ‘ the God of Jacob ? ’ ²⁷ He is not the God of the DEAD,
“ but, the God of the LIVING : ye, therefore, do GREATLY
“ err.”

²⁸ And one of the Scribes, came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving, that he had answered them well, asked him, “ Which is the first commandment of all ? ”

²⁹ And Jesus, answered him, “ The first of all the commandments, is, ‘ Hear, O, Israel ; The Lord our God, is one Lord : ³⁰ and thou shalt love the Lord thy God, with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength : ’ THIS, is the first commandment. ³¹ And the second, is like, namely this, ‘ Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.’ There is none other commandment greater than these.”

³² And the Scribe, said unto him, “ Well, Master, thou hast said the truth : for, there is one God ; and there is none other, but, He : ³³ and to love Him, with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is more than all whole burnt offerings, and sacrifices.”

³⁴ And when Jesus, saw, that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, “ Thou art not far from the kingdom of God.”

And no man, after that, durst ask him *any question.*

³⁵ And Jesus, answered, and said, while he taught in the temple, “ How say the Scribes, that Christ, is the Son of David ? ³⁶ For, David himself, said, by the Holy Ghost, ‘ The LORD, said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool.’ ³⁷ David, therefore, himself, calleth him Lord ; and whence is he, *then*, his Son ? ”

And the common people, heard him gladly.

³⁸ And he said unto them, in his doctrine, “ Beware of the Scribes, which love, to go in long clothing, and *love* salutations in the market-plaees, ³⁹ and the chief seats in the synagogues, and the uppermost rooms at feasts : ⁴⁰ which devour widows’ houses, and, for a pretence, make long prayers : these, shall receive greater damnation.

⁴¹ And Jesus, sat over against the treasury, and beheld how the people, cast money into the treasury : and many, that

were rich, cast in much. ⁴² And there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing. ⁴³ And he called unto him his disciples, and saith unto them, “ Verily I say unto you, That this poor widow, hath cast more in, than all they, which have cast into the treasury : ⁴⁴ for, all *they*, did cast in of their ABUNDANCE ; but, she, “ of her WANT, did cast in all, that she had, even all her “ living.”

CHAPTER XIII.

1 Christ foretelleth the destruction of the temple : 9 the persecutions for the Gospel : 10 that the Gospel must be preached to all nations : 14 that great calamities shall happen to the Jews : 24 and the manner of his coming to judgment : 32 the hour whereof being known to none, every man is to watch and pray, that we be not found unprovided, when he cometh to each one particularly by death.

¹ And, as he went out of the temple, one of his disciples, saith unto him, “ Master, see, what manner of stones, “ and what buildings, *are here !* ”

² And Jesus, answering, said unto him, “ Seest thou these “ great buildings ? there shall not be left one stone upon “ another, that shall not be thrown down.”

³ And, as he sat upon the mount of Olives, over against the temple, Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, asked him privately, ⁴ “ Tell us, when shall these things be ? and what “ shall be the sign, when all these things, shall be ful- “ filled ? ”

⁵ And Jesus, answering them, began, to say, “ Take heed, “ lest any *man*, deceive you : ⁶ for, many, shall come, in my “ name, saying, ‘ I am Christ ; ’ and shall DECEIVE many. ⁷ And when ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars, be “ ye not troubled : for, *such things*, must needs be ; but, the “ end, shall not be yet. ⁸ For, nation, shall rise against nation, “ and kingdom, against kingdom : and there shall be earth- “ quakes, in divers places, and there shall be famines, and “ troubles : these, *are* the beginnings of sorrows.

⁹ “ But, take heed to yourselves : for, they shall deliver you “ up to councils ; and, in the synagogues, ye shall be beaten : “ and ye shall be brought before rulers, and kings, for my sake, “ for a testimony against them. ¹⁰ And the Gospel, must

CHAPTER XIII.

“ first, be published among all nations. ¹¹ But, when they shall lead you, and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand, what ye shall speak, neither, do ye premeditate : but, whatsoever shall be given you, in that hour, that speak ye : for, it is not YE, that speak, but, the HOLY GHOST. ¹² Now, the brother, shall betray the brother, to death, and the father, the son ; and children, shall rise up against *their* parents, and shall cause them, to be put to death. ¹³ And ye shall be hated of all *men*, for my name’s sake : but, he, that shall endure unto the end, the same, shall be saved.

¹⁴ “ But, when ye shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not, (let him, that readeth, understand,) then, let them, that be in Judæa, flee to the mountains : ¹⁵ and let him, that is on the housetop, not go down into the house, neither, enter *therein*, to take any thing out of his house : ¹⁶ and let him, that is in the field, not turn back again, for to take up his garment. ¹⁷ But, woe to them, that are with child, and to them, that give suck in those days !

¹⁸ “ And pray ye, that your flight, be not in the winter. ¹⁹ For, in those days, shall be affliction, such as was not from the beginning of the creation, which God, created, unto this time, neither, shall be. ²⁰ And except, that the Lord, had shortened those days, no flesh, should be saved : but, for the elect’s sake, whom He hath chosen, He hath shortened the days. ²¹ And then, if any man shall say to you, ‘ Lo, here is Christ ; ’ or, ‘ Lo, he is there ; ’ believe him not : ²² for, FALSE Christs, and false prophets, shall rise, and shall shew signs, and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect. ²³ But, take ye heed : behold, I have foretold you all things.

²⁴ “ But, in those days, after that tribulation, the sun, shall be darkened, and the moon, shall not give her light, ²⁵ and the stars of heaven, shall fall, and the powers, that are in heaven, shall be shaken. ²⁶ And then, shall they see the Son of man, coming, in the clouds, with great power, and glory. ²⁷ And then, shall he send his angels, and shall gather together his elect, from the four winds, from the uttermost part of the earth, to the uttermost part of heaven.

²⁸ “ Now, learn a parable of the fig tree: When her branch, is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know, that summer,

“ is near : ²⁹ so, ye, in like manner, when ye shall see these “ things come to pass, know, that it is nigh, *even* at the doors. “ ³⁰ Verily I say unto you, that this generation, shall not pass, “ till all these things, be done. ³¹ Heaven, and earth, shall “ pass away : but, my words, shall not pass away.

³² “ But, of that day, and *that* hour, knoweth no man, no, “ not the angels, which are in heaven, neither, the Son, but, “ the Father. ³³ Take ye heed, watch, and pray: for, ye “ know not, when the time, is. ³⁴ *For, the Son of man, is* “ as a man, taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave “ authority to his servants, and to every man his work, and “ commanded the porter, to watch. ³⁵ Watch ye therefore: “ for, ye know not, when the master of the house, cometh, at “ even, or, at midnight, or, at the cockcrowing, or, in the “ morning: ³⁶ lest, coming suddenly, he find you sleeping. “ ³⁷ And what I say unto you, I say unto ALL, Watch.”

CHAPTER XIV.

¹ *A conspiracy against Christ.* ³ Precious ointment is poured on his head by a woman. ¹⁰ Judas selleth his Master for money. ¹² Christ himself foretelleth how he shall be betrayed of one of his disciples: ²² after the Passover prepared, and eaten, instituteth his supper: ²⁶ declareth beforehand the flight of all his disciples, and Peter's denial. ⁴³ Judas betrayeth him with a kiss. ⁴⁶ He is apprehended in the garden, ⁵³ falsely accused, and impiously condemned of the Jews' council: ⁶⁵ shamefully abused by them: ⁶⁶ and thrice denied of Peter.

¹ After two days, was the feast of the Passover, and of unleavened bread: and the Chief Priests, and the Scribes, sought, how they might take him by craft, and put him to death. ² But, they said, “ Not on the feast day, lest there “ be an uproar of the people.”

³ And, being in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, as he sat at meat, there came a woman, having an alabaster box of ointment of spikenard, very precious; and she brake the box, and poured it on his head. ⁴ And there were some, that had indignation within themselves, and said, “ Why was this waste of the ointment made? ⁵ For, it might “ have been sold, for more than three hundred pence, and have “ been given to the poor.” And they murmured against her.

CHAPTER XIV.

⁶ And Jesus said, "Let her alone; why trouble ye her? she hath wrought a good work on me." ⁷ For, ye have the poor with you always, and whosoever ye will, ye may do them good: but, ME ye have NOT always. ⁸ She hath done what she could: she is come, beforehand, to anoint my body to the burying. ⁹ Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this Gospel shall be preached, throughout the whole world, *this*, also, "that she hath done, shall be spoken of, for a memorial of her."

¹⁰ And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went unto the Chief Priests, to betray him unto them. ¹¹ And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised, to give him money. And he sought, how he might conveniently betray him.

¹² And, the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the Passover, his disciples, said unto him, "Where wilt thou, that we go, and prepare, that thou mayest eat the Passover?"

¹³ And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, and saith unto them, "Go ye into the city, and there shall meet you a man, bearing a pitcher of water: follow him. ¹⁴ And wheresoever he shall go in, say ye to the goodman of the house, 'The Master saith, Where is the guestchamber, where I shall eat the Passover with my disciples?' ¹⁵ And he will shew you a large upper room furnished, and prepared: there, make ready for us."

¹⁶ And his disciples, went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the Passover.

¹⁷ And, in the evening, he cometh with the twelve.

¹⁸ And, as they sat, and did eat, Jesus, said, "Verily I say unto you, One of you, which eateth with me, shall betray me."

¹⁹ And they began, to be sorrowful, and to say unto him, one by one, "*Is it I?*" and another, *said*, "*Is it I?*"

²⁰ And he answered, and said unto them, "It is one of the twelve, that dippeth with me in the dish. ²¹ The Son of man, indeed, goeth, as it is written of him: but, woe to that man, by whom, the Son of man, is betrayed! good were it for that man, if he had never been born."

SAINT MARK.

²² And as they did eat, Jesus, took bread, and blessed, and brake *it*, and gave to them, and said, “Take, eat: this, “is my body.” ²³ And he took the cup, and, when he had given thanks, he gave *it* to them: and they all drank of it.

²⁴ And he said unto them, “This, is my blood, of the new “testament, which is shed for many. ²⁵ Verily I say unto “you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, until that “day, that I drink it new, in the kingdom of God.”

²⁶ And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

²⁷ And Jesus, saith unto them, “All ye shall be offended, “because of me this night: for, it is written, ‘I will smite “the shepherd, and the sheep, shall be scattered.’ ²⁸ But, “after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee.”

²⁹ But, Peter, said unto him, “Although ALL, shall be of-“fended, yet, *will* not I.”

³⁰ And Jesus, saith unto him, “Verily I say unto thee, “That, this day, *even* in this NIGHT, before the cock, crow “twice, THOU shalt deny me thrice.”

³¹ But, he spake the more vehemently, “If I should die “WITH thee, I will not deny thee, in any wise.”

Likewise, also, said they all.

³² And they came to a place, which was named Geth-
semane: and he saith to his disciples, “Sit ye here, while I
“shall pray.”

³³ And he taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and began, to be sore amazed, and to be very heavy; ³⁴ and saith unto them, “My soul, is exceeding sorrowful—unto “death: tarry ye here, and watch.”

³⁵ And he went forward a little, and fell on the ground, and prayed, that, if it were possible, the hour, might pass from him. ³⁶ And he said, “Abba, Father, all things, *are* possi-“ble unto Thee; take away this cup from me: nevertheless, “not what I will, but, what THOU wilt.”

³⁷ And he cometh, and fiudeth them sleeping, and saith unto Peter, “Simon, sleepest thou? couldest not thou watch “one hour? ³⁸ Watch ye, and pray, lest ye enter into tempt-“ation. The spirit, truly, *is* ready, but, the flesh, *is* weak.”

³⁹ And, again, he went away, and prayed, and spake the same words. ⁴⁰ And when he returned, he found them

CHAPTER XIV.

asleep again, for, their eyes, were heavy, neither wist they, what to answer him.

"⁴¹ And he cometh, the third time, and saith unto them, " Sleep on now, and take *your* rest: it is enough, the hour, " is come; behold, the Son of man, is betrayed into the hands " of sinners. ⁴² Rise up, let us go; lo, he, that betrayeth " me, is at hand."

"⁴³ And immediately, while he yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and, with him, a great multitude, with swords and staves, from the Chief Priests, and the Scribes, and the elders.

"⁴⁴ And he, that betrayed him, had given them a token, saying, " Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same, is he; take " him, and lead *him* away safely." ⁴⁵ And, as soon as he was come, he goeth, straightway, to him, and saith, " Mas- " ter, master;" and kissed him. ⁴⁶ And they laid their hands on him, and took him.

"⁴⁷ And one of them, that stood by, drew a sword, and smote a servant of the High Priest, and cut off his ear.

"⁴⁸ And Jesus, answered, and said unto them, " Are ye come " out, as against a thief, with swords, and *with* staves, to take " me? ⁴⁹ I was daily with you in the temple, teaching, and " ye took me not: but, the Scriptures, must be fulfilled."

"⁵⁰ And they all forsook him, and fled.

"⁵¹ And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth cast about *his* naked *body*; and the young men, laid hold on him: ⁵² and he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked.

"⁵³ And they led Jesus away to the High Priest: and, with him, were assembled all the Chief Priests, and the elders, and the Scribes.

"⁵⁴ And Peter, followed him afar off, even into the palace of the High Priest: and he sat with the servants, and warmed himself at the fire.

"⁵⁵ And the Chief Priests, and all the council, sought for witness against Jesus, to put him to death; and found none. ⁵⁶ For, many, bare false witness against him, but, their witness, agreed not together. ⁵⁷ And there arose certain, and bare false witness against him, saying, ⁵⁸ " We heard him say, " ' I will destroy this temple, that is made with hands, and, " ' within three days, I will build another, made *WITHOUT*

“ ‘ hands.’ ” ⁵⁹ But, neither so did **THEIR** witness agree together.

⁶⁰ And the High Priest, stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying, “ Answerest thou nothing? what *is it*, *which* these, witness against thee?”

⁶¹ But, he held his peace, and answered nothing.

Again the High Priest, asked him, and said unto him, “ Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed?”

⁶² And Jesus, said, “ I am: and ye shall see the Son of man, sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.”

⁶³ Then, the High Priest, rent his clothes, and saith, “ What need we any further witnesses? ⁶⁴ Ye have **HEARD** the blasphemy: what think ye?”

And they all condemned him, to be guilty of death.

⁶⁵ And some, began, to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to say unto him, “ Prophesy:” and the servants, did strike him with the palms of their hands.

⁶⁶ And as Peter, was beneath in the palace, there cometh one of the maids of the High Priest: ⁶⁷ and when she saw Peter, warming himself, she looked upon him, and said, “ And thou, also, wast with Jesus of Nazareth.”

⁶⁸ But, he denied, saying, “ I know not, neither, understand I what thou sayest.”—And he went out into the porch; and the cock, crew.

⁶⁹ And a maid, saw him again, and began, to say to them, that stood by, “ This, is *one* of them.”

⁷⁰ And he denied it again.

And, a little after, they, that stood by, said again to Peter, “ **SURELY** thou art *one* of them: for, thou art a Galæan, and thy speech, agreeth thereto.”

⁷¹ But, he began, to curse, and to swear, *saying*, “ I know not this man of whom ye speak.”

⁷² And, the second time, the cock, crew. And Peter, called to mind the word, that Jesus, said unto him, “ Before the cock, crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.” And when he thought thereon, he wept.

CHAPTER XV.

CHAPTER XV.

Jesus brought bound, and accused before Pilate. 15 Upon the clamour of the common people, the murderer Barabbas is loosed, and Jesus delivered up to be crucified. 17 He is crowned with thorns, 19 spit on, and mocked : 21 fainteth in bearing his cross : 27 hangeth between two thieves : 29 suffereth the triumphing reproaches of the Jews : 39 but confessed by the centurion to be the Son of God : 43 and is honourably buried by Joseph.

¹ And, straightway, in the morning, the Chief Priests, held a consultation with the elders, and Scribes, and the whole council, and bound Jesus, and carried him away, and delivered him to Pilate.

² And Pilate, asked him, “Art thou the King of the Jews?”
And he, answering, said unto him, “Thou sayest it.”

³ And the Chief Priests, accused him of many things : but, he answered nothing.

⁴ And Pilate, asked him again, saying, “Answerest thou “nothing? behold, how many things, they witness against “thee.”

⁵ But, Jesus, yet answered nothing ; so, that Pilate, marvelled.

⁶ Now, at *that* feast, he released unto them one prisoner, whomsoever they desired. ⁷ And there was *one*, named Barabbas, *which lay* bound with them, that had made insurrection with him, who had committed MURDER in the insurrection. ⁸ And the multitude, crying aloud, began, to desire him, to do as he had ever done unto them. ⁹ But, Pilate, answered them, saying, “Will ye, that I release unto you the “King of the Jews?” ¹⁰ For, he knew, that the Chief Priests, had delivered him for envy.

¹¹ But, the Chief Priests, moved the people, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.

¹² And Pilate, answered, and said again unto them, “What “will ye, then, that I shall do unto him, whom ye call the “King of the Jews?”

¹³ And they cried out again, “Crucify him.”

¹⁴ Then Pilate, said unto them, “Why, what evil hath he “done?”

And they cried out, the more exceedingly, “Crucify “him.”

¹⁵ And so, Pilate, willing, to content the people, re-

leased Barabbas unto them, and delivered Jesus, when he had scourged *him*, to be crucified. ¹⁶ And the soldiers, led him away into the hall, called Prætorium; and they call together the whole band. ¹⁷ And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crown of thorns, and put it about his *head*, ¹⁸ and began, to salute him, “ Hail, King of the Jews ! ” ¹⁹ And they smote him on the head with a reed, and did spit upon him, and, bowing *their* knees, worshipped him. ²⁰ And, when they had mocked him, they took off the purple from him, and put his own clothes on him, and led him out, to crucify him. ²¹ And they compel one Simon, a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the country, the father of Alexander, and Rufus, to bear his cross.

²² And they bring him unto the place Golgotha,—which is, being interpreted, The place of a skull. ²³ And they gave him to drink, wine mingled with myrrh: but, he received *it* not. ²⁴ And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots upon them, what every man, should take. ²⁵ And it was the third hour, and they crucified him. ²⁶ And the superscription of his accusation, was written over,

“ THE KING OF THE JEWS.”

²⁷ And, with him, they crucify two thieves; the one, on his right hand, and the other, on his left. ²⁸ And the Scripture, was fulfilled, which saith, “ And he was numbered with the “ transgressors.”

²⁹ And they, that passed by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, “ Ah, thou, that destroyest the temple, and “ buildest *it*, in three days, ³⁰ save thyself, and come down “ from the cross.”

³¹ Likewise, also, the Chief Priests, mocking, said among themselves, with the Scribes, “ He saved others; himself he “ cannot save. ³² Let Christ, the King of Israel, descend, now “ from the cross, that we may see, and believe.”

And they, that were crucified with him, reviled him.

³³ And when the sixth hour, was come, there was darkness over the whole land, until the ninth hour.

³⁴ And, at the ninth hour, Jesus, cried with a loud voice, saying, “ Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani ? ”—which is, being interpreted, ‘ My God, my God, why hast Thou forsaken ‘ me ? ’

CHAPTER XVI.

³⁵ And some of them, that stood by, when they heard *it*, said, “Behold, he calleth Elias.”

³⁶ And one, ran, and filled a spunge full of vinegar, and put *it* on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying, “Let alone; let us see, whether Elias will come, to take him down.”

³⁷ And Jesus, cried with a loud voice, and gave up the ghost.

³⁸ And the veil of the temple, was rent in twain, from the top to the bottom.

³⁹ And when the centurion, which stood over against him, saw, that he so cried out, and gave up the ghost, he said, “Truly, this man, was the Son of God.”

⁴⁰ There were, also, women, looking on afar off: among whom, was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the Less, and of Joses, and Salome; ⁴¹ (who, also, when he was in Galilee, followed him, and ministered unto him;) and many other women, which came up with him unto Jerusalem.

⁴² And now, when the even, was come, because it was the preparation, (that is, the day before the sabbath,) ⁴³ Joseph of Arimathaea, an honourable counsellor, which, also, waited for the kingdom of God, came, and went in boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jesus. ⁴⁴ And Pilate, marvelled, if he were already dead: and, calling *unto him* the centurion, he asked him, whether he had been any while dead.

⁴⁵ And when he knew *it* of the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph. ⁴⁶ And he bought fine linen, and took him down, and wrapped him in the linen, and laid him in a sepulchre, which was hewn out of a rock, and rolled a stone unto the door of the sepulchre.

⁴⁷ And Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Joses, beheld where he was laid.

CHAPTER XVI.

¹ An angel declareth the resurrection of Christ to three women.
⁹ Christ himself appeareth to Mary Magdalene: ¹² to two going into the country: ¹⁴ then to the apostles, ¹⁵ whom he sendeth forth to preach the Gospel: ¹⁹ and ascendeth into heaven.

¹ And when the sahbat, was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, had bought

sweet spices, that they might come, and anoint him. ² And, very early in the morning, the first *day* of the week, they came unto the sepulchre, at the rising of the sun. ³ And they said among themselves, “ Who shall roll us away the “ stone, from the door of the sepulchre ? ”—⁴ And when they looked, they saw, that the stone, was rolled away : for, it was very great.

⁵ And, entering into the sepulchre, they saw a young man, sitting on the right side, clothed in a long, white garment ; and they were affrighted.

⁶ And he saith unto them, “ Be not affrighted : Ye seek “ Jesus of Nazareth, which was crucified : he is risen ; he is “ not here : behold the place, where they laid him. ⁷ But, “ go your way, tell his disciples, and Peter, that he goeth “ before you into Galilee : there, shall ye see him, as he said “ unto you.”

⁸ And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulchre ; for, they trembled, and were amazed : neither, said they any thing to any *man* ; for, they were afraid.

⁹ Now, when *Jesus*, was risen, early the first *day* of the week, he appeared, first, to Mary Magdalene, out of whom, he had cast seven devils. ¹⁰ And she went, and told them, that had been with him, as they mourned, and wept. ¹¹ And they, when they had heard, that he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not.

¹² After that, he appeared, in another form, unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the country. ¹³ And they went, and told *it* unto the residue : neither, believed they *THEM*.

¹⁴ Afterward, he appeared unto the eleven, as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief, and hardness of heart, because, they believed not them, which had seen him after he was risen. ¹⁵ And he said unto them, “ Go “ ye into all the world, and preach the Gospel to every crea-“ ture. ¹⁶ He, that believeth, and is baptized, shall be saved ; “ but, he, that believeth not, shall be damned. ¹⁷ And these “ signs, shall follow them, that believe ; In my name, “ shall they cast out devils ; they shall speak with new “ tongues ; ¹⁸ they shall take up serpents ; and if they drink “ any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them ; they shall lay “ hands on the sick, and they shall recover.”

CHAPTER XVII.

¹⁹ So, then, after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.

²⁰ And they went forth, and preached everywhere, the Lord, working with *them*, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen.

TABLE OF QUOTATIONS, &c.

ILLUSTRATIVE OF THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. MARK.

CHAPTER I. Verses 2, 3—Malachi, iii. 1, and Isaiah, xl. 3. Verse 41—Leviticus, xiv. 2, 3, 4, &c.
CHAPTER II. Verses 25, 26—I Samuel, xxi. 6.
CHAPTER IV. Verse 12—Isaiah, vi. 9.
CHAPTER VII. Verses 6, 7—Isaiah, xxix. 13. Verse 10—Exodus, xx. 12, and xxi. 17.
CHAPTER IX. Verse 41—Isaiah, lxvi. 21.
CHAPTER X. Verse 4—Deuteronomy, xxiv. 1. Verse 7—Genesis, ii. 24.
CHAPTER XI. Verse 17—Isaiah, lvi. 7, and Jeremiah, vii. 11.
CHAPTER XIII. Verse 10, 11—Psalm, cxviii. 22. Verse 19—Deuteronomy, xxv. 5. Verses 26—Exodus, iii. 6. Verses 29, 30—Deuteronomy, vi. 4, 5. Verse 31—Leviticus, xix. 18. Verse 36—Psalm, ex. 1.
CHAPTER XIII. Verse 11—Daniel, ix. 27. Verse 24—Isaiah, xiii. 9, 10.
CHAPTER XIV. Verse 27—Zechariah, xiii. 7.
CHAPTER XV. Verse 28—Isaiah, liii. 12. Verse 34—Psalm, xxii. 1, 2.

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. LUKE.

NOTE.—This Gospel was written about A. D. 63.

CHAPTER I.

1 *The preface of Luke to his whole Gospel. 5 The conception of John the Baptist, 26 and of Christ. 39 The prophecy of Elisabeth, and of Mary, concerning Christ. 57 The nativity and circumcision of John. 67 The prophecy of Zacharias, both of Christ, 76 and of John.*

1 FORASMUCH, as many, have taken in hand, to set forth, in order, a declaration of those things, which are most surely believed among us, **2** even as they delivered them unto us, which, from the beginning, were eyewitnesses, and ministers of the word ; **3** it seemed good to **ME** also, having had perfect understanding of all things, from the very first, to write unto thee, in order, most excellent Theophilus, **4** that thou mightest know the certainty of those things, wherein, thou hast been instructed.

5 **THERE** was, in the days of Herod, the king of Judea, a certain Priest, named Zacharias, of the course of Abia : and his wife, *was* of the daughters of Aaron, and her name, *was* Elisabeth. **6** And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments, and ordinances of the Lord, blameless. **7** And they had no childe, because, that Elisabeth, was barren, and they both were, *now*, well stricken in years.

8 And it came to pass, that, while he executed the Priest's office before God, in the order of his course, **9** according to the custom of the Priest's office, his lot, was, to burn incense, when he went into the temple of the Lord. **10** And the whole multitude of the people, were praying without at the time of incense.

11 And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of the altar of incense. **12** And

when Zacharias, saw *him*, he was troubled, and fear, fell upon him.

¹³ But, the angel, said unto him, “ Fear not, Zacharias : “ for, thy prayer, is heard ; and thy wife Elisabeth, shall bear “ thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John. ¹⁴ And “ thou shalt have joy, and gladness ; and many, shall rejoice “ at his birth. ¹⁵ For, he shall be great in the sight of the “ Lord, and shall drink neither wine, nor, strong drink ; and “ he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his “ mother’s womb. ¹⁶ And many of the children of Israel, “ shall he turn to the Lord their God. ¹⁷ And he shall go “ before Him, in the spirit, and power of Elias, to turn the “ hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to “ the wisdom of the just ; to make ready a people, prepared “ for the Lord.”

¹⁸ And Zacharias, said unto the angel, “ Whereby, shall I “ know this ? for, I am an old man, and my wife, well “ stricken in years.”

¹⁹ And the angel, answering, said unto him, “ I am Gabriel, “ that stand in the presence of God ; and am sent, to speak “ unto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings. ²⁰ And, “ behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able, to speak, until “ the day, that these things, shall be performed, because, thou “ believest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their “ season.”

²¹ And the people, waited for Zacharias, and marvelled, that he tarried so long in the temple. ²² And when he came out, he could not speak unto them : and they perceived, that he had seen a vision in the temple : for, he beckoned unto them, and remained speechless.

²³ And it came to pass, that, as soon as the days of his ministration, were accomplished, he departed to his own house. ²⁴ And after those days, his wife Elisabeth, conceived, and hid herself, five months, saying, ²⁵ “ Thus, hath the Lord “ dealt with me, in the days, wherein, He looked on *me*, to take “ away my reproach among men.”

²⁶ And, in the sixth month, the angel Gabriel, was sent, from God, unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, ²⁷ to a virgin, espoused to a man, whose name, was Joseph, of the house of David ; and the virgin’s name, *was* Mary.

CHAPTER I.

²⁸ And the angel came in unto her, and said, “ Hail, *thou, that art* highly favoured, the Lord *is* with thee: blessed *art thou among women.*”

²⁹ And when she saw *him*, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind, what manner of salutation this, should be.

³⁰ And the angel said unto her, “ Fear not, Mary: for, “ thou hast found favour with God. ³¹ And, behold, thou “ shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt “ call his name JESUS. ³² He shall be great, and shall be “ called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God, shall “ give unto him the throne of his father David: ³³ and he “ shall reign over the house of Jacob, for ever; and, of his “ kingdom, there shall be no end.”

³⁴ Then, said Mary unto the angel, “ How shall this be, “ seeing, I know not a man?”

³⁵ And the angel answered, and said unto her, “ The Holy “ Ghost, shall come upon thee, and the power of the High-“ est, shall overshadow thee: therefore, also, that holy thing, “ which shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of “ God.—³⁶ And, behold, thy cousin Elisabeth, she hath, also, “ conceived a son, in her old age: and this, is the sixth month “ with her, who was called barren. ³⁷ For, with God, nothing, “ shall be impossible.”

³⁸ And Mary, said, “ Behold, the handmaid of the Lord; “ be it unto me, according to thy word.”

And the angel departed from her.

³⁹ And Mary, arose in those days, and went into the hill country, with haste, into a city of Juda; ⁴⁰ and entered into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabeth.

⁴¹ And it came to pass, that, when Elisabeth, heard the salutation of Mary, the babe, leaped in her womb; and Elisabeth, was filled with the Holy Ghost: ⁴² and she spake out with a loud voice, and said, “ Blessed *art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb.* ⁴³ And whence *is this to me, that the mother of my Lord, should come to me?* ⁴⁴ For, lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation, sounded in mine ears, the babe, leaped in my womb for joy. ⁴⁵ And blessed *is she, that believed: for, there shall be a performance of those things, which were told her from the Lord.*”

⁴⁶ And Mary, said,—

SAINT LUKE.

“ My soul, doth magnify the Lord,
“ ⁴⁷ and my spirit, hath rejoiced in God
“ my Saviour. ⁴⁸ For, He hath regarded
“ the low estate of His handmaiden : for,
“ behold, from henceforth, all generations,
“ shall call me blessed. ⁴⁹ For, He, that
“ is mighty, hath done to me great things;
“ and holy is His name.

⁵⁰ “ And His mercy, is, on them, that
“ fear Him, from generation to generation.
“ ⁵¹ He hath shewed strength with His
“ arm ; He hath scattered the proud in
“ the imagination of their hearts. ⁵² He
“ hath put down the mighty from *their*
“ seats, and exalted them of low degree.
“ ⁵³ He hath filled the hungry with good
“ things ; and the rich He hath sent
“ empty away. ⁵⁴ He hath holpen His
“ servant Israel, in remembrance of *His*
“ mercy ; ⁵⁵ as He spake to our fathers,
“ to Abraham, and to his seed for ever.”

⁵⁶ And Mary, abode with her about three months, and returned to her own house.

⁵⁷ Now, Elisabeth’s full time, came, that she should be delivered ; and she brought forth a son. ⁵⁸ And her neighbours, and her cousins, heard, how the Lord, had shewed great mercy upon her ; and they rejoiced with her.

⁵⁹ And it came to pass, that, on the eighth day, they came, to circumcise the child ; and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

⁶⁰ And his mother, answered, and said, “ Not so ; but, he shall be called John.”

⁶¹ And they said unto her, “ There is none of thy kindred, that is called by this name.”—⁶² And they made signs to his father, how he would have him called.

⁶³ And he asked for a writing table, and wrote, saying, “ His name, is John.”—And they marvelled all.—⁶⁴ And his mouth, was opened immediately, and his tongue, loosed, and he spake, and praised God.

CHAPTER I.

⁶⁵ And fear, came on all, that dwelt round about them : and all these sayings, were noised abroad, throughout all the hill country of Judea. ⁶⁶ And all they, that heard *them*, laid *them* up in their hearts, saying, “What manner of child, shall this be !”

And the hand of the Lord, was with him. ⁶⁷ And his father Zacharias, was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying,—

⁶⁸ “ Blessed be the Lord God of Israel ;
“ for, He hath visited, and redeemed His
“ people, ⁶⁹ and hath raised up an horn of
“ salvation for us, in the house of His ser-
“ vant David; ⁷⁰ as He spake by the mouth
“ of His holy prophets, which have been,
“ since the world, began : ⁷¹ that we should
“ be saved from our enemies, and from
“ the hand of all, that hate us ; ⁷² to per-
“ form the mercy, *promised* to our fathers,
“ and to remember His holy covenant ;
“ ⁷³ the oath, which He sware to our
“ father Abraham, ⁷⁴ that He would grant
“ unto us, that we, being delivered out of
“ the hand of our enemies, might serve
“ Him, without fear, ⁷⁵ in holiness, and
“ righteousness, before Him, all the days
“ of our life.

⁷⁶ “ And thou, child, shalt be called,
“ the prophet of the Highest : for, thou
“ shalt go before the face of the Lord,
“ to prepare his ways ; ⁷⁷ to give know-
“ ledge of salvation unto his people, by
“ the remission of their sins, ⁷⁸ through
“ the tender mercy of our God ; where-
“ by, the day-spring, from on high, hath
“ visited us, ⁷⁹ to give light to them, that
“ sit in darkness, and *in* the shadow of
“ death, to guide our feet into the way
“ of peace.”

⁸⁰ And the child, grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts, till the day of his shewing unto Israel.

CHAPTER II

1 Augustus taxeth all the Roman empire. 6 The nativity of Christ. 8 One angel relateth it to the shepherds: 13 many sing praises to God for it. 21 Christ is circumcised. 22 Mary purified. 28 Simeon and Anna prophesy of Christ: 40 who increaseth in wisdom, 46 questioneth in the temple with the doctors, 51 and is obedient to his parents.

¹ And it came to pass, in those days, that there went out a decree, from Cæsar Augustus, that all the world, should be taxed. ² (And this taxing, was first made, when Cyrenius, was governor of Syria.) ³ And all, went, to be taxed, every one, into his own city. ⁴ And Joseph, also, went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judæa, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem; (because, he was of the house, and lineage of David:) ⁵ to be taxed, with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child.

⁶ And so it was, that, while they were there, the days, were accomplished, that she should be delivered. ⁷ And she brought forth her firstborn son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because, there was no room for them in the inn.

⁸ And there were, in the same country, shepherds, abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. ⁹ And, lo, the angel of the Lord, came upon them, and the glory of the Lord, shone round about them: and they were sore afraid.

¹⁰ And the angel, said unto them, “Fear not: for, behold, I “ bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all “ people. ¹¹ For, unto you, is born, this day, in the city of “ David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. ¹² And this, “ shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe, wrapped “ in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger.”

¹³ And, suddenly, there was, with the angel, a multitude of the heavenly host, praising God, and saying,—

¹⁴ “ Glory to God in the highest, and on “ earth, peace, good will, toward men.”

¹⁵ And, it came to pass, as the angels, were gone away from them, into heaven, the shepherds, said one to another, “ Let us, now, go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing

CHAPTER II.

“ which is come to pass, which the Lord, hath made known
“ unto us.”

¹⁶ And they came with haste, and found Mary, and Joseph, and the babe, lying in a manger. ¹⁷ And when they had seen it, they made known abroad the saying, which was told them concerning this child. ¹⁸ And all they, that heard it, wondered at those things, which were told them by the shepherds. ¹⁹ But, Mary, kept all these things, and pondered them in her heart.

²⁰ And the shepherds returned, glorifying, and praising God, for all the things, that they had heard, and seen, as it was told unto them.

²¹ And when eight days, were accomplished, for the circumcising of the child, his name, was called JESUS, which was so named of the angel, before he was conceived in the womb.

²² And when the days of her purification, according to the law of Moses, were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord ; ²³ (as it is written in the law of the Lord, “ Every male, that openeth the womb, “ shall be called holy to the Lord ;”) ²⁴ and to offer a sacrifice, according to that, which is said in the law of the Lord, “ A pair of turtle-doves, or, two young pigeons.”

²⁵ And, behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name, was Simeon ; and the same man, was just, and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel : and the Holy Ghost, was upon him. ²⁶ And it was revealed unto him, by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord’s Christ. ²⁷ And he came, by the Spirit, into the temple : and when the parents, brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law, ²⁸ then, took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said,—

²⁹ Lord, now, lettest Thou Thy ser-
“ vant depart in peace, according to Thy
“ word : ³⁰ for, mine eyes, have seen Thy
“ salvation, ³¹ which Thou hast prepared,
“ before the face of all people ; ³² a LIGHT,
“ to lighten the Gentiles, and the GLORY
“ of Thy people Israel.”

³³ And Joseph, and his mother, marvelled at those things, which were spoken of him.

³⁴ And Simeon, blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, “ Behold, this *child*, is set, for the fall, and rising “ again, of many in Israel; and for a sign, which shall be “ spoken against; ³⁵ (yea, a sword, shall pierce through thy “ own soul also,) that the thoughts of many hearts, may be “ revealed.”

³⁶ And there was one Anna, a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser: she was of a great age, and had lived with an husband, seven years from her virginity; ³⁷ and she *was* a widow, of about fourscore and four years, which departed not from the temple, but served *God*, with fastings, and prayers, night and day. ³⁸ And she, coming in that instant, gave thanks, likewise, unto the Lord, and spake of him to all them, that looked for redemption, in Jerusalem.

³⁹ And when they had performed all things, according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city Nazareth.

⁴⁰ And the child, grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom: and the grace of God, was upon him.

⁴¹ Now, his parents, went to Jerusalem every year, at the feast of the Passover. ⁴² And when he was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem, after the custom of the feast. ⁴³ And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the child Jesus, tarried behind in Jerusalem; and Joseph, and his mother, knew not *of it*. ⁴⁴ But, they, supposing him to have been in the company, went a day's journey; and they sought him among *their* kinsfolk, and acquaintance. ⁴⁵ And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him.

⁴⁶ And it came to pass, that, after three days, they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions. ⁴⁷ And all that heard him, were astonished at his understanding, and answers.

⁴⁸ And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his mother, said unto him, “ Son, why hast thou thus dealt with “ us? behold, thy father, and I, have sought thee, sorrowing.”

CHAPTER III.

¹⁹ And he said unto them, “ How is it, that ye sought me ?
²⁰ wist ye not, that I must be about my Father’s business ? ”
²⁰ And they understood not the saying, which he spake unto them.

²¹ And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them : but, his mother, kept all these sayings in her heart.

²² And Jesus, increased in wisdom, and stature, and in favour with God, and man.

CHAPTER III.

¹ *The preaching and baptism of John: 15 his testimony of Christ.*
²⁰ *Herod imprisoneth John. 21 Christ baptized, receiveth testimony from heaven. 23 The age, and genealogy of Christ from Joseph upwards.*

¹ Now, in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cæsar, Pontius Pilate, being governor of Judæa, and Herod, being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip, tetrarch of Ituræa, and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias, the tetrarch of Abilene, ² Annas, and Caiaphas, being the High Priests, the word of God, came unto John, the son of Zacharias, in the wilderness.

³ And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance, for the remission of sins ;
⁴ as it is written, in the book of the words of Esaias the prophet, saying, “ The voice of one, crying in the wilderness, “ Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. “
⁵ Every valley, shall be filled, and every mountain, and hill, “ shall be brought low ; and the crooked, shall be made “ straight, and the rough ways, *shall be* made smooth ; ⁶ and “ all flesh, shall see the salvation of God.”

⁷ Then, said he to the multitude, that came forth, to be baptized of him, “ O, generation of vipers, who hath “ warned you, to flee from the wrath to come ? ⁸ Bring forth, “ therefore, fruits worthy of repentance, and begin not, to say “ within yourselves, ‘ We have Abraham to *our* father : ’ “ for, I say unto you, That God, is able, of these stones, to “ raise up children unto Abraham. ⁹ And now, also, the axe, “ is laid unto the root of the trees : every tree, therefore, which

SAINT LUKE.

" bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down, and cast into " the fire."

¹⁰ And the people, asked him, saying, " What shall we do " then ? "

¹¹ He answereth, and saith unto them, " He, that hath two " coats, let him impart to him, that hath none ; and he, that " hath meat, let him do likewise."

¹² Then came, also, Publicans, to be baptized, and said unto him, " Master, what shall we do ? "

¹³ And he said unto them, " Exact no more than that, " which is appointed you."

¹⁴ And the soldiers, likewise, demanded of him, saying, " And what shall we do ? "

And he said unto them, " Do violence to no man, neither, " accuse any falsely ; and be content with your wages."

¹⁵ And as the people, were in expectation, and all men, mused in their hearts of John, whether HE were the Christ, or, not ; ¹⁶ John, answered, saying unto *them* all, " I, indeed, " baptize you with water ; but, one, mightier than I, cometh, " the latchet of whose shoes, I am not worthy, to unloose : he " shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire : " ¹⁷ whose fan, is in his hand, and he will, throughly, purge " his floor, and will gather the WHEAT into his garner ; but, the " CHAFF he will burn with fire unquenchable." — ¹⁸ And many other things, in his exhortation, preached he unto the people.

¹⁹ But, Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by him, for Herodias his brother Philip's wife, and for all the evils, which Herod, had done, ²⁰ added yet this, above all, that he shut up John in prison.

²¹ Now, when all the people, were baptized, it came to pass, that Jesus, also, being baptized, and praying, the heaven, was opened, ²² and the Holy Ghost, descended in a bodily shape, like a dove, upon him, and a voice, came from heaven, which said,—

" Thou art my beloved Son ; in thee, I am
" well pleased."

²³ And Jesus himself, began, to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli, ²⁴ which was the son of Matthat, which was

CHAPTER III.

the son of Levi, which was the son of Melchi, which was the son of Janna, which was the son of Joseph,²⁵ which was the son of Mattathias, which was the son of Amos, which was the son of Naum, which was the son of Esli, which was the son of Nagge,²⁶ which was the son of Maath, which was the son of Mattathias, which was the son of Semei, which was the son of Joseph, which was the son of Juda,²⁷ which was the son of Joanna, which was the son of Rhesa, which was the son of Zorobabel, which was the son of Salathiel, which was the son of Neri,²⁸ which was the son of Melchi, which was the son of Addi, which was the son of Cosam, which was the son of Elmodam, which was the son of Er,²⁹ which was the son of Jose, which was the son of Eliezer, which was the son of Jorim, which was the son of Matthat, which was the son of Levi,³⁰ which was the son of Simeon, which was the son of Juda, which was the son of Joseph, which was the son of Jonan, which was the son of Eliakim,³¹ which was the son of Melea, which was the son of Menan, which was the son of Mattatha, which was the son of Nathan, which was the son of David,³² which was the son of Jesse, which was the son of Obed, which was the son of Booz, which was the son of Salmon, which was the son of Naasson,³³ which was the son of Aminadab, which was the son of Aram, which was the son of Esrom, which was the son of Phares, which was the son of Juda,³⁴ which was the son of Jacob, which was the son of Isaac, which was the son of Abraham, which was the son of Thara, which was the son of Nachor,³⁵ which was the son of Saruch, which was the son of Ragau, which was the son of Phalec, which was the son of Heber, which was the son of Sala,³⁶ which was the son of Cainan, which was the son of Arphaxad, which was the son of Sem, which was the son of Noe, which was the son of Lamech,³⁷ which was the son of Mathusala, which was the son of Enoch, which was the son of Jared, which was the son of Maleleel, which was the son of Cainan,³⁸ which was the son of Enos, which was the son of Seth, which was the son of Adam, which was the son of God.

CHAPTER IV.

1 *The temptation and fasting of Christ.* **13** *He overcometh the devil:*
14 *beginneth to preach.* **16** *The people of Nazareth admire his
 gracious words.* **33** *He cureth one possessed of a devil,* **38** *Peter's
 mother in law,* **40** *and divers other sick persons.* **41** *The devils
 acknowledge Christ, and are reproved for it.* **43** *He preacheth
 through the cities.*

1 And Jesus, being full of the Holy Ghost, returned from Jordan, and was led, by the Spirit, into the wilderness, **2** being, forty days, tempted of the devil. And, in those days, he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungered.

3 And the devil, said unto him, “If thou be the Son of God, command this stone, that it be made bread.”

4 And Jesus, answered him, saying, “It is written, ‘That man, shall not live by bread alone, but, by every word of God.’”

5 And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world, in a moment of time.

6 And the devil, said unto him, “All this power, will I give thee, and the glory of them: for, that, is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will, I give it. **7** If thou, therefore, wilt worship me, all, shall be thine.”

8 And Jesus, answered, and said unto him, “Get thee behind me, Satan: for, it is written, ‘Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and Him only, shalt thou serve.’”

9 And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, “If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence: **10** for, it is written, ‘He shall give His angels charge over thee, to keep thee:’ **11** and, in their hands, they shall bear thee up, lest at any time, thou dash thy foot against a stone.”

12 And Jesus, answering, said unto him, “It is said, ‘Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.’”

13 And when the devil, had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season.

14 And Jesus, returned, in the power of the Spirit, into Galilee: and there went out a fame of him, through all the

CHAPTER IV.

region round about. ¹⁵ And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.

¹⁶ And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue, on the sabbath day, and stood up, for to read. ¹⁷ And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place, where it was written, ¹⁸ “The Spirit of the Lord, *is* upon me, because He hath anointed me, to preach the Gospel to the poor; He hath sent me, to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them, that are bruised, ¹⁹ to preach the acceptable year of the Lord.”—²⁰ And he closed the book, and he gave *it* again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them, that were in the synagogue, were fastened on him. ²¹ And he began, to say unto them, “This day, is this Scripture fulfilled in your ears.”

²² And all, bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words, which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, “Is not this, Joseph’s son?”

²³ And he said unto them, “Ye will, surely, say unto me this proverb, ‘Physician, heal thyself:—whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do, also, here in thy country.’” ²⁴ And he said, “Verily I say unto you, No prophet, is accepted in his own country. ²⁵ But, I tell you of a truth, many widows, were in Israel, in the days of Elias, when the heaven, was shut up, three years and six months, when great famine, was throughout all the land; ²⁶ but, unto none of them, was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta, *a city* of Sidon, unto a woman, *that was* a widow. ²⁷ And many lepers, were in Israel, in the time of Eliseus the prophet; and none of them, was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian.”

²⁸ And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath, ²⁹ and rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill, wheron, their city, was built, that they might cast him down headlong. ³⁰ But, he, passing through the midst of them, went his way, ³¹ and came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the sabbath days. ³² And they were astonished at his doctrine: for, his word, was with power.

³³ And, in the synagogue, there was a man, which had

SAINT LUKE.

a spirit of an unclean devil, and cried out with a loud voice,
³¹ saying, “ Let us alone ; what have we to do with thee,
“ thou Jesus of Nazareth ? art thou come, to destroy us ? I
“ know thee, who thou art ; the Holy One of God.”

³⁵ And Jesus rebuked him, saying, “ Hold thy peace, and
“ come out of him.”

And when the devil had thrown him in the midst, he came
out of him, and hurt him not. ³⁶ And they were all amazed,
and spake among themselves, saying, “ What a word is this !
“ for, with authority, and power, he commandeth the unclean
“ spirits, and they come out.”

³⁷ And the fame of him, went out into every place of
the country round about.

³⁸ And he arose out of the synagogue, and entered
into Simon's house. And Simon's wife's mother, was taken
with a great fever ; and they besought him for her. ³⁹ And
he stood over her, and rebuked the fever ; and it left her :
and, immediately, she arose, and ministered unto them.

⁴⁰ Now, when the sun, was setting, all they, that had
any sick with divers diseases, brought them unto him ; and he
laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them. ⁴¹ And
devils, also, came out of many, crying out, and saying, “ Thou
“ art Christ the Son of God.”—And he, rebuking *them*,
suffered them not, to speak : for, they knew, that he was
Christ.

⁴² And, when it was day, he departed, and went into
a desert place : and the people, sought him, and came unto
him, and stayed him, that he should not depart from them.

⁴³ And he said unto them, “ I must preach the kingdom of
“ God to other cities also : for, therefore am I sent.”

⁴⁴ And he preached in the synagogues of Galilee.

CHAPTER V.

1 Christ teacheth the people out of Peter's ship : 4 in a miraculous taking of fishes, sheweth how he will make him and his partners fishers of men : 12 cleanseth the leper : 16 prayeth in the wilderness : 18 healeth one sick of the palsy : 27 calleth Matthew the Publican : 29 eateth with sinners, as being the physician of souls : 34 foretelleth the fastings and afflictions of the apostles after his ascension : 36 and likeneth fainthearted and weak disciples to old bottles and worn garments.

CHAPTER V.

¹ And it came to pass, that, as the people, pressed upon him, to hear the word of God, he stood by the lake of Gennesaret, ² and saw two ships, standing by the lake: but, the fishermen, were gone out of them, and were washing *their* nets. ³ And he entered into one of the ships, which was Simon's, and prayed him, that he would thrust out a little from the land. And he sat down, and taught the people out of the ship.

⁴ Now, when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, “Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught.”

⁵ And Simon, answering, said unto him, “Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless, at thy word, I will let down the net.”

⁶ And when they had this done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes: and their net, brake. ⁷ And they beckoned unto *their* partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come, and help them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so, that they began to sink. ⁸ When Simon Peter, saw *it*, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, “Depart from me; for, I am a sinful man, O, Lord.” ⁹ For, he was astonished, and all, that were with him, at the draught of the fishes, which they had taken: ¹⁰ and so *was*, also, James, and John, the sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon.

And Jesus, said unto Simon, “Fear not; from henceforth, thou shalt catch men.”

¹¹ And when they had brought their ships to land, they forsook all, and followed him.

¹² And it came to pass, when he was in a certain city, behold, a man full, of leprosy: who, seeing Jesus, fell on *his* face, and besought him, saying, “Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.”

¹³ And he put forth *his* hand, and touched him, saying, “I will: be thou clean.”—And, immediately, the leprosy, departed from him.

¹⁴ And he charged him, to “tell no man: but go, and shew thyself to the Priest, and offer, for thy cleansing, according as Moses, commanded, for a testimony unto them.”—¹⁵ But, so much the more, went there a fame abroad of him: and great multitudes, came together, to hear, and to be healed, by

him, of their infirmities. ¹⁶ And he withdrew himself into the wilderness, and prayed.

¹⁷ And it came to pass, on a certain day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees, and doctors of the law, sitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judæa, and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord, was present, to heal them.

¹⁸ And, behold, men, brought, in a bed, a man, which was taken with a palsy: and they sought means, to bring him in, and to lay him before him. ¹⁹ And when they could not find, by what way they might bring him in, because of the multitude, they went upon the housetop, and let him down through the tiling, with his couch, into the midst before Jesus.

²⁰ And when he saw their faith, he said unto him, "Man, thy sins, are forgiven thee."

²¹ And the Scribes, and the Pharisees, began, to reason, saying, "Who is this, which speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgive sins, but God alone?"

²² But, when Jesus, perceived their thoughts, he, answering, said unto them, "What reason ye in your hearts? ²³ Whether is easier, to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or, to say, "Rise up, and walk? ²⁴ But, that ye may know, that the Son of man, hath power, upon earth, to forgive sins," (he said unto the sick of the palsy,) "I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go unto thine house."

²⁵ And, immediately, he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own house, glorifying God. ²⁶ And they were all amazed, and THEY glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying, "We have seen strange things to day."

²⁷ And, after these things, he went forth, and saw a Publican, named Levi, sitting at the receipt of custom: and he said unto him, "Follow me." — ²⁸ And he left all, rose up, and followed him.

²⁹ And Levi, made him a great feast in his own house: and there was a great company of Publicans, and of others, that sat down with them.

³⁰ But, their Scribes, and Pharisees, murmured against his

CHAPTER VI.

disciples, saying, "Why do ye eat, and drink, with Publicans, and sinners?"

"³¹ And Jesus, answering, said unto them, "They, that are whole, need not a physician; but, they, that are sick.
"³² I came, not to call the righteous, but, sinners to repentance."

"³³ And they said unto him, "Why do the disciples of John, fast often, and make prayers, and likewise, *the disciples* of the Pharisees; but, thine, eat, and drink?"

"³⁴ And he said unto them, "Can ye make the children of the bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom, is with them?
"³⁵ But, the days, will come, when the bridegroom, shall be taken away from them, and then, shall they fast in those days."—³⁶ And he spake, also, a parable unto them: "No man, putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old; if otherwise, then, both the new, maketh a rent, and the piece, that was taken out of the new, agreeth not with the old.
"³⁷ And no man, putteth new wine into old bottles; else, the new wine, will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles, shall perish. ³⁸ But, new wine, must be put into new bottles; and both, are preserved. ³⁹ No man, also, having drunk old wine, straightway desireth new: for, he saith,

"The old, is better."

CHAPTER VI.

1 Christ reproveth the Pharisees' blindness about the observation of the sabbath, by Scripture, reason, and miracle: 13 chooseth twelve apostles: 17 healeth the diseased: 20 preacheth to his disciples before the people of blessings and curses: 27 how we must love our enemies: 46 and joyn the obedience of good works to the hearing of the word: lest in the evil day of temptation we fall like an house built upon the face of the earth, without any foundation.

¹ And it came to pass, on the second sabbath after the first, that he went through the corn fields; and his disciples, plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing *them* in *their* hands.

² And certain of the Pharisees, said unto them, "Why do ye that, which is not lawful, to do on the sabbath days?"

³ And Jesus, answering them, said, "Have ye not read so much as this, what David, did, when himself was an hun-

SAINT LUKE.

" gered, and they, which were with him ; " how he went into " the house of God, and did take, and eat the shewbread, and " gave, also, to them, that were with him ; which it is not " lawful, to eat, but for the Priests alone ? " " And he said unto them, " That the Son of man, is Lord also of the " sabbath."

" And it came to pass, also, on another sabbath, that he entered into the synagogue, and taught : and there was a man, whose right hand, was withered. " And the Scribes, and Pharisees, watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath day ; that they might find an accusation against him. " But, he knew their thoughts, and said to the man, which had the withered hand, " Rise up, and stand forth in the midst." — And he arose, and stood forth.— " Then, said Jesus unto them, " I will ask you one thing ; Is it lawful, on the sabbath " days, to do good, or, to do evil ? to save life, or, to destroy " it ? " " And, looking round about upon them all, he said unto the man, " Stretch forth thy hand."

And he did so : and his hand, was restored whole as the other.— " And they were filled with madness ; and communed, one with another, what they might do to Jesus.

" And it came to pass, in those days, that he went out into a mountain, to pray, and continued all night, in prayer to God. " And when it was day, he called *unto him* his disciples : and, of them, he chose twelve, whom, also, he named apostles ; " Simon, (whom he also named Peter,) and Andrew his brother, James, and John, Philip, and Bartholomew, " Matthew, and Thomas, James the son of Alphæus, and Simon called Zelotes, " and Judas the brother of James, and Judas Iscariot, which, also, was the traitor.

" And he came down with them, and stood in the plain, and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people, out of all Judæa, and Jerusalem, and from the sea coast of Tyre, and Sidon, which came, to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases ; " and they, that were vexed with unclean spirits : and they were healed. " And the whole multitude, sought, to touch him : for, there went virtue out of him, and healed *them* all.

" And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and
134

CHAPTER VI.

said, “ Blessed *be ye* poor: for, yours is the kingdom of “ God.

²¹ “ Blessed *are ye*, that hunger now: for, ye shall be “ filled.

“ Blessed *are ye*, that weep now: for, ye shall laugh.

²² “ Blessed are ye, when men, shall hate you, and when “ they shall separate you *from their company*, and shall re- “ proach *you*, and cast out your name, as evil, for the Son of “ man’s sake. ²³ Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: “ for, behold, your reward, *is* great in heaven: for, in the like “ manner, did their fathers unto the prophets.

²⁴ “ But, woe unto you, that are rich! for, ye have received “ your consolation.

²⁵ “ Woe unto you, that are full! for, ye shall hunger.

“ Woe unto you, that laugh now! for, ye shall mourn, and weep.

²⁶ “ Woe unto you, when all men, shall speak well of you! “ for, so, did their fathers to the false prophets.

²⁷ “ But, I say unto you, which hear, Love your enemies, “ do good to them, which hate you, ²⁸ bless them, that curse “ you, and pray for them, which spitefully use you. ²⁹ And “ unto him, that smiteth thee on the *one* cheek, offer, also, the “ other; and him, that taketh away thy cloke, forbid not, *to* “ take *thy* coat also. ³⁰ Give to every man, that asketh of “ thee; and of him, that taketh away thy goods, ask *them* “ not again. ³¹ And as ye would, that men, should do to “ you, do ye, also, to *THEM* likewise.

³² “ For, if ye love them, which love you, what thank have “ ye? for, sinners, also, love those, that love them. ³³ And if “ ye do good to them, which do good to you, what thank “ have ye? for, sinners, also, do even the same. ³⁴ And if ye “ lend *to them*, of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have “ ye? for, sinners, also, lend *to* sinners, to receive as much “ again. ³⁵ But, love ye your enemies, and do good, and “ lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward, shall be “ great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for, He “ is kind unto the unthankful, and *to* the evil. ³⁶ Be ye, “ therefore, merciful, as your Father, also, is merciful.

³⁷ “ Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, “ and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be “ forgiven: ³⁸ give, and it shall be given unto you; good

“ measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For, with the same measure, that ye mete withal, it shall be measured to you again.”

³⁹ And he spake a parable unto them, “ Can the blind lead the blind? shall they not both fall into the ditch?

⁴⁰ “ The disciple, is not above his master: but, every one, that is perfect, shall be AS his master.

⁴¹ “ And why beholdest thou the MOTE, that is in thy brother’s eye, but, perceivest not the BEAM, that is in thine own eye? ⁴² Either, how canst thou say to thy brother, ‘ Brother, let me pull out the mote, that is in thine eye,’ when thou thyself beholdest not the beam, that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out, first, the beam out of thine own eye, and then, shalt thou see clearly, to pull out the mote, that is in thy brother’s eye.

⁴³ “ For, a good tree, bringeth not forth corrupt fruit; neither, doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. ⁴⁴ For, every tree, is known by his own fruit. For, of thorns, men, do not gather figs, nor, of a bramble bush, gather they grapes.

⁴⁵ A good man, out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that, which is GOOD; and an evil man, out of the evil treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that, which is **EVIL**: for, of the abundance of the heart, his mouth, speaketh.

⁴⁶ “ And why call ye me, ‘ Lord, Lord,’ and do not the things, which I say?

⁴⁷ “ Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my sayings, and DOETH them, I will shew you, to whom he is like: ⁴⁸ he is like a man, which built an house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood, arose, the stream, beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for, it was founded upon a rock.

⁴⁹ “ But, he, that heareth, and doeth NOT, is like a man, that, without a foundation, built an house upon the earth; against which, the stream, did beat vehemently, and, immediately, it fell; and the ruin of that house, was great.”

CHAPTER VII.

CHAPTER VII.

1 Christ findeth a greater faith in the centurion a Gentile, than in any of the Jews : 10 healeth his servant being absent : 11 raiseth from death the widow's son at Nain : 19 answereth John's messengers with the declaration of his miracles : 24 testifieth to the people what opinion he held of John : 30 inveigheth against the Jews, who with neither the manners of John nor of Jesus could be won : 36 and sheweth by occasion of Mary Magdalene, how he is a friend to sinners, not to maintain them in sins, but to forgive them their sins, upon their faith and repentance.

¹ Now, when he had ended all his sayings, in the audience of the people, he entered into Capernaum.

² And a certain centurion's servant, who was dear unto him, was sick, and ready to die. ³ And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him, that he would come, and heal his servant.—⁴ And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying, “ That he was worthy, for whom he should do this : ⁵ for, he “ loveth our nation, and he hath built us a synagogue.”

⁶ Then Jesus, went with them.

And when he was, now, not far from the house, the centurion, sent friends to him, saying unto him, “ Lord, trouble “ not thyself : for, I am not worthy, that thou shouldest enter “ under my roof : ⁷ wherefore, neither thought I myself wor-“ thy, to come unto thee : but, say in a word, and my servant, “ shall be healed. ⁸ For, I, also, am a man set under autho-“ rity, having under me soldiers, and I say unto one, Go, “ and he goeth ; and to another, Come, and he cometh ; “ and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.”

⁹ When Jesus, heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people, that followed him, “ I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, “ not in Israel.”

¹⁰ And they, that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole, that had been sick.

¹¹ And it came to pass, the day after, that he went into a city called Nain ; and many of his disciples, went with him, and much people. ¹² Now, when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow : and much people of the city, was with her. ¹³ And when the Lord, saw

SAINT LUKE.

her, he had compassion on her; and said unto her, “ Weep not.” ¹⁴ And he came, and touched the bier: and they, that bare him, stood still. And he said, “ Young man, I say unto thee, Arise.”

¹⁵ And he, that was dead, sat up, and began, to speak. And he delivered him to his mother. ¹⁶ And there came a fear on all: and they glorified God, saying, “ That a great prophet, “ is risen up among us;” and, “ That God, hath visited “ His people.” ¹⁷ And this rumour of him, went forth throughout all Judæa, and throughout all the region round about.

¹⁸ And the disciples of John, shewed him of all these things.

¹⁹ And John, calling unto him two of his disciples, sent them to Jesus, saying, “ Art thou he, that should come? “ or, look we for another?”

²⁰ When the men, were coine unto him, they said, “ John Baptist, hath sent us unto thee, saying, ‘ Art thou he, “ ‘ that should come? or, look we for another?’ ”

²¹ And, in the same hour, he cured many of their infirmities, and plagues, and of evil spirits; and unto many, that were blind, he gave sight.

²² Then Jesus, answering, said unto them, “ Go your way, “ and tell John, what things ye have seen, and heard; how, “ that the blind, see, the lame, walk, the lepers, are cleansed, “ the deaf, hear, the dead, are raised, to the poor, the Gospel, “ is preached. ²³ And blessed is he, whosoever shall not be “ offended in me.”

²⁴ And when the messengers of John, were departed, he began, to speak unto the people concerning John, “ What “ went ye out into the wilderness for to see? A reed, shaken “ with the wind? ²⁵ But, what went ye out for to see? A “ man, clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they, which are gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately, are in kings’ courts. “ ²⁶ But, what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I “ say unto you, and much MORE than a prophet. ²⁷ This, “ is he, of whom it is written, ‘ Behold, I send my messenger, “ ‘ before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.’ “ ²⁸ For, I say unto you, Among those, that are born of women, “ there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist: but “ he, that is least in the kingdom of God, is greater than he.”

CHAPTER VII.

²⁹ And all the people, that heard *him*, and the Publicans, justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John.
³⁰ But, the Pharisees, and Lawyers, rejected the counsel of God against themselves, being not baptized of him.

³¹ And the Lord, said, "Whereunto, then, shall I liken the men of this generation ? and to what, are they like ?" ³² They are like unto children, sitting in the marketplace, and calling one to another, and saying, 'We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced ; we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept.' ³³ For, John the Baptist, came, neither eating bread, nor, drinking wine ; and ye say, 'He hath a devil.' ³⁴ The Son of man, is come, eating, and drinking ; and ye say, 'Behold a gluttonous man, and a winebibber, a friend of Publicans, and sinners !' ³⁵ But, wisdom, is justified of all her children."

³⁶ And one of the Pharisees, desired him, that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat.

³⁷ And, behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew, that *Jesus*, sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster box of ointment, ³⁸ and stood at his feet behind *him*, weeping, and began, to wash his feet, with tears, and did wipe *them* with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed *them* with the ointment.

³⁹ Now, when the Pharisee, which had bidden him, saw *it*, he spake within himself, saying, "This man, if he were a prophet, would have known, who, and what manner of woman, *this, is*, that toucheth him : for, she is a sinner."

⁴⁰ And Jesus, answering, said unto him, "Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee."

And he saith, "Master, say on."

⁴¹ " There was a certain creditor, which had two debtors : the one, owed five hundred pence, and the other, fifty. ⁴² And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me, therefore, which of them, will love him most ? "

⁴³ Simon, answered, and said, "I suppose, that *he*, to whom he FORGAVE most."

And he said unto him, "Thou hast rightly judged."

⁴⁴ And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, "Seest

SAINT LUKE.

" thou this woman ? I entered into thine house, thou gavest
" me no water for my feet : but, she hath washed my feet,
" with tears, and wiped *them*, with the hairs of her head.
" ⁴⁵ Thou gavest me no kiss : but, this woman, since the
" time I came in, hath not ceased, to kiss my feet. ⁴⁶ My
" head, with oil, thou didst not anoint : but, this woman,
" hath anointed my feet with ointment. ⁴⁷ Wherefore, I say
" unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven ; for, she
" loved much : but, to whom little, is forgiven, *the same*, loveth
" little." — ⁴⁸ And he said unto her, " Thy sins, are forgiven."

⁴⁹ And they, that sat at meat with him, began, to say within
themselves, " Who is this, that forgiveth sins also ? "

⁵⁰ And he said to the woman, " Thy faith, hath saved
" thee ; go in peace."

CHAPTER VIII.

3 Women minister unto Christ of their substance. 4 Christ, after he had preached from place to place, attended with his apostles, propoundeth the parable of the sower; 16 and of the candle: 21 declarereth who are his mother, and brethren: 22 rebuketh the winds: 26 casteth the legion of devils out of the man into the herd of swine: 31 is rejected of the Gadarenes: 43 healeth the woman of her bloody issue, 49 and raiseth from death Jairus' daughter.

¹ And it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout every city, and village, preaching, and shewing, the glad tidings of the kingdom of God : and the twelve, were with him, ² and certain women, which had been healed of evil spirits, and infirmitiess, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom, went seven devils, ³ and Joanna the wife of Chuza, Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministered unto him of their substance.

⁴ And when much people, were gathered together, and were come to him, out of every city, he spake by a parable :
⁵ " A sower, went out, to sow his seed : and, as he sowed,
" some, fell by the way side ; and it was trodden down, and
" the fowls of the air, devoured it. ⁶ And some, fell upon a
" rock ; and, as soon as it was sprung up, it withered away,
" because, it lacked moisture. ⁷ And some, fell among thorns ;
" and the thorns, sprang up with it, and choked it. ⁸ And
" other, fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit an

CHAPTER VIII.

" hundred fold." And when he had said these things, he cried,
" He, that hath ears to hear, let him hear."

⁹ And his disciples asked him, saying, " What might
this parable be ? "

¹⁰ And he said, " Unto you it is given, to know the mys-
teries of the kingdom of God : but, to others, in parables ;
that, seeing, they might not see, and, hearing, they might
not understand. ¹¹ Now, the parable, is this : The seed, is
the word of God. ¹² Those, by the way side, are they, that
hear ; then, cometh the devil, and taketh away the word out
of their hearts, lest they should believe, and be saved.
¹³ They, on the rock, are *they*, which, when they hear,
receive the word with joy ; and these, have no root, which,
for a while, believe, and, in time of temptation, fall away.
¹⁴ And that, which fell among thorns, are they, which,
when they have heard, go forth, and are choked with cares,
and riches, and pleasures of *this* life, and bring no fruit to
perfection. ¹⁵ But, that, on the good ground, are they,
which, in an honest, and good heart, having heard the word,
keep *it*, and bring forth fruit with patience.

¹⁶ " No man, when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it
with a vessel, or, putteth *it* under a bed ; but, setteth *it* on
a candlestick, that they, which enter in, may see the light.
¹⁷ For, nothing, is secret, that shall not be made manifest ;
neither, *any thing* hid, that shall not be known, and come
abroad. ¹⁸ Take heed, therefore, how ye hear : for, who-
soever hath, to him shall be given ; and whosoever hath not,
from him shall be taken even that, which he seemeth to have."

¹⁹ Then, came to him *his* mother, and his brethren, and
could not come at him, for the press. ²⁰ And it was told him
by *certain*, which said, " Thy mother, and thy brethren, stand
without, desiring, to see thee."

²¹ And he answered, and said unto them, " My mother, and
my brethren, are these, which hear the word of God, and do it."

²² Now, it came to pass, on a certain day, that he went
into a ship with his disciples : and he said unto them, " Let
us go over unto the other side of the lake."

And they launched forth. ²³ But, as they sailed, he fell
asleep : and there came down a storm of wind on the lake ;
and they were filled with water, and were in jeopardy.

SAINT LUKE.

²⁴ And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, " Master, master, we perish."

Then, he arose, and rebuked the wind, and the raging of the water : and they ceased, and there was a calm.

²⁵ And he said unto them, " Where is your faith ? "

And they, being afraid, wondered, saying one to another, " What manner of man, is this ! for, he commandeth even " the winds, and water, and they OBEY him."

²⁶ And they arrived at the country of the Gadarenes, which is over against Galilee. ²⁷ And when he went forth to land, there met him, out of the city, a certain man, which had devils long time, and ware no clothes, neither, abode in *any* house, but in the tombs. ²⁸ When he saw Jesus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and, with a loud voice, said, " What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God " most high ? I beseech thee, torment me not."—²⁹ (For, he had commanded the unclean spirit, to come out of the man. For, oftentimes, it had caught him : and he was kept bound with chains, and in fetters ; and he brake the bands, and was driven, of the devil, into the wilderness.)

³⁰ And Jesus, asked him, saying, " What is thy " name ? "

And he said, " Legion :" (because, many devils, were entered into him.)

³¹ And they besought him, that he would not command them, to go out into the deep. ³² And there was, there, an herd of many swine, feeding on the mountain : and they besought him, that he would suffer them, to enter into them. And he suffered them. ³³ Then, went the devils out of the man, and entered into the swine : and the herd, ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked.

³⁴ When they, that fed *them*, saw what was done, they fled, and went, and told *it* in the city, and in the country.

³⁵ Then, they went out, to see what was done ; and came to Jesus, and found the man, out of whom, the devils, were departed, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right mind : and they were afraid. ³⁶ They, also, which saw *it*, told them, by what means, he, that was possessed of the devils, was healed. ³⁷ Then, the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes round about, besought him, to depart from them ;

CHAPTER VIII.

for, they were taken with great fear: and he went up into the ship, and returned back again.

³⁸ Now, the man, out of whom, the devils, were departed, besought him, that he might be with him: but, Jesus, sent him away, saying, ³⁹ "Return to thine own house, and shew, how great things, God, hath done unto thee."

And he went his way, and published, throughout the whole city, how great things, Jesus, had done unto him.

⁴⁰ And it came to pass, that, when Jesus, was returned, the people, *gladly* received him: for, they were all waiting for him. ⁴¹ And, behold, there came a man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue: and he fell down at Jesus' feet, and besought him, that he would come into his house: ⁴² for, he had one only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay a dying.

But, as he went, the people, thronged him. ⁴³ And a woman, having an issue of blood, twelve years, which had spent all her living upon physicians, neither, could be healed of any, ⁴⁴ came behind him, and touched the border of his garment: and, immediately, her issue of blood, stanch'd.

⁴⁵ And Jesus, said, "Who touched me?"

When all, denied, Peter, and they, that were with him, said, "Master, the multitude, throng thee, and press *thee*, and sayest thou, 'Who touched me?'"

⁴⁶ And Jesus, said, "Somebody, hath touched me: for, I perceive, that virtue, is gone out of me."

⁴⁷ And when the woman, saw, that she was not hid, she came, trembling; and, falling down before him, she declared unto him, before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately.

⁴⁸ And he said unto her, "Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith, hath made thee whole; go in peace."

⁴⁹ While he yet spake, there cometh one, from the ruler of the synagogue's *house*, saying to him, "Thy daughter, is dead; trouble not the Master."

⁵⁰ But, when Jesus, heard *it*, he answered him, saying, "Fear not: believe only, and she shall be made whole."

⁵¹ And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father, and the mother, of the maiden. ⁵² And all, wept, and bewailed her.

But, he said, " Weep not ; she is not dead, but, sleepeth." —⁵³ And they laughed him to scorn, knowing, that she was dead.—⁵⁴ And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, " Maid, arise."

⁵⁵ And her spirit, came again, and she arose straitway : and he commanded, to give her meat. ⁵⁶ And her parents, were astonished : but, he charged them, that they should tell no man, what was done.

CHAPTER IX.

*1 Christ sendeth his apostles to work miracles, and to preach.
7 Herod desired to see Christ. 17 Christ feedeth five thousand :
18 enquireth what opinion the world had of him : foretelleth his
passion : 23 proposeth to all the pattern of his patience. 28 The
transfiguration. 31 He healeth the lunatic : 43 again forewarneth
his disciples of his passion : 46 commendeth humility : 51 biddeth
them to shew mildness towards all, without desire of revenge.
57 Divers would follow him, but upon conditions.*

¹ Then, he called his twelve disciples together, and gave them power, and authority, over all devils, and to cure diseases. ² And he sent them, to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick.

³ And he said unto them, " Take nothing for your journey, neither, staves, nor, scrip, neither, bread, neither, money ; " neither, have two coats apiece. ⁴ And whatsoever house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart. ⁵ And whosoever will not receive you, when ye go out of that city, shake off the very dust from your feet, for a testimony against them."

⁶ And they departed, and went through the towns, preaching the Gospel, and healing every where.

⁷ Now, Herod the tetrarch, heard of all, that was done by him : and he was perplexed, because, that it was said of some, that John, was risen from the dead ; ⁸ and of some, that Elias, had appeared ; and of others, that one of the old prophets, was risen again. ⁹ And Herod, said, " John have I beheaded : but, who is this, of whom, I hear such things ? " And he desired, to see him.

¹⁰ And the apostles, when they were returned, told

CHAPTER IX.

him all, that they had done. And he took them, and went aside, privately, into a desert place belonging to the city, called Bethsaida. ¹¹ And the people, when they knew it, followed him: and he received them, and spake unto them of the kingdom of God, and healed them, that had need of healing.

¹² And, when the day began to wear away, then came the twelve, and said unto him, "Send the multitude away, that they may go into the towns, and country round about, and "lodge, and get victuals: for, we are here in a desert place."

¹³ But, he said unto them, "Give ye them to eat."

And they said, "We have no more, but five loaves, and "two fishes; except we should go, and buy meat for all this "people." ¹⁴ (For, they were about five thousand men.)

And he said to his disciples, "Make them sit down, by "fifties, in a company." ¹⁵ And they did so, and made them all sit down.

¹⁶ Then, he took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and, looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and brake, and gave to the disciples, to set before the multitude. ¹⁷ And they did eat, and were all filled: and there was taken up of fragments, that remained to them, twelve baskets.

¹⁸ And, it came to pass, as he was alone, praying, his disciples, were with him: and he asked them, saying, "Whom "say the people, that I am?"

¹⁹ They, answering, said, "John the Baptist; but, some, "say, Elias; and others, say, that one of the old prophets, is "risen again."

²⁰ He said unto them, "But, whom say ye, that I am?"

Peter, answering, said, "The Christ of God."

²¹ And he straitly charged them, and commanded *them*, to tell no man that thing; ²² saying, "The Son of man, must "suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and Chief "Priests, and Scribes, and be slain, and be raised the third "day." ²³ And he said to *them* all, "If any *man* will come "after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, "and follow me. ²⁴ For, whosoever will save his life, shall "lose it: but, whosoever will lose his life, for my sake, the "same, shall save it. ²⁵ For, what is a man advantaged, if he "gain the whole world, and lose himself, or, be cast away? " ²⁶ For, whosoever shall be ashamed of ME, and of my WORDS,

SAINT LUKE.

“ of him, shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall
“ come, in his own glory, and *in his* Father’s, and of the holy
“ angels. ⁷ But, I tell you of a truth, there be some, stand-
“ ing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the
“ kingdom of God.”

⁸ And, it came to pass, about an eight days after these sayings, he took Peter, and John, and James, and went up into a mountain, to pray. ⁹ And, as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance, was altered, and his raiment, *was* white, *and* glistering. ¹⁰ And, behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses, and Elias: ¹¹ who appeared, in glory, and spake of his decease, which he should accomplish at Jerusalem.

¹² But, Peter, and they, that were with him, were heavy with sleep: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men, that stood with him. ¹³ And, it came to pass, as they departed from him, Peter, said unto Jesus, “ Master, it is good, for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles; one, for thee, and one, for Moses, and one, for Elias:” not knowing what he said. ¹⁴ While he thus spake, there came a cloud, and overshadowed them: and they feared, as they entered into the cloud. ¹⁵ And there came a voice, out of the cloud, saying,—

“ This, is my beloved Son: hear him.”

¹⁶ And when the voice, was past, Jesus, was found alone. And they kept *it* close, and told no man, in those days, any of those things, which they had seen.

¹⁷ And it came to pass, that, on the next day, when they were come down from the hill, much people, met him. ¹⁸ And, behold, a man of the company, cried out, saying, “ Master, I beseech thee, look upon my son: for, he is mine only child. ¹⁹ And, lo, a spirit, taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out; and it teareth him, that he foameth again, and, bruising him hardly, departeth from him. ²⁰ And I besought thy disciples, to cast him out; and they could not.”

²¹ And Jesus, answering, said, “ O, faithless, and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you, and suffer you? Bring thy son hither.”

²² And as he was yet a coming, the devil, threw him down,

CHAPTER IX.

and tare *him*. And Jesus, rebuked the unclean spirit, and healed the child, and delivered him again to his father.
⁴³ And they were all amazed, at the mighty power of God.

But, while they wondered, every one, at all things, which Jesus, did, he said unto his disciples, ⁴⁴ “ Let these sayings sink down into your ears : for, the Son of man, shall be delivered into the hands of men.”

⁴⁵ But, they understood not this saying, and it was hid from them, that they perceived it not : and they feared, to ask him of that saying.

⁴⁶ Then, there arose a reasoning among them, which of them, should be greatest. ⁴⁷ And Jesus, perceiving the thought of their heart, took a child, and set him by him, ⁴⁸ and said unto them, “ Whosoever shall receive this child, “ in my name, receiveth ME : and whosoever shall receive me, “ receiveth Him, that sent me : for, he, that is least among “ you all, the same, shall be great.”

⁴⁹ And John, answercd, and said, “ Master, we saw “ one, casting out devils in thy name ; and we forbade him, “ because, he followeth not with us.”

⁵⁰ And Jesus, said unto him, “ Forbid *him* not : for, he, “ that is not against us, is for us.”

⁵¹ And, it came to pass, when the time, was come, that he should be received up, he steadfastly set his face, to go to Jerusalem, ⁵² and sent messengers before his face : and they went, and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him. ⁵³ And they did not receive him, because, his face, was as though he would go to Jerusalem.

⁵⁴ And when his diseiples, James, and John, saw *this*, they said, “ Lord, wilt thou, that we command fire, to come down “ from heaven, and consume them, even as Elias, did ?”

⁵⁵ But, he turned, and rebuked them, and said, “ Ye know “ not, what manner of spirit ye are of. ⁵⁶ For, the Son of “ man, is not come, to destroy men’s lives, but, to save *them*.” — And they went to another village. ⁵⁷ And it came to pass, that, as they went in the way, a certain *man*, said unto him, “ Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.”

⁵⁸ And Jesus, said unto him, “ Foxes, have holes, and birds “ of the air, *have* nests ; but, the Son of man, hath not where to “ lay *his* head.” — ⁵⁹ And he said unto another, “ Follow me.”

But, he said, "Lord, suffer me, first, to go, and bury my father."

" Jesus, said unto him, " Let the dead bury their dead : but, go thou, and preach the kingdom of God."

" And another, also, said, " Lord, I will follow thee ; but, let me, first, go bid them farewell, which are at home at my house."

" And Jesus, said unto him, " No man, having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God."

CHAPTER X.

1 Christ sendeth out at once seventy disciples to work miracles, and to preach : 17 admonisheth them to be humble, and wherein to rejoice : 21 thanketh his Father for His grace : 23 magnifieth the happy estate of his Church : 25 teacheth the Lawyer how to attain eternal life, and to take every one for his neighbour that needeth his mercy : 41 reprehendeth Martha, and commendeth Mary her sister.

¹ After these things, the Lord, appointed other seventy also, and sent them, two and two, before his face, into every city, and place, whither he himself would come.

² Therefore, said he unto them, " The harvest, truly, is great, but, the labourers, are few : pray ye, therefore, the Lord of the harvest, that He would send forth labourers into His harvest. ³ Go your ways : behold, I send you forth, as lambs among wolves. ⁴ Carry neither purse, nor, scrip, nor, shoes : and salute no man by the way. ⁵ And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, ' Peace be to this house.' ⁶ And if the son of peace be there, your peace, shall rest upon it : if not, it shall turn to you again. ⁷ And in the same house remain, eating, and drinking, such things as they give : for, the labourer, is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house. ⁸ And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you : ⁹ and heal the sick, that are therein, and say unto them, ' The kingdom of God, is come nigh unto you.' ¹⁰ But, into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say, ¹¹ ' Even the very dust of your city, which cleaveth on us, we do

CHAPTER X.

“ ‘ wipe off against you : notwithstanding, be ye sure of this,
“ ‘ that the kingdom of God, is come nigh unto you.’ ”¹² But,
“ I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable, in that day,
“ for Sodom, than for that city.

”¹³ “ Woe unto thee, Chorazin ! woe unto thee, Bethsaida !
“ for, if the mighty works had been done in Tyre, and Sidon,
“ which have been done in you, they had, a great while ago,
“ repented, sitting in sackcloth, and ashes. ”¹⁴ But, it shall be
“ more tolerable for Tyre, and Sidon, at the judgment, than
“ for you.

”¹⁵ “ And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven,
“ shalt be thrust down to hell.

”¹⁶ “ He, that heareth **you**, heareth **ME**; and he, that de-
“ spiseth you, despiseth me ; and he, that despiseth me, de-
“ spiseth **Him**, that sent me.”

”¹⁷ And the seventy, returned again, with joy, saying,
“ Lord, even the devils, are subject unto us, through thy
“ name.”

”¹⁸ And he said unto them, “ I beheld Satan, as lightning,
“ fall from heaven. ”¹⁹ Behold, I give unto you power, to
“ tread on serpents, and scorpions, and over all the power of
“ the enemy : and nothing, shall, by any means, hurt you.
”²⁰ Notwithstanding, in this rejoice not, that the spirits, are
“ subject unto you ; but, rather rejoice, because, your names,
“ are written in heaven.”

”²¹ In that hour, Jesus, rejoiced in spirit, and said, “ I thank
“ Thee, O, Father, Lord of heaven, and earth, that Thou hast
“ hid these things from the wise, and prudent, and hast re-
“ vealed them unto babes : even so, Father ; for, so, it seem-
“ ed good in Thy sight. ”²² All things, are delivered to me of
“ my Father : and no man, knoweth, who the Son, is, but, the
“ Father ; and who the Father, is, but, the Son, and **he**, to
“ whom, the Son, will reveal **Him**.”

”²³ And he turned him unto *his* disciples, and said privately,
“ Blessed *are* the eyes, which see the things, that ye see :
”²⁴ for, I tell you, that many prophets, and kings, have de-
“ sired, to see those things, which ye see, and have not seen
“ *them* ; and to hear those things, which ye hear, and have
“ not heard *them*.”

”²⁵ And, behold, a certain Lawyer, stood up, and tempt-

ed him, saying, " Master, what shall I do, to inherit etc
" life ? "

" He said unto him, " What is written in the law ?
" readest thou ? "

" And he, answering said, " Thou shalt love the Lord
" God, with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and wit
" thy strength, and with all thy mind ; and thy neighbour
" thyself."

" And he said unto him, " Thou hast answered right :
" do, and thou shalt live."

" But, he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, " "
" who is my neighbour ? "

" And Jesus, answering said, " A certain man went
" from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, w
" stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and de
" ed, leaving him half dead. " And, by chance, there
" down a certain Priest that way : and when he saw him
" passed by on the other side. " And, likewise, a Le
" when he was at the place, came, and looked on him,
" passed by on the other side. " But, a certain Samar
" as he journeyed, came where he was : and, when he
" him, he had compassion on him, " and went to him.
" bound up his wounds, pouring in oil, and wine, and set
" on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took
" of him. " And, on the morrow, when he departed, he
" out two pence, and gave them to the host, and said
" him, ' Take care of him ; and whatsoever thou spe
" more, when I come again, I will repay thee.' — " W
" now, of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto
" that fell among the thieves ? "

" And he said, " He, that shewed mercy on him."

Then, said Jesus unto him, " Go, and do thou likewise.

" Now, it came to pass, as they went, that he
tered into a certain village : and a certain woman, na
Martha, received him into her house. " And she had a si
called Mary, which, also, sat at Jesus' feet, and heard his w
" But, Martha, was cumbered about much serving, and c
to him, and said, " Lord, dost thou not care, that my si
" hath left me, to serve alone ? bid her, therefore, that she
" me."

CHAPTER XI.

" And Jesus, answered, and said unto her, " Martha,
" Martha, thou art careful, and troubled about many things :
" ¹² but one thing, is needful : and Mary, hath chosen that
" good part, which shall not be taken away from her."

CHAPTER XI.

1 Christ teacheth to pray, and that instantly : 11 assuring that God so will give us good things. 14 He, casting out a dumb devil, rebuketh the blasphemous Pharisees : 28 and sheweth who are blessed : 29 preacheth to the people, 37 and reprehendeth the outward shew of holiness in the Pharisees, Scribes, and Lawyers.

¹ And it came to pass, that, as he was praying, in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples, said unto him, " Lord, teach us, to pray, as John, also, taught HIS " disciples."

² And he said unto them, " When ye pray, say,—

" Our Father, which art in heaven,
" Hallowed be Thy name. Thy king-
" dom come. Thy will be done, AS, in
" heaven, so, in earth. ³ Give us, day
" by day, our daily bread. ⁴ And forgive
" us our sins ; for, we, also, forgive every
" one, that is indebted to us. And lead
" us not into temptation ; but, DELIVER
" us from evil."

⁵ And he said unto them, " Which of you, shall have
" a friend, and shall go unto him, at midnight, and say unto
" him, ' Friend, lend me three loaves ; ⁶ for, a friend of mine,
" in his journey, is come to me, and I have nothing, to set
" before him ? ' ⁷ And he, from within, shall answer, and
" say, ' Trouble me not : the door, is now shut, and my
" children, are with me in bed ; I cannot rise, and give thee.'
" ⁸ I say unto you, Though he will not rise, and give him,
" because, he is his friend, yet, because of his IMPORTUNITY,
" he will rise, and give him as many as he needeth. ⁹ And
" I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you ; seek, and
" ye shall find ; knock, and it shall be opened unto you.

“ 10 For, every one, that asketh, receiveth ; and he, that seeketh, findeth : and to him, that knocketh, it shall be opened.

“ 11 “ If a son shall ask bread of any of you, that is a father, will he give him a stone ? or, if he ask a fish, will he, for a fish, give him a serpent ? 12 or, if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion ? 13 If ye then, being evil, know, how to give good gifts unto your children : how much more, shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them, that ask Him ? ”

“ 14 And he was casting out a devil, and it was dumb. And, it came to pass, when the devil was gone out, the dumb spake ; and the people, wondered. 15 But, some of them, said, “ He casteth out devils through Beelzebub, the chief of the devils.” 16 And others, tempting him, sought of him a sign from heaven.

“ 17 But, he, knowing their thoughts, said unto them, “ Every kingdom, divided against itself, is brought to desolation ; and a house, divided against a house, falleth. 18 If Satan, also, be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand ? because, ye say, that I cast out devils, through Beelzebub. 19 And if I, by Beelzebub, cast out devils, by whom, do your sons cast them out ? therefore, shall they be your judges. 20 But, if I, with the finger of God, cast out devils, no doubt, the kingdom of God, is come upon you.

“ 21 “ When a strong man armed, keepeth his palace, his goods, are in peace : 22 but, when a stronger than he, shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour, wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils. 23 He, that is not with me, is against me : and he, that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

“ 24 “ When the unclean spirit, is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest ; and, finding none, he saith, ‘ I will return unto my house, whence I came out.’ 25 And when he cometh, he findeth it swept, and garnished. 26 Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other spirits, more wicked than himself ; and they enter in, and dwell there : and the last state of that man, is worse than the first.”

“ 27 And it came to pass, as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company, lifted up her voice, and said unto

CHAPTER XI.

him, “ Blessed *is* the womb, that bare thee, and the paps,
“ which thou hast sucked.”

“²⁸ But, he said, “ Yea rather, blessed *are* they, that hear
“ the word of God, and keep it.”

“²⁹ And when the people, were gathered thick together, he
began, to say, “ This, is an evil generation : they seek a sign ;
“ and there shall no sign be given it, but, the sign¹ of Jonas
“ the prophet. ³⁰ For, as Jonas, was a sign unto the Nine-
“ vites, so, shall, also, the Son of man be to this generation.

“³¹ “ The queen of the south, shall rise up in the judgment
“ with the men of this generation, and condemn them : for,
“ she came, from the utmost parts of the earth, to hear the
“ wisdom of Solomon ; and, behold, a greater than Solomon,
“ *is* here.

“³² “ The men of Nineve, shall rise up in the judgment with
“ this generation, and shall condemn it : for, they repented, at
“ the preaching of Jonas ; and, behold, a greater than Jonas,
“ *is* here.

“³³ “ No man, when he hath lighted a candle, putteth *it* in
“ a secret place, neither, under a bushel, but, on a candlestick,
“ that they, which come in, may see the light. ³⁴ The light
“ of the body, is the eye : therefore, when thine eye, is single,
“ thy whole body, also, is full of light ; but, when *thine eye*,
“ is evil, thy body, also, *is* full of darkness. ³⁵ Take heed,
“ therefore, that the light, which is in thee, be not darkness.
“³⁶ If thy whole body, therefore, *be* full of light, having no
“ part dark, the whole, shall be full of light, as when the
“ bright shining of a candle, doth give thee light.”

“³⁷ And, as he spake, a certain Pharisee, besought him,
to dine with him : and he went in, and sat down to meat.
“³⁸ And when the Pharisee, saw *it*, he marvelled, that he had
not, first, washed before dinner.

“³⁹ And the Lord, said unto him, “ Now, do ye Pharisees
“ make clean the outside of the cup, and the platter ; but,
“ your inward part, is full of ravening, and wickedness.
“⁴⁰ Ye fools, did not He, that made that, which is *WITHOUT*,
“ make that, which is *WITHIN* also ? ⁴¹ But, rather give alms of
“ such things as ye have ; and, behold, all things, are clean
“ unto you.

“⁴² “ But, woe unto you, Pharisees ! for, ye tithe mint, and
“ rue, and all manner of herbs, and pass over judgment, and

SAINT LUKE.

“ the love of God : these, ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. ⁴³ Woe unto you, Pharisees ! for, “ ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets.

⁴⁴ “ Woe unto you, Scribes, and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for, “ ye are as graves, which appear not, and the men, that walk over them, are not aware of them.”

⁴⁵ Then, answered one of the Lawyers, and said unto him, “ Master, thus saying, thou reprochest us also.”

⁴⁶ And he said, “ Woe unto you also, ye Lawyers ! for, “ ye lade men with burdens, grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens, with one of your fingers.

⁴⁷ “ Woe unto you ! for, ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers, killed them. ⁴⁸ Truly, ye bear witness, that ye allow the deeds of your fathers : for, they, indeed, killed them, and ye build their sepulchres. ⁴⁹ Therefore, also, said the wisdom of God, ‘ I will send them prophets, and apostles, and some of them they shall slay, and persecute : ⁵⁰ that the blood of all the prophets, which was shed, from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation ; ⁵¹ from the blood of Abel, unto the blood of Zacharias, which perished between the altar, and the temple : verily I say unto you, It shall be required of this generation.

⁵² “ Woe unto you, Lawyers ! for, ye have taken away the key of knowledge : ye entered not in yourselves, and them, that were entering in, ye hindered.”

⁵³ And as he said these things unto them, the Scribes, and the Pharisees, began, to urge him vehemently, and to provoke him, to speak of many things : ⁵⁴ laying wait for him, and seeking, to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

CHAPTER XII.

¹ Christ preacheth to his disciples to avoid hypocrisy, and fearfulness in publishing his doctrine : ¹⁹ warmeth the people to beware of covetousness, by the parable of the rich man who set up greater barns. ²² We must not be over careful of earthly things, ³¹ but seek the kingdom of God, ³³ give alms, ³⁶ be ready at a knock to

CHAPTER XII.

open to our Lord whosoever he cometh. 41 Christ's ministers are to see to their charge, 49 and look for persecution. 54 The people must take this time of grace, 58 because it is a fearful thing to die without reconciliation.

¹ In the mean time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, insomuch, that they trode one upon another, he began, to say unto his disciples, first of all, “ Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. ² For, there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be known. ³ Therefore, whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness, shall be heard in the light; and that, which ye have spoken in the ear, in closets, shall be proclaimed upon the housetops.

⁴ “ And I say unto you, my friends, Be not afraid of them, that kill the body, and, after that, have no more, that they can do. ⁵ But, I will forewarn you, whom ye shall fear: Fear Him, which, after He hath killed, hath power, to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear Him.

⁶ “ Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings, and not one of THEM, is forgotten before God? ⁷ But, even the very hairs of your head, are all numbered. Fear not therefore: ye are of more value than many sparrows.

⁸ “ Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall CONFESS ME, before men, HIM shall the Son of man ALSO confess, before the angels of God; ⁹ but, he, that DENIETH me, before men, SHALL BE DENIED, before the angels of God. ¹⁰ And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but, unto him, that blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven.

¹¹ “ And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and unto magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought, how, or what thing, ye shall answer, or, what ye shall say: ¹² for, the Holy Ghost, shall teach you, in the same hour, what ye ought to say.”

¹³ And one of the company, said unto him, “ Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me.”

¹⁴ And he said unto him, “ Man, who made me a judge, or, a divider, over you?” — ¹⁵ And he said unto them, “ Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for, a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things, which he possesseth.”

¹⁴ And he spake a parable unto them, saying, “ The ground of a certain rich man, brought forth plentifully : ¹⁵ and he thought within himself, saying, ‘ What shall I do, because I have no room, where to bestow my fruits ? ’ ¹⁶ And he said, ‘ This will I do : I will pull down my barns, and build greater ; and there will I bestow all my fruits, and my goods. ¹⁷ And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years ; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry.’ ¹⁸ But, God, said unto him, ‘ Thou fool, this night, thy soul, shall be required of thee : then, whose, shall those things be, which thou hast provided ? ’ ¹⁹ So is he, that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.”

²⁰ And he said unto his disciples, “ Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat ; neither, for the body, what ye shall put on. ²¹ The life, is more than meat, and the body, is more than raiment. ²² Consider the ravens : for, they neither sow, nor, reap ; which neither have storehouse, nor, barn ; and God, feedeth them : how much more, are ye better than the fowls ? ²³ And which of you, with taking thought, can add to his stature one cubit ? ²⁴ If ye, then, be not able, to do that thing, which is least, why take ye thought for the rest ? ²⁵ Consider the lilies, how they grow : they toil not, they spin not ; and yet I say unto you, that Solomon, in all his glory, was not arrayed like one of these. ²⁶ If, then, God, so clothe the grass, which is, to day, in the field, and to morrow, is cast into the oven ; how much more will He clothe you, O, ye of little faith ?

²⁷ “ And seek not ye, what ye shall eat, or, what ye shall drink, neither, be ye of doubtful mind. ²⁸ For, all these things, do the nations of the world seek after : and your Father, knoweth, that ye have need of these things. ²⁹ But, rather seek ye the kingdom of God ; and all these things, shall be added unto you. ³⁰ Fear not, little flock ; for, it is your Father’s good pleasure, to give you the kingdom. ³¹ Sell that ye have, and give alms ; provide yourselves bags, which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens, that faileth not, where no thief, approacheth, neither moth, corrupteth. ³² For, where your treasure, is, there will your heart be also. ³³ “ Let your loins be girded about, and your lights burn-

CHAPTER XII.

“ ing ; ³⁶ and ye yourselves like unto men, that wait for their “ lord, when he will return from the wedding ; that when he “ cometh, and knocketh, they may open unto him immediate- “ ly. ³⁷ Blessed *are* those servants, whom the lord, when he “ cometh, shall find watching : verily I say unto you, that he “ shall gird himself, and make **THEM** to sit down to meat, “ and will come forth, and serve **THEM**. ³⁸ And if he shall “ come in the second watch, or, come in the third watch, and “ find **them** so, blessed are those servants. ³⁹ And this know, “ that if the goodman of the house had known, what hour, the “ thief, would come, he would have watched, and not have “ suffered, his house to be broken through. ⁴⁰ Be ye, there- “ fore, ready also : for, the Son of man, cometh at an hour, “ when ye think not.”

“ Then Peter, said unto him, “ Lord, speakest thou this “ parable unto us, or, even to all ?”

“ And the Lord, said, “ Who, then, is that faithful, and wise “ steward, whom *his* lord, shall make ruler over his house- “ hold, to give **them** *their* portion of meat in due season ? “ ⁴³ Blessed is that servant, whom his lord, when he cometh, “ shall find so doing. ⁴⁴ Of a truth, I say unto you, that “ he will make him ruler over all, that he hath. ⁴⁵ But, and “ if that servant say in his heart, ‘ My lord, delayeth his “ coming ; ’ and shall begin, to beat the men-servants, and “ maidens, and to eat, and drink, and to be drunken ; ⁴⁶ the “ lord of that servant, will come, in a day, when he looketh “ not for *him*, and at an hour, when he is not aware, and will “ cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with “ the unbelievers. ⁴⁷ And that servant, which knew his lord’s “ will, and prepared not *himself*, neither, did according to his “ will, shall be beaten with **MANY stripes**. ⁴⁸ But, he, that “ knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be “ beaten with **FEW stripes**. For, unto whomsoever, much, is “ given, of him, shall be much required : and to whom, men, “ have committed much, of him, they will ask the more.

“ ⁴⁹ “ I am come, to send fire on the earth ; and what will I, “ if it be already kindled ? ⁵⁰ but, I have a baptism, to be bap- “ tized with ; and how am I straitened, till it be accom- “ ed ! ⁵¹ Suppose ye, that I am come, to give peace on earth ? “ I tell you, Nay ; but, rather division : ⁵² for, from hence- “ forth, there shall be five in one house divided, three, against

" two, and two, against three. " The father shall be divided
" against the son, and the son, against the father : the mother,
" against the daughter, and the daughter, against the mother ;
" the mother in law, against her daughter in law, and the
" daughter in law, against her mother in law."

" And he said, also, to the people, " When ye see a
" cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, ' There
" cometh a shower ;' and so it is. " And when ye see the
" south wind blow, ye say, ' There will be heat ;' and it
" cometh to pass. " Ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face
" of the sky, and of the earth ; but, how is it, that ye do not
" discern this time ?

" Yea, and why, even of yourselves, judge ye not what
" is right ? " When thou goest, with thine adversary, to the
" magistrate, as thou art in the way, give diligence, that thou
" mayest be delivered from him ; lest HE hale THEE to the
" judge, and the judge, deliver thee to the officer, and the of-
" ficer, cast thee into prison. " I tell thee, thou shalt not
" depart thence, till thou hast paid the very last mite."

CHAPTER XIII.

1 Christ preacheth repentance upon the punishment of the Galileans,
and others. **6** The fruitless fig tree may not stand. **11** He healeth
the crooked woman : **18** sheweth the powerful working of the word
in the hearts of his chosen, by the parable of the grain of must-
ard seed, and of leaven : **24** exhorteth to enter in at the strait gate,
31 and reproveth Herod and Jerusalem.

1 There were present, at that season, some, that told him
of the Galileans, whose blood, Pilate, had mingled with their
sacrifices.

2 And Jesus, answering, said unto them, " Suppose ye, that
these Galileans, were sinners above all the Galileans, be-
cause, they suffered such things ? " I tell you, Nay : but,
except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. **4** Or, those
eighteen, upon whom, the tower in Siloam, fell, and slew
them, think ye, that they were sinners, above all men, that
dwelt in Jerusalem ? " I tell you, Nay : but, except ye
repent, ye shall all likewise perish."

5 He spake, also, this parable ; " A certain man, had a
fig tree planted in his vineyard ; and he came, and sought

CHAPTER XIII.

“ fruit thereon, and found none. ⁷ Then said he unto the
“ dresser of his vineyard, ‘ Behold, these three years, I come
“ seeking fruit on this fig tree, and find none : cut it down
“ why cumbereth it the ground ? ’ ”

⁸ “ And he, answering, said unto him, ‘ Lord, let it alone
“ this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it : ⁹ and
“ if it bear fruit, well : and if not, *then*, after that, thou
“ shalt cut it down.’ ”

¹⁰ And he was teaching, in one of the synagogues, on
the sabbath. ¹¹ And, behold, there was a woman, which had
a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together,
and could, in no wise, lift up *herself*. ¹² And when Jesus,
saw her, he called *her to him*, and said unto her, “ Woman,
“ thou art loosed from thine infirmity.” ¹³ And he laid *his*
hands on her : and, immediately, she was made straight, and
glorified God.

¹⁴ And the ruler of the synagogue, answered with indignation,
because, that Jesus, had healed on the sabbath day, and
said unto the people, “ There are six days, in which, men,
“ ought to work : in them, therefore, come, and be healed,
“ and not on the sabbath day.”

¹⁵ The Lord, then answered him, and said, “ *Thou* hypocrite,
“ doth not each one of you, on the sabbath, loose his ox, or, *his*
“ ass, from the stall, and lead *him* away to watering ? ¹⁶ And
“ ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom
“ Satan, hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from
“ this bond, on the sabbath day ? ”

¹⁷ And when he had said these things, all his adversaries,
were ashamed : and all the people, rejoiced for all the glorious
things, that were done by him.

¹⁸ Then said he, “ Unto what is the kingdom of God
“ like ? and whereunto shall I resemble it ? ¹⁹ It is like a grain
“ of mustard seed, which a man, took, and cast into his gar-
“ den ; and it grew, and waxed a great tree ; and the fowls
“ of the air, lodged in the branches of it.”

²⁰ And again he said, “ Whereunto shall I liken the king-
“ dom of God ? ²¹ It is like leaven, which a woman, took,
“ and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole, was lea-
“ vened.”

²² And he went through the cities, and villages, teaching, and journeying toward Jerusalem.

²³ Then said one unto him, " Lord, are there few, that be saved ? "

And he said unto them, ²⁴ " Strive, to enter in at the strait gate : for, many, I say unto you, will seek, to enter in, and shall not be able. ²⁵ When once the master of the house, is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin, to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, ' Lord, ' Lord, open unto us ; ' and he shall answer, and say unto you, ' I know you not, whence ye are : ' ²⁶ then, shall ye begin, to say, ' We have eaten, and drunk, in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets.' ²⁷ But, he shall say, ' I tell you, I know you not, whence ye are ; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity.' ²⁸ There shall be weeping, and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out. ²⁹ And they shall come from the East, and from the West, and from the North, and from the South, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. ³⁰ And, behold, there are last, which shall be first, and there are first, which shall be last."

³¹ The same day, there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto him, " Get thee out, and depart hence : for, Herod, will kill thee."

³² And he said unto them, " Go ye, and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures to day, and to morrow, and the third day, I shall be perfected. ³³ Nevertheless, I must walk to day, and to morrow, and the day following : for, it cannot be, that a prophet, perish out of Jerusalem. ³⁴ O, Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them, that are sent unto thee ; how often, would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen, doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not ! ³⁵ Behold, your house, is left unto you desolate : and verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until the time come, when ye shall say, ' Blessed is he, that cometh in the name of the Lord.' "

CHAPTER XIV.

2 Christ healeth the dropsy on the sabbath : 7 teacheth humility : 12 to feast the poor : 15 under the parable of the great supper, sheweth how worldly minded men, who contemn the word of God, shall be shut out of heaven. 25 Those who will be his disciples, to bear their cross must make their accounts beforehand, lest with shame they revolt from him afterward, 34 and become altogether unprofitable, like salt that hath lost his savour.

¹ And it came to pass, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees, to eat bread on the sabbath day, that they watched him. ² And, behold, there was a certain man before him, which had the dropsy. ³ And Jesus, answering, spake unto the Lawyers, and Pharisees, saying, “ Is it lawful, to “ heal on the sabbath day ? ”—⁴ And they held their peace.

And he took *him*, and healed him, and let him go ; ⁵ and answered them, saying, “ Which of you, shall have an ass, or, “ an ox, fallen into a pit, and will not, straightway, pull him “ out on the sabbath day ? ”—⁶ And they could not answer him again to these things.

⁷ And he put forth a parable to those, which were bidden, when he marked, how they chose out the chief rooms ; saying unto them, ⁸ “ When thou art bidden, of any *man*, to “ a wedding, sit not down in the highest room ; lest a more “ honourable man than thou, be bidden of him ; ⁹ and he, that “ bade thee, and him, come, and say to thee, ‘ Give this man “ place ; ’ and thou begin, with shame, to take the lowest room. “ ¹⁰ But, when thou art bidden, go, and sit down in the lowest “ room ; that when he, that bade thee, cometh, he may say “ unto thee, ‘ Friend, go up higher : ’ then, shalt thou have “ worship in the presence of them, that sit at meat with thee. “ ¹¹ For, whosoever exalteth himself, shall be abased ; and he “ that humbleth himself, shall be exalted.”

¹² Then said he, also, to him, that bade him, “ When thou “ makest a dinner, or, a supper, call not thy friends, nor, thy “ brethren, neither, thy kinsmen, nor, *thy* rich neighbours ; “ lest they, also, bid thee again, and a recompence, be made “ thee. ¹³ But, when thou makest a feast, call the poor, the “ maimed, the lame, the blind : ¹⁴ and thou shalt be blessed ; “ for, **THEY** cannot recompense thee : for, thou shalt be recom-“ pensed, at the resurrection of the just.”

¹⁵ And when one of them, that sat at meat with him, heard

these things, he said unto him, “ Blessed is he, that shall eat
“ bread in the kingdom of God.”

¹⁶ Then said he unto him, “ A certain man, made a great
“ supper, and bade many : ¹⁷ and sent his servant, at supper
“ time, to say to them, that were bidden, ‘ Come ; for, all
“ things, are now ready.’ ¹⁸ And they all, with one consent,
“ began, to make excuse. The first, said unto him, ‘ I have
“ bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go, and see
“ it : I pray thee, have me excused.’ ¹⁹ And another, said,
“ ‘ I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go, to prove them :
“ I pray thee, have me excused.’ ²⁰ And another, said, ‘ I
“ have married a wife, and, therefore, I cannot come.’

²¹ “ So, that servant, came, and shewed his lord these
“ things.—Then, the master of the house, being angry, said
“ to his servant, ‘ Go out, quickly, into the streets, and lanes,
“ of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed,
“ and the halt, and the blind.’

²² “ And the servant, said, ‘ Lord, it is done, as thou hast
“ commanded, and yet there is room.’

²³ “ And the lord, said unto the servant, ‘ Go out into the
“ highways, and hedges, and compel *them*, to come in, that
“ my house, may be filled. ²⁴ For, I say unto you, That
“ none of those men, which were bidden, shall taste of my
“ supper.’ ”

²⁵ And there went great multitudes with him : and he
turned, and said unto them, ²⁶ “ If any *man* come to me,
“ and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children,
“ and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he
“ cannot be my disciple. ²⁷ And whosoever doth not bear
“ his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.

²⁸ “ For, which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth
“ not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have
“ sufficient, to finish *it*? ²⁹ lest, haply, after he hath laid the
“ foundation, and is not able, to finish *it*, all, that behold *it*,
“ begin, to mock him, ³⁰ saying, ‘ This man, began, to build,
“ and was not able, to finish.’ ”

³¹ “ Or, what king, going to make war against another
“ king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth, whether he be
“ able, with ten thousand, to meet him, that cometh against
“ him, with twenty thousand? ³² or else, while the other, is

CHAPTER XV.

" yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth
" conditions of peace. ³³ So, likewise, whosoever he be of
" you, that forsaketh not all, that he hath, he cannot be my
" disciple.

³⁴ " Salt, is good : but, if the salt have lost his savour,
" wherewith shall it be seasoned ? ³⁵ it is neither fit for the
" land, nor yet, for the dunghill ; but, men, cast it out. He
" that hath ears to hear, let him hear."

CHAPTER XV.

¹ *The parable of the lost sheep : 8 of the piece of silver : 11 of the prodigal son.*

¹ Then, drew near unto him all the Publicans, and sinners, for to hear him. ² And the Pharisees, and Scribes, murmured, saying, " This man, receiveth sinners, and cateth with them."

³ And he spake this parable unto them, saying, " What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that, which is lost, until he find it ? ⁴ And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. ⁵ And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends, and neighbours, saying unto them, ' Rejoice with me ; for, I have found my sheep, which was lost.'—⁶ I say unto you, that, likewise, joy, shall be in heaven, over one sinner, that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.

⁷ " Either, what woman, having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently, till she find it ? ⁸ And when she hath found it, she calleth her friends, and her neighbours together, saying, ' Rejoice with me ; for, I have found the piece, which I had lost.'—⁹ Likewise, I say unto you, there is joy, in the presence of the angels of God, over one sinner, that repenteth."

¹⁰ And he said, " A certain man, had two sons : ¹¹ and the younger of them, said to his father, ' Father, give me the portion of goods, that falleth to me.'—And ¹² he divided unto them his living.

¹³ " And, not many days after, the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living. ¹⁴ And, when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want. ¹⁵ And he went, and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields, to feed swine. ¹⁶ And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks, that the swine, did eat: and no man gave unto him.

¹⁷ " And, when he came to himself, he said, ' How many hired servants of my father's, have bread enough, and to spare, and I perish with hunger! ¹⁸ I will arise, and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, ¹⁹ and am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants.' — ²⁰ And he arose, and came to his father.

" But, when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him.

²¹ " And the son said unto him, ' Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son.'

²² " But, the father said to his servants, ' Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: ²³ and bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry: ²⁴ for, this, my son, was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found.' — And they began to be merry.

²⁵ " Now, his elder son, was in the field: and as he came, and drew nigh to the house, he heard music, and dancing. ²⁶ And he called one of the servants, and asked, what these things, meant.

²⁷ " And he said unto him, ' Thy brother is come; and thy father, hath killed the fatted calf, because, he hath received him safe, and sound.'

²⁸ " And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore, came his father out, and intreated him.

²⁹ " And he, answering, said to his father, ' Lo, these many years, do I serve thee, neither transgressed I, at any time, thy commandment: and yet, thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: ³⁰ but, as soon

CHAPTER XVI.

“ ‘ as this, thy son, was come, which hath devoured thy living;
“ ‘ with harlots, thou hast killed, for him, the **FATTED CALF**.
“ ³¹ And he said unto him, ‘ Son, thou art ever with me,
“ ‘ and all, that I have, is thine. ³² It was meet, that we
“ ‘ should make merry, and be glad: for, this, thy brother, was
“ ‘ dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.’ ”

CHAPTER XVI.

1 *The parable of the unjust steward.* **14** *Christ reproveth the hypocrisy of the covetous Pharisees.* **19** *The rich glutton, and Lazarus the beggar.*

¹ And he said also unto his disciples, “ There was a certain rich man, which had a steward; and the same, was accused unto him, that he had wasted his goods. ² And he called him, and said unto him, ‘ How is it, that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship; for, thou mallest be no longer steward.’ ”

³ “ Then, the steward, said within himself, ‘ What shall I do? for, my lord, taketh away from me the stewardship: I cannot dig; to beg, I am ashamed. ⁴ I am resolved, what to do, that, when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses.’ ”

⁵ “ So, he called every one of his lord’s debtors *unto him*, and said unto the first, ‘ How much, owest thou unto my lord?’ ”

⁶ “ And he said, ‘ An hundred measures of oil.’ ”

“ And he said unto him, ‘ Take thy bill, and sit down quickly, and write fifty.’ ⁷ Then said he to another, ‘ And how much owest thou?’ ”

“ And he said, ‘ An hundred measures of wheat.’ ”

“ And he said unto him, ‘ Take thy bill, and write four-score.’ ”

⁸ “ And the lord, commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for, the children of this world, are, in their generation, wiser than the children of light. ⁹ And I say unto you, Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness; that, when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations.

¹⁰ “ He, that is faithful in that, which is least, is faithful

" also, in much : and he, that is unjust in the least, is unjust,
 " also, in much. " If, therefore, ye have not been faithful, in
 " the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the
 " true riches ? " and if ye have not been faithful in that,
 " which is another man's, who shall give you that, which is
 " your own ? " No servant, can serve two masters : for, either
 " he will hate the one, and love the other ; or else, he will
 " hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve
 " God, and mammon."

" And the Pharisees also, who were covetous, heard all these things : and they derided him.

" And he said unto them, " Ye are they, which justify yourselves before men ; but, God, knoweth your hearts : for, that, which is highly esteemed among men, is abomination in the sight of God.

" The Law, and the Prophets, were until John : since that time, the kingdom of God, is preached, and every man, presseth into it. " And it is easier, for heaven, and earth, to pass, than one tittle of the law, to fail.

" Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery : and whosoever marrieth her, that is put away from her husband, committeth adultery.

" There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple, and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day : and there was a certain beggar, named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, and desiring, to be fed with the crumbs, which fell from the rich man's table : moreover, the dogs, came, and licked his sores. " And it came to pass, that the beggar, died, and was carried, by the angels, into Abraham's bosom : the rich man, also, died, and was buried ; and, in hell, he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.

" And he cried, and said, ' Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue ; for, I am tormented in this flame.'

" But, Abraham, said, ' Son, remember, that thou, in thy lifetime, receivedst thy good things, and, likewise, Lazarus, evil things : but, now, he is comforted, and thou art

CHAPTER XVII.

“ ‘ tormented. 26 And, beside all this, between us, and you,
“ ‘ there is a great gulf fixed: so, that they, which would pass
“ ‘ from hence to you, cannot; neither, can they pass to us,
“ ‘ that *would come* from thence.’

27 “ Then he said, ‘ I pray thee therefore, father, that thou
“ ‘ wouldest send him to my father’s house: 28 for, I have five
“ ‘ brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they, also,
“ ‘ come into this place of torment.’

29 “ Abraham, saith unto him, ‘ They have Moses, and the
“ ‘ prophets; let them hear them.’

30 “ And he said, ‘ Nay, father Abraham: but, if one went
“ ‘ unto them from the dead, they will repent.’

31 “ And he said unto him, ‘ If they hear not Moses, and
“ ‘ the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, **THOUGH** one
“ ‘ rose from the dead.’ ”

CHAPTER XVII.

1 *Christ teacheth to avoid occasions of offence.* 3 *One to forgive another.* 6 *The power of faith.* 7 *How we are bound to God, and not He to us.* 11 *He healeth ten lepers.* 22 *Of the kingdom of God, and the coming of the Son of man.*

1 Then said he unto the disciples, “ It is impossible,
“ but, that offences, will come: but, woe *unto him*, through
“ whom they come! 2 It were better for him, that a mill-
“ stone, were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea,
“ than that he should offend one of these little ones.

3 “ Take heed to yourselves: If thy brother trespass against
“ thee, rebuke him; and, if he repent, forgive him. 4 And
“ if he trespass against thee seven times in a day, and, seven
“ times in a day, turn again to thee, saying, ‘ I repent;’ thou
“ shalt forgive him.”

5 And the apostles, said unto the Lord, “ Increase our
“ faith.”

6 And the Lord, said, “ If ye had faith, as a grain of mus-
“ tard seed, ye might say unto this sycamine tree, ‘ Be thou
“ plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the sea;’
“ and it should obey you.

7 “ But, which of you, having a servant, plowing, or, feed-
“ ing cattle, will say unto him, by and by, when he is come

" from the field, ' Go, and sit down to meat ? ' " and will not, " rather say unto him, ' Make ready wherewith I may sup, " and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten, and " drunken ; and, afterward, thou shalt eat, and drink ? ' " Doth he thank that servant, because, he did the things, " that were commanded him ? I trow not. " So, likewise ye, " when ye shall have done all those things, which are com- " manded you, say, ' We are unprofitable servants : we have " done that, which was our duty, to do.' "

¹¹ And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria, and Galilee.

¹² And, as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men, that were lepers, which stood afar off: ¹³ and they lifted up *their* voices, and said, " Jesus, Master, have " mercy on us."

¹⁴ And when he saw *them*, he said unto them, " Go, shew " yourselves unto the Priests."

And it came to pass, that, as they went, they were cleansed. --¹⁵ And one of them, when he saw, that he was healed, turned back, and, with a loud voice, glorified God, ¹⁶ and fell down on *his* face at his feet, giving him thanks : and he was a Samaritan.

¹⁷ And Jesus, answering, said, " Were there not ten cleansed ? " but, where *are* the nine ? ¹⁸ There are not found, that re- " turned, to give glory to God, save this stranger." ¹⁹ And he said unto him, " Arise, go thy way : thy faith, hath made " thee whole."

²⁰ And when he was demanded, of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God, should come, he answered them, and said, " The kingdom of God, cometh not with observation : " ²¹ neither, shall they say, ' Lo, here ! ' or, ' Lo, there ! ' for, " behold, the kingdom of God, is within you."

²² And he said unto the disciples, " The days, will " come, when ye shall desire, to see one of the days of the " Son of man, and ye shall not see *it*. " ²³ And they shall say " to you, ' See here ; ' or, ' See there : ' go not after *them*, " nor, follow *them*. " ²⁴ For, as the lightning, that lighteneth " out of the one *part* under heaven, shineth unto the other " *part* under heaven ; so, shall, also, the Son of man be, in his

CHAPTER XVIII.

“ day. ²⁵ But, first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation. ²⁶ And as it was in the days of “ Noe, so, shall it be, also, in the days of the Son of man. “ ²⁷ They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were “ given in marriage, until the day, that Noe, entered into the “ ark, and the flood, came, and destroyed them all.

²⁸ “ Likewise, also, as it was in the days of Lot; they did “ eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they “ builded; ²⁹ but, the same day, that Lot, went out of Sodom, “ it rained fire, and brimstone, from heaven, and destroyed *them* “ all.

³⁰ “ Even thus, shall it be, in the day, when the Son of man, “ is revealed. ³¹ In that day, he, which shall be upon the “ housetop, and his stuff in the house, let him not come down, “ to take it away: and he, that is in the field, let him likewise not return back. ³² Remember Lot’s wife.

³³ “ Whosoever shall seek, to save his life, shall lose it; and “ whosoever shall lose his life, shall preserve it. ³⁴ I tell you, “ in that night, there shall be two *men* in one bed; the one, “ shall be taken, and the other, shall be left. ³⁵ Two *women*, “ shall be grinding together; the one, shall be taken, and the “ other, left. ³⁶ Two *men*, shall be in the field; the one, shall “ be taken, and the other, left.”

³⁷ And they answered, and said unto him, “ Where, Lord?”

And he said unto them, “ Wheresoever, the body, *is*, thither, “ will the eagles be gathered together.”

CHAPTER XVIII.

³ *Of the importunate widow.* ⁹ *Of the Pharisee and the Publican.*
¹⁵ *Children brought to Christ.* ¹⁸ *A ruler that would follow Christ, but is hindered by his riches.* ²⁸ *The reward of them that leave all for his sake.* ³¹ *He foresheweth his death,* ³⁵ *and restoreth a blind man to his sight.*

¹ And he spake a parable unto them, *to this end*, that men, ought always, *to pray*, and not, *to faint*; ² saying, “ There “ was, in a city, a judge, which feared not God, neither, re- “ garded man.

³ “ And there was a widow in that city; and she came “ unto him, saying, ‘ Avenge me of mine adversary.’

“ “ And he would not for a while : but, afterward, he said
“ within himself, ‘ Though I fear not God, nor, regard man ;
“ ‘ yet, because, this widow, troubleth me, I will avenge her,
“ ‘ lest, by her continual coming, she weary me.’ ”

“ “ And the Lord, said, “ Hear what the unjust judge, saith.
“ “ 7 And shall not God avenge His own elect, which cry, day
“ and night, unto Him, though He bear long with them ?
“ “ 8 I tell you, that He will avenge them speedily. Neverthe-
“ less, when the Son of man, cometh, shall he find faith on
“ the earth ? ”

“ “ 9 And he spake this parable unto certain, which trusted in themselves, that they were righteous, and despised others : 10 “ Two men, went up into the temple, to pray ; the one, a Pharisee, and the other, a Publican. 11 The Pharisee, stood, and prayed thus with himself, ‘ God, I thank Thee, that I am not as other men, *are*, extortioners, un-just, adulterers, or, even as this Publican. 12 I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all, that I possess.’ ”

“ “ 13 “ And the Publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as *his* eyes unto heaven, but, smote upon his breast, saying, ‘ God, be merciful to me, a sinner.’ —

“ “ 14 “ I tell you, this man, went down to his house justified, rather than the other : for, every one, that exalteth himself, shall be abased ; and he, that humbleth himself, shall be exalted.”

“ “ 15 And they brought unto him, also, infants, that he would touch them : but, when *his* disciples, saw it, they rebuked them. 16 But, Jesus, called them unto him, and said, “ Suffer little children, to come unto me, and forbid them not : “ for, of such, is the kingdom of God. 17 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God, as a little child, shall, in no wise, enter therein.”

“ “ 18 And a certain ruler, asked him, saying, “ Good Master, what shall I do, to inherit eternal life ? ”

“ “ 19 And Jesus, said unto him, “ Why callest thou me good ? none, *is* good, save one, *that is*, God. 20 Thou knowest the commandments, ‘ Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Honour thy father, and thy mother.’ ”

CHAPTER XVIII.

²¹ And he said, "All these, have I kept from my youth up."

²² Now, when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him, "Yet, lackest thou one thing: sell all, that thou hast, and dis-tribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me."

²³ And when he heard this, he was very sorrowful: for, he was very rich.

²⁴ And when Jesus saw, that he was very sorrowful, he said, "How HARDLY shall they, that have riches, enter into the kingdom of God! ²⁵ For, it is easier, for a camel, to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich man, to enter into the kingdom of God."

²⁶ And they that heard it, said, "Who, then, can be saved?"

²⁷ And he said, "The things, which are impossible with men, are possible with God."

²⁸ Then Peter, said, "Lo, we have left all, and followed thee."

²⁹ And he said unto them, "Verily I say unto you, There is no man, that hath left house, or, parents, or, brethren, or, wife, or, children, for the kingdom of God's sake, ³⁰ who shall not receive manifold more, in this present time, and in the world to come, life everlasting."

³¹ Then he took unto him the twelve, and said unto them, "Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things, that are written by the prophets, concerning the Son of man, shall be accomplished. ³² For, he shall be delivered unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and spitefully entreated, and spitted on: ³³ and they shall scourge him, and put him to death: and the third day, he shall rise again."

³⁴ And they understood none of these things: and this saying, was hid from them, neither, knew they the things, which were spoken.

³⁵ And it came to pass, that as he was come nigh unto Jericho, a certain blind man, sat by the way side, begging:

³⁶ and, hearing the multitude pass by, he asked, what it meant.

³⁷ And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth, passeth by.

³⁸ And he cried, saying, "Jesus, thou Son of David, have mercy on me." ³⁹ And they, which went before, rebuked

SAINT LUKE.

him, that he should hold his peace : but, he cried so much the more, “ *Thou Son of David, have mercy on me.*”

⁴⁰ And Jesus, stood, and commanded him, to be brought unto him : and when he was come near, he asked him, ⁴¹ saying, “ *What wilt thou, that I shall do unto thee?*”

And he said, “ *Lord, that I may receive my sight.*”

⁴² And Jesus, said unto him, “ *Receive thy sight : thy faith, hath saved thee.*”

⁴³ And, immediately, he received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God : and all the people, when they saw it, gave praise unto God.

CHAPTER XIX.

¹ *Of Zacchæus a Publican.* ¹¹ *The ten pieces of money.* ²⁸ *Christ rideth into Jerusalem with triumph : 41 weepeth over it : 45 driveth the buyers and sellers out of the temple : 47 teaching daily in it. The rulers would have destroyed him, but for fear of the people.*

¹ And Jesus, entered, and passed through Jericho.

² And, behold, there was a man named Zacchæus, which was the chief among the Publicans, and he was rich.

³ And he sought, to see Jesus, who he was ; and could not, for the press, because, he was little of stature. ⁴ And he ran before, and climbed up into a sycomore tree, to see him : for, he was to pass that way.

⁵ And when Jesus, came to the place, he looked up, and saw him, and said unto him, “ *Zacchæus, make haste, and come down ; for, to day, I must abide at thy house.*”

⁶ And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully.

⁷ And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, “ *That he was gone, to be guest with a man, that is a sinner.*”

⁸ And Zacchæus, stood, and said unto the Lord ; “ *Behold, Lord, the half of my goods, I give to the poor ; and if I have taken any thing from any man, by false accusation, I restore him fourfold.*”

⁹ And Jesus, said unto him, “ *This day, is salvation come to this house, forasmuch, as he, also, is a son of Abraham.*”

¹⁰ *For, the Son of man, is come, to seek, and to save, that, which was lost.*”

CHAPTER XIX.

¹¹ And, as they heard these things, he added, and spake a parable, because, he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because, they thought, that the kingdom of God, should immediately appear. ¹² He said therefore, “ A certain nobleman, went into “ a far country, to receive for himself a kingdom, and to re- “ turn. ¹³ And he called his ten servants, and delivered them “ ten pounds, and said unto them, ‘ Occupy till I come.’

¹⁴ “ But, his citizens, hated him, and sent a message after “ him, saying, ‘ We will not have this *man*, to reign over us.’

¹⁵ “ And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having “ received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants, to “ be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that “ he might know, how much, every man, had gained by trading.

¹⁶ “ Then, came the first, saying, ‘ Lord, thy pound, hath “ gained ten pounds.’

¹⁷ “ And he said unto him, ‘ Well, thou good servant : be- “ cause, thou hast been faithful, in a very little, have thou “ authority over ten cities.’

¹⁸ “ And the second, came, saying, ‘ Lord, thy pound, hath “ gained five pounds.’

¹⁹ “ And he said likewise to him, ‘ Be thou, also, over five “ cities.’

²⁰ “ And another, came, saying, ‘ Lord, behold, *here is* thy “ pound, which I have kept, laid up in a napkin : ²¹ for, I “ feared thee, because, thou art an austere man : thou takest “ up that, thou layedst not down, and reapest that, thou didst “ not sow.’

²² “ And he saith unto him, ‘ Out of thine own mouth, will “ I judge thee, *thou* wicked servant. Thou knewest, that I “ was an austere man, taking up that, I laid not down, and “ reaping that, I did not sow : ²³ wherefore, then, gavest not “ thou my money into the bank, that, at my coming, I might “ have required mine own, with usury ? ’ ²⁴ And he said unto “ them, that stood by, ‘ Take from him the pound, and give *it* “ to him, that hath ten pounds.’ ²⁵ (And they said unto “ him, ‘ Lord, he hath ten pounds.’) ²⁶ For, I say unto you, “ That unto every one, which hath, shall be given ; and “ from him, that hath not, even that he hath, shall be “ taken away from him. ²⁷ But, those, mine enemies, which “ would not, that I should reign over them, bring hither, and “ slay *them* before me.’”

SAINT LUKE.

²⁸ And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem.

²⁹ And, it came to pass, when he was come nigh to Bethphage, and Bethany, at the mount called *the mount* of Olives, he sent two of his disciples, ³⁰ saying, “ Go ye into “ the village over against *you*; in the which, at your enter-“ ing, ye shall find a colt tied, whereon, yet, never man, sat : “ loose him, and bring *him hither*. ³¹ And if any man ask “ *you*, ‘ Why do ye loose *him*? ’ thus, shall ye say unto him, “ ‘ Because, the Lord, hath need of him.’ ”

³² And they, that were sent, went their way, and found even as he had said unto them.

³³ And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof, said unto them, “ Why loose ye the colt? ”

³⁴ And they said, “ The Lord, hath need of him.”

³⁵ And they brought him to Jesus: and they cast their garments upon the colt, and they set Jesus thereon. ³⁶ And, as he went, they spread their clothes in the way. ³⁷ And, when he was come nigh, even now, at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples, began, to rejoice, and praise God, with a loud voice, for all the mighty works, that they had seen; ³⁸ saying, “ Blessed *be* the King, that “ cometh in the name of the Lord: peace in heaven, and “ glory in the highest.”

³⁹ And some of the Pharisees, from among the multitude, said unto him, “ Master, rebuke thy disciples.”

⁴⁰ And he answered, and said unto them, “ I tell you, that, “ if these, should hold their peace, the STONES, would imme-“ ately cry out.”

⁴¹ And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it, ⁴² saying, “ If thou hadst known, even thou, “ at least, in this, thy day, the things, *which belong* unto thy “ peace! but, now, they are hid from thine eyes. ⁴³ For, the “ days, shall come upon thee, that thine enemies, shall cast a “ trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee “ in on every side, ⁴⁴ and shall lay thee even with the ground, “ and thy children within thee; and they shall not leave in “ thee, one stone upon another; because, thou knewest not “ the time of thy visitation.”

⁴⁵ And he went into the temple, and began, to cast out
174

CHAPTER XX.

them, that sold therein, and them, that bought ; ⁴⁶ saying unto them, “ It is written, ‘ My house, is the house of prayer : ‘ ‘ but, ye have made it, a den of thieves.’ ”

⁴⁷ And he taught, daily, in the temple. But, the Chief Priests, and the Scribes, and the chief of the people, sought, to destroy him, ⁴⁸ and could not find, what they might do : for, all the people, were very attentive to hear him.

CHAPTER XX.

¹ Christ avoucheth his authority by a question of John's baptism.
⁹ The parable of the vineyard. ¹⁹ Of giving tribute to Cæsar.
²⁷ He convinceth the Sadducees that denied the resurrection.
⁴¹ How Christ is the Son of David. ⁴⁵ He warneth his disciples to beware of the Scribes.

¹ And it came to pass, *that* on one of those days, as he taught the people, in the temple, and preached the Gospel, the Chief Priests, and the Scribes, came upon *him* with the elders, ² and spake unto him, saying, “ Tell us, by what authority, doest thou these things ? or, who is he, that GAVE thee this authority ? ”

³ And he answered, and said unto them, “ I will, also, ask you one thing ; and answer me : ⁴ The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or, of men ? ”

⁵ And they reasoned with themselves, saying, “ If we shall say, From heaven ; he will say, ‘ Why then, believed ye him not ? ’ ⁶ But, and if we say, Of men ; all the people, will stone us : for, they be persuaded, that John, was a prophet.”—⁷ And they answered, that they could not tell, whence *it was*.

⁸ And Jesus, said unto them, “ Neither, tell I you, by what authority, I do these things.”

⁹ Then began he, to speak to the people this parable ; “ A certain man, planted a vineyard, and let it forth to husbandmen, and went into a far country for a long time. ¹⁰ And, at the season, he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard : but, the husbandmen, beat him, and sent *him* away empty. ¹¹ And again, he sent another servant : and they beat him also, and entreated *him* shamefully, and sent *him* away

SAINT LUKE.

“empty. ¹² And again, he sent a third : and they wounded him also, and cast *him* out.

¹³ “ Then, said the lord of the vineyard, ‘ What shall I do ? ‘ I will send my beloved son : it may be, they will reverence *him*, when they see him.’

¹⁴ “ But, when the husbandmen, saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, ‘ This, is the heir : come, let us kill him, that the inheritance, may be ours.’—¹⁵ So, they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed *him*.—

“ What, therefore, shall the lord of the vineyard do unto them ? ¹⁶ He shall come, and destroy these husbandmen, and shall give the vineyard to others.”

And when they heard *it*, they said, “ God forbid.”

¹⁷ And he beheld them, and said, “ What is this, then, that is written, ‘ The stone, which the builders, rejected, the same, is become the head of the corner ? ’ ¹⁸ Whosoever shall fall upon that stone, shall be broken ; but, on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.”

¹⁹ And the Chief Priests, and the Scribes, the same hour, sought, to lay hands on him ; and they feared the people : for, they perceived, that he had spoken this parable against them. ²⁰ And they watched *him*, and sent forth spies, which should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that, so, they might deliver him unto the power, and authority, of the governor. ²¹ And they asked him, saying, “ Master, we know, that thou sayest, and teachest, rightly, neither, acceptest thou the person of *any*, but, teachest the way of God truly : ²² Is it lawful, for us to give tribute unto Cæsar, or, no ? ”

²³ But, he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them, “ Why tempt ye me ? ²⁴ Shew me a penny. Whose image, and superscription, hath it ? ”

They answered, and said, “ Cæsar’s.”

²⁵ And he said unto them, “ Render, therefore, unto Cæsar the things, which be Cæsar’s, and unto God, the things, which be God’s.”

²⁶ And they could not take hold of his words before the people : and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace.

²⁷ Then, came to *him* certain of the Sadducees, which deny, that there is any resurrection ; and they asked him, ²⁸ saying, “ Master, Moses, wrote unto us, ‘ If any man’s

CHAPTER XX.

“ ‘ brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that
“ his brother, should take his wife, and raise up seed unto
“ his brother.’ ²⁹ There were, therefore, seven brethren : and
“ the first, took a wife, and died without children. ³⁰ And
“ the second, took her to wife, and he died childless. ³¹ And
“ the third, took her ; and, in like manner, the seven also :
“ and they left no children, and died. ³² Last of all, the
“ woman, died also. ³³ Therefore, in the resurrection, whose
“ wife of them, is she ? for, seven, had her to wife.”

³⁴ And Jesus, answering, said unto them, “ The children of
“ this world, marry, and are given in marriage : ³⁵ but, they,
“ which shall be accounted worthy, to obtain THAT world,
“ and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor, are
“ given in marriage : ³⁶ neither, can they die any more : for,
“ they are equal unto the angels ; and are the children of
“ God, being the children of the resurrection. ³⁷ Now, that
“ the dead, are RAISED, even Moses, shewed at the bush,
“ when he calleth the Lord ‘ The God of Abraham, and the
“ ‘ God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.’ ³⁸ For, He is not
“ a God of the DEAD, but, of the LIVING : for, all, live unto
“ Him.”

³⁹ Then, certain of the Scribes, answering, said, “ Master,
“ thou hast well said.”

⁴⁰ And, after that, they durst not ask him any *question at all*.

⁴¹ And he said unto them, “ How say they, that Christ,
“ is David’s son ? ⁴² and David himself, saith in the book of
“ Psalms, ‘ The LORD, said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my
“ ‘ right hand, ⁴³ till I make thine enemies thy footstool.’
“ ⁴⁴ David, therefore, calleth him Lord, how is he, then, his
“ son ? ”

⁴⁵ Then, in the audience of all the people, he said unto
his disciples, ⁴⁶ “ Beware of the Scribes, which desire, to walk
“ in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the
“ highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at
“ feasts ; ⁴⁷ which devour widows’ houses, and, for a shew,
“ make long, prayers : the same, shall receive greater
“ damnation.”

CHAPTER XXI.

I Christ commendeth the poor widow **5** He foretelleth the destruction of the temple, and of the city Jerusalem : **25** the signs also which shall be before the last day. **34** He exhorteth them to be watchful.

1 And he looked up, and saw the rich men, casting their gifts into the treasury. **2** And he saw, also, a certain poor widow, casting in thither two mites. **3** And he said, “ Of a “ truth, I say unto you, that this poor widow, hath cast in “ more than they all : **4** for, all these, have, of their ABUN-“ DANCE, cast in unto the offerings of God : but, she, of her “ PENURY, hath cast in all the living, that she had.”

5 And as some, spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones, and gifts, he said, **6** “ *As for* “ these things, which ye behold, the days, will come, in the “ which, there shall not be left one stone upon another, that “ shall not be thrown down.”

7 And they asked him, saying, “ Master, but, when shall “ these things be ? and what sign *will there be*, when these “ things, shall come to pass ? ”

8 And he said, “ Take heed, that ye be not deceived : for, “ many, shall come in my name, saying, ‘ I am Christ ; and “ ‘ the time, draweth near : ’ go ye not, therefore, after them. “ **9** But, when ye shall hear of wars, and commotions, be not “ terrified : for, these things, must, first, come to pass ; but, the “ end, is not by and by ”

10 Then said he unto them, “ Nation, shall rise against “ nation, and kingdom, against kingdom . **11** and great earth-“ quakes, shall be in divers places, and famines, and pesti-“ lences ; and fearful sights, and great signs, shall there be “ from heaven.

12 “ But, before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, “ and persecute *you*, delivering *you* up to the synagogues, “ and into prisons, being brought before kings, and rulers, for “ my name’s sake. **13** And it shall turn to you, for a testi-“ mony. **14** Settle *it*, therefore, in your hearts, not to meditate “ before, what ye shall answer : **15** for, I will give you a mouth, “ and wisdom, which all your adversaries, shall not be able, to “ gainsay, nor, resist. **16** And ye shall be betrayed, both by “ parents, and brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends ; and, *some*

CHAPTER XXI.

“ of you, shall they cause, to be put to death. ¹⁷ And ye shall
“ be hated of all *men*, for my name’s sake. ¹⁸ But, there
“ shall not an hair of your head perish. ¹⁹ In your patience,
“ possess ye your souls.

²⁰ “ And when ye shall see Jerusalem, compassed with
“ armies, then know, that the desolation thereof, is nigh.
“ ²¹ Then let them, which are in Judæa, flee to the mountains ;
“ and let them, which are in the midst of it, depart out ; and
“ let not them, that are in the countries, enter thereinto.
“ ²² For, these, be the days of vengeance, that all things, which
“ are written, may be fulfilled.

²³ “ But, woe unto them, that are with child, and to them,
“ that give suck, in those days ! for, there shall be great dis-
“ tress in the land, and wrath upon this people. ²⁴ And they
“ shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away
“ captive into all nations : and Jerusalem, shall be trodden
“ down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles, be
“ fulfilled.

²⁵ “ And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and
“ in the stars ; and, upon the earth, distress of nations, with
“ perplexity ; the sea, and the waves, roaring ; ²⁶ men’s hearts,
“ failing them, for fear, and for looking after those things,
“ which are coming on the earth : for, the powers of heaven,
“ shall be shaken. ²⁷ And then, shall they see the Son of
“ man, coming in a cloud, with power, and great glory.
“ ²⁸ And when these things, begin, to come to pass, then look
“ up, and lift up your heads ; for, your redemption, draweth
“ nigh.”

²⁹ And he spake to them a parable ; “ Behold the fig tree,
“ and all the trees ; ³⁰ when they now shoot forth, ye see,
“ and know, of your own selves, that summer, is now nigh at
“ hand. ³¹ So, likewise ye, when ye see these things come to
“ pass, know ye, that the kingdom of God, is nigh at hand.
“ ³² Verily I say unto you, This generation, shall not pass
“ away, till all, be fulfilled. ³³ Heaven, and earth, shall pass
“ away : but, my words, shall NOT pass away.

³⁴ “ And take heed to yourselves, lest, at any time, your
“ hearts, be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and
“ cares of this life, and *so*, that day, come upon you unawares.
“ ³⁵ For, as a snare, shall it come on all them, that dwell on
“ the face of the whole earth. ³⁶ Watch ye therefore, and

SAINT LUKE.

" pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy, to escape all " these things, that shall come to pass, and to stand before " the Son of man."

³⁷ And, in the day time, he was teaching in the temple ; and, at night, he went out, and abode in the mount, that is called *the mount* of Olives. ³⁸ And all the people, came, early in the morning, to him in the temple, for to hear him.

CHAPTER XXII.

1 The Jews conspire against Christ. 3 Satan prepareth Judas to betray him. 7 The apostles prepare the Passover. 19 Christ instituteth his holy supper, 21 covertly foretelleth of the traitor, 24 dehorteth the rest of his apostles from ambition, 31 assureth Peter his faith should not fail : 34 and yet he should deny him thrice. 39 He prayeth in the mount, and sweateth blood, 47 is betrayed with a kiss : 50 he healeth Malchus' ear, 54 he is thrice denied of Peter, 63 shamefully abused, 66 and confesseth himself to be the Son of God.

¹ Now, the feast of unleavened bread, drew nigh, which is called the Passover. ² And the Chief Priests, and Scribes, sought, how they might kill him ; for, they feared the people.

³ Then entered Satan into Judas, surnamed Iseariot, being of the number of the twelve. ⁴ And he went his way, and communed with the Chief Priests, and captains, how he might betray him unto them. ⁵ And they were glad, and covenanted, to give him money. ⁶ And he promised, and sought opportunity, to betray him unto them, in the absence of the multitude.

⁷ Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the Passover, must be killed.

⁸ And he sent Peter, and John, saying, " Go, and " prepare us the Passover, that we may eat."

⁹ And they said unto him, " Where wilt thou, that we " prepare ? "

¹⁰ And he said unto them, " Behold, when ye are entered " into the city, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher " of water ; follow him into the house, where he entereth in. " ¹¹ And ye shall say unto the goodman of the house, ' The " ' Master, saith unto thee, Where is the guestchamber, where I

CHAPTER XXII.

“ ‘ shall eat the Passover with my disciples ? ’ ”¹² and he shall
“ shew you a large upper room furnished : there, make ready.”
—¹³ And they went, and found, as he had said unto them :
and they made ready the Passover.

“¹⁴ And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him. ”¹⁵ And he said unto them, “ With desire, I have desired, to eat this Passover with you, before I suffer : ”¹⁶ for, I say unto you, I will not, any more, eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.” —¹⁷ And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, “ Take this, and divide it among yourselves : ”¹⁸ for, I say unto you, “ I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God, shall come.” ”¹⁹ And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, “ This, is my body, which is given for you : this do, in remembrance of me.” ”²⁰ Likewise, also, the cup after supper, saying, “ This cup, is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you. ”
—²¹ “ But, behold, the hand of him, that betrayeth me, is with me on the table. ”²² And truly, the Son of man, goeth, as it was determined : but, woe unto that man, by whom he is betrayed ! ” —²³ And they began, to enquire among themselves, which of them it was, that should do this thing.

“²⁴ And there was, also, a strife among them, which of them, should be accounted the greatest.

“ And he said unto them, “ The kings of the Gentiles, exercise lordship over them ; and they, that exercise authority upon them, are called benefactors. ”²⁵ But, ye shall not be so : but, he, that is greatest among you, let him be, as the younger ; and he, that is chief, as he, that doth serve. ”²⁶ For, whether is greater, he, that sitteth at meat, or, he, that serveth ? is not he, that sitteth at meat ? but I am among you, as he, that serveth. ”²⁷ Ye are they, which have continued with me in my temptations. ”²⁸ And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father, hath appointed unto me ; ”²⁹ that ye may eat, and drink, at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.”

“³⁰ And the Lord, said, “ Simon, Simon, behold, Satan, hath desired, to have you, that he may sift you as wheat : ”³¹ but, I have prayed for thee, that thy faith, fail not : and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.”

SAINT LUKE.

³³ And he said unto him, " Lord, I am ready, to go with thee, both into prison, and to death."

³⁴ And he said, " I tell thee, Peter, the cock, shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt, **THRICE, DENY**, that thou knowest me."—³⁵ And he said unto them, " When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing ? "

And they said, " Nothing."

³⁶ Then said he unto them, " But now, he, that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise *his* scrip : and he, that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one. "³⁷ For, I say unto you, that this, that is written, must yet be accomplished in me, ' And he was reckoned among the transgressors : ' for, the things concerning me, have an end."

³⁸ And they said, " Lord, behold, here *are* two swords."

And he said unto them, " It is enough."

³⁹ And he came out, and went, as he was wont, to the mount of Olives ; and his disciples, also, followed him.

⁴⁰ And when he was at the place, he said unto them, " Pray, that ye enter not into temptation."

⁴¹ And he was withdrawn from them about a stone's cast, and kneeled down, and prayed, ⁴² saying, " Father, if Thou be willing, remove this cup from me : nevertheless, not **MY** will, but **THINE**, be done."

⁴³ And there appeared an angel unto him, from heaven, strengthening him. ⁴⁴ And, being in an agony, he prayed more earnestly : and his sweat, was, as it were, great drops of blood, falling down to the ground.

⁴⁵ And when he rose up from prayer, and was come to his disciples, he found them sleeping, for sorrow, ⁴⁶ and said unto them, " Why sleep ye ? rise, and pray, lest ye enter into temptation."

⁴⁷ And while he yet spake, behold a multitude, and he, that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and drew near unto Jesus, to kiss him.

⁴⁸ But, Jesus, said unto him, " Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man, with a kiss ? "

⁴⁹ When they, which were about him, saw what would follow, they said unto him, " Lord, shall we smite with the sword ? "

CHAPTER XXII.

⁵⁰ And one of them, smote the servant of the High Priest, and cut off his right ear.

⁵¹ And Jesus, answered, and said, " Suffer ye thus far." And he touched his ear, and healed him.

⁵² Then Jesus, said unto the Chief Priests, and captains of the temple, and the elders, which were come to him, " Be ye come out, as against a thief, with swords, and staves ? "
⁵³ When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched forth no hands against me : but, this, is your hour, and the power of darkness."

⁵⁴ Then took they him, and led *him*, and brought him into the High Priest's house.

And Peter, followed afar off. ⁵⁵ And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set down together, Peter, sat down among them. ⁵⁶ But, a certain maid, beheld him, as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him, and said, " This man, was also with him."

⁵⁷ And he denied him, saying, " Woman, I know him not."

⁵⁸ And, after a little while, another, saw him, and said, " Thou art, also, of them."

And Peter, said, " Man, I am not."

⁵⁹ And, about the space of one hour after, another, confidently affirmed, saying, " Of a truth, this *fellow* also, was with him : for, he is a Galilean."

⁶⁰ And Peter, said, " Man, I know not, what thou sayest."

And, immediately, while he yet spake, the cock, crew.

⁶¹ And the Lord, turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter, remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, " Before the cock, crow, thou shalt deny me thrice."

⁶² And Peter, went out, and wept bitterly.

⁶³ And the men, that held Jesus, mocked him, and sinote *him*. ⁶⁴ And when they had blindfolded him, they struck him on the face, and asked him, saying, " Prophesy, who is it, that smote thee ? " ⁶⁵ And many other things, blasphemously spake they against him.

⁶⁶ And, as soon as it was day, the elders of the people, and the Chief Priests, and the Scribes, came together, and led him into their council, saying, ⁶⁷ " Art thou the Christ ? tell us."

And he said unto them, " If I tell you, ye will not believe: " ¹⁰ and if I also ask you, ye will not answer me, nor, let me go. ¹¹ Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God."

¹² Then said they all, " Art thou, then, the Son of God? " And he said unto them, " Ye say, that I am."

¹³ And they said, " What need we any further witness? for, we ourselves have heard of his own mouth."

CHAPTER XXIII

¹ Jesus is accused before Pilate, and sent to Herod mocketh him. ⁸ Herod and Pilate are made friends. ¹³ Barabbas is desired of the people, and is loosed by Pilate, and Jesus is given to be crucified. ²¹ He calleth the women, that lament him, the destruction of Jerusalem: ³⁴ prayeth for his enemies. ³⁹ The evildoers are crucified with him. ⁴⁶ His death. ⁵⁰ His burial.

¹ And the whole multitude of them, arose, and led him unto Pilate.

² And they began, to accuse him, saying, " We found this fellow, perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cæsar, saying, that he himself is Christ, a King."

³ And Pilate asked him, saying, " Art thou the King of the Jews? "

And he answered him, and said, " Thou savest it."

⁴ Then said Pilate to the Chief Priests, and to the people, " I find no fault in this man."

⁵ And they were the more fierce, saying, " He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning from Galilee to this place."

⁶ When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked, whether the man were a Galilean. ⁷ And as soon as he knew, that he belonged unto Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself also, was at Jerusalem at that time.

⁸ And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad: for, he was desirous, to see him, of a long season, because, he had heard many things of him; and he hoped, to have seen some miracle done by him. ⁹ Then he questioned with him in many words; but, he answered him nothing. ¹⁰ And the

CHAPTER XXIII.

Chief Priests, and Scribes, stood, and vehemently accused him.
¹¹ And Herod, with his men of war, set him at nought, and mocked *him*, and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate.

¹² And the same day, Pilate, and Herod, were made friends together: for, before, they were at enmity between themselves.

¹³ And Pilate, when he had called together the Chief Priests, and the rulers, and the people, ¹⁴ said unto them, “Ye have brought this man unto me, as one, that perverteth the people: and, behold, I, having examined *him* before you, have found no fault in this man, touching those things, whereof ye accuse him: ¹⁵ no, nor yet Herod: for, I sent you to him; and, lo, nothing worthy of death, is done unto him. ¹⁶ I will, therefore, chastise him, and release *him*.
¹⁷ (For, of necessity, he must release one unto them at the feast.)

¹⁸ And they cried out, all at once, saying, “ Away with this man, and release unto us Barabbas: ” ¹⁹ (who, for a certain sedition, made in the city, and for murder, was cast into prison.)

²⁰ Pilate therefore, willing, to release Jesus, spake again to them.

²¹ But they cried, saying, “ Crucify *him*, crucify him.”

²² And he said unto them, the third time, “ Why, what evil hath he done? I have found no cause of death in him: I will, therefore, chastise him, and let *him* go.”

²³ And they were instant, with loud voices, requiring, that he might be crucified.

And the voices of them, and of the Chief Priests, prevailed.

²⁴ And Pilate, gave sentence, that it should be, as they required.

²⁵ And he released unto them him, that, for sedition, and murder, was cast into prison, whom they had desired; but, he delivered Jesus, to their will.

²⁶ And as they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon, a Cyrenian, coming out of the country, and on him they laid the cross, that he might bear *it* after Jesus.

²⁷ And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which, also, bewailed, and lamented *him*.

²⁸ But, Jesus, turning unto them, said, “ Daughters of Je-

“ rusalem, weep not for me, but, weep for yourselves, and for
 “ your children. “ For, behold, the days, are coming, in the
 “ which, they shall say, ‘ Blessed are the barren, and the
 “ wombs, that never bare, and the paps, which never gave
 “ suck.’ “ Then shall they begin, to say to the mountains,
 “ ‘ Fall on us;’ and to the hills, ‘ Cover us.’ “ For, if they
 “ do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the
 “ dry?”

“ And there were, also, two other, malefactors, led with
 him, to be put to death. “ And when they were come to the
 place, which is called Calvary, there they crucified him, and
 the malefactors, one, on the right hand, and the other, on
 the left.

“ Then said Jesus, “ Father, forgive them; for, they
 “ know not, what they do.”

And they parted his raiment, and cast lots.

“ And the people, stood beholding. And the rulers, also,
 with them, derided him, saying, “ He saved others; let him
 “ save himself, if he be Christ, the chosen of God.”

“ And the soldiers, also, mocked him, coming to him, and
 offering him vinegar, “ and saying, “ If thou be the King of
 “ the Jews, save thyself.”

“ And a superscription also, was written over him, in letters
 of Greek, and Latin, and Hebrew,—

“ THIS, IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.”

“ And one of the malefactors, which were hanged,
 railed on him, saying, “ If thou be Christ, save thyself, and us.”

“ But, the other, answering, rebuked him, saying, “ Dost
 “ not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condeinna-
 “ tion? “ And we indeed justly; for, we receive the due
 “ reward of our deeds: but, this man, hath done nothing
 “ amiss.” “ And he said unto Jesus, “ Lord, remember me,
 “ when thou comest into thy kingdom.”

“ And Jesus, said unto him, “ Verily I say unto thee, To-
 “ day, shalt thou be, with me, in paradise.”

“ And it was about the sixth hour, and there was a
 darkness over all the earth, until the ninth hour. “ And the
 sun, was darkened, and the veil of the temple, was rent in
 the midst.

“ And when Jesus, had cried with a loud voice, he said.

CHAPTER XXIV.

" Father, into Thy hands, I commend my spirit :" and having said thus, he gave up the ghost.

⁴⁷ Now, when the centurion, saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, " Certainly, this, was a righteous man."

⁴⁸ And all the people, that came together to that sight, beholding the things, which were done, smote their breasts, and returned. ⁴⁹ And all his acquaintance, and the women, that followed him from Galilee, stood afar off, beholding these things.

⁵⁰ And, behold, *there was* a man, named Joseph, a counsellor; *and he was* a good man, and a just : ⁵¹ (the same, had not consented to the counsel, and deed, of them;) *he was of Arimathæa*, a city of the Jews : who, also himself, waited for the kingdom of God. ⁵² This *man*, went unto Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus. ⁵³ And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulchre, that was hewn in stone, wherein, never man, before, was laid. ⁵⁴ And that day, was the preparation, and the sabbath, drew on. ⁵⁵ And the women, also, which came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body, was laid. ⁵⁶ And they returned, and prepared spices, and ointments ; and rested the sabbath day, according to the commandment.

CHAPTER XXIV.

¹ Christ's resurrection is declared by two angels to the women that come to the sepulchre. ⁹ These report it to others. ¹³ Christ himself appeareth to the two disciples that went to Emmaus : ³⁶ afterwards he appeareth to the apostles, and reproveth their unbelief : ⁴⁷ giveth them a charge : ⁴⁸ promiseth the Holy Ghost : ⁵¹ and so ascendeth into heaven.

¹ Now, upon the first *day* of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, (bringing the spices, which they had prepared,) and certain *others* with them. ² And they found, the stone rolled away from the sepulchre. ³ And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.

⁴ And, it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men, stood by them in shining garments : ⁵ and as they were afraid, and bowed down *their*

SAINT LUKE.

faces to the earth, they said unto them, " Why seek ye the living among the dead ? " He is not here, but, is risen : re-member, how he spake unto you, when he was yet in Galilee, ⁷ saying, ' The Son of man, must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and, the third day, " rise again."

⁸ And they remembered his words, ⁹ and returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest.—¹⁰ It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary *the mother* of James, and other *women*, *that were* with them, which told these things unto the apostles.—¹¹ And their words, seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.

¹² Then arose Peter, and ran unto the sepulchre ; and stooping down, he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves, and departed, wondering in himself, at that, which was come to pass.

¹³ And, behold, two of them, went, that same day, to a village called *Einmaus*, which was, from Jerusalem, *about* threescore furlongs. ¹⁴ And they talked together of all these things, which had happened. ¹⁵ And it came to pass, that, while they communed *together*, and reasoned, Jesus himself, drew near, and went with them. ¹⁶ But, their eyes, were holden, that they should not know him.

¹⁷ And he said unto them, " What manner of communications, *are* these, that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and " are sad ? "

¹⁸ And the one of them, whose name, was Cleopas, answering, said unto him, " Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, " and hast not known the things, which are come to pass " there, in these days ? "

¹⁹ And he said unto them, " What things ? "

And they said unto him, " Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, " which was a prophet, mighty in deed, and word, before God, " and all the people : " and how the Chief Priests, and our " rulers, delivered him, to be condemned to death, and have " crucified him. ²¹ But, we trusted, that it had been he, which " should have redeemed Israel : and, beside all this, to day, is " the third day, since these things, were done. ²² Yea, and " certain women, also of our company, made us astonished,

CHAPTER XXIV.

“ which were early at the sepulchre ; ²³ and when they found “ not his body, they came, saying, that they had, also, seen a “ vision of angels, which said, that he was alive. ²⁴ And cer- “ tain of them, which were with us, went to the sepulchre, “ and found it, even so, as the women, had said : but, him they “ saw not.”

²⁵ Then he said unto them, “ O, fools, and slow of heart, “ to believe all, that the prophets, have spoken : ²⁶ ought not “ Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his “ glory ? ”—²⁷ And, beginning at Moses, and all the prophets, he expounded unto them, in all the Scriptures, the things concerning himself.

²⁸ And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went : and he made, as though he would have gone further. ²⁹ But, they constrained him, saying, “ Abide with us : “ for, it is toward evening, and the day, is far spent.”

And he went in, to tarry with them. ³⁰ And, it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them. ³¹ And their eyes, were opened, and they knew him ; and he vanished out of their sight.

³² And they said one to another, “ Did not our heart “ burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and “ while he opened to us the Scriptures ? ”

³³ And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them, that were with them, ³⁴ saying, “ The Lord, is risen indeed, and “ hath appeared to Simon.” ³⁵ And they told, what things, *were done* in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

³⁶ And as they thus spake, Jesus himself, stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, “ Peace *be* unto you.”

³⁷ But, they were terrified, and affrighted, and supposed, that they had seen a spirit.

³⁸ And he said unto them, “ Why are ye troubled ? and “ why do thoughts arise in your hearts ? ³⁹ Behold my hands, “ and my feet, that it is I myself : handle me, and see : for, a “ spirit, hath not flesh, and bones, as ye see me have.”—⁴⁰ And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them *his* hands, and *his* feet.

⁴¹ And, while they yet believed not, for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, “ Have ye here any meat ? ”

SAINT LUKE.

⁴² And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an honeycomb. ⁴³ And he took it, and did eat before them.

⁴⁴ And he said unto them, " These, *are* the words, which " I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things, " must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, " and *in* the Prophets, and *in* the Psalms, concerning me."

⁴⁵ Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the Scriptures, ⁴⁶ and said unto them, " Thus it is " written, and thus, it behoved Christ, to suffer, and to rise from " the dead the third day: ⁴⁷ and that repentance, and remis- " sion of sins, should be preached, in his name, among all " nations, beginning at Jerusalem. ⁴⁸ And ye are witnesses " of these things. ⁴⁹ And, behold, I send the promise of my " Father upon you: but, tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, " until ye be endued with power from on high."

⁵⁰ And he led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. ⁵¹ And, it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.

⁵² And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy: ⁵³ and were continually in the temple, praising, and blessing God. Amen.

TABLE OF QUOTATIONS, &c.

ILLUSTRATIVE OF THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. LUKE.

CHAPTER I. Verse 10—Leviticus, xvi. 17. Verse 33.—Daniel, vii. 13, 14. Verse 54—Isaiah, xli. 8, 9. Verse 55—Genesis, xvii. 19. Verse 73—Genesis, xxii. 16.

CHAPTER II. Verses 21, 22—Leviticus, xiii. 2, 3, 4. Verse 23—Exodus, xiii. 2, xxii. 29, and Numbers, viii. 16, 17. Verse 24—Leviticus, xiii. 6. Verse 31—Isaiah, viii. 14, 15.

CHAPTER III. Verses 4—6—Isaiah, xl. 3—5.

CHAPTER IV. Verse 4—Deuteronomy, viii. 3. Verse 8—Deuteronomy, vi. 13, and x. 20. Verses 10, 11—Psalm, xcii. 11. Verse 12—Deuteronomy, vi. 16. Verses 18, 19—Isaiah, lxi. 1. Verses 25, 26—1 Kings, xvii. 1—9. Verse 27—2 Kings, v. 14.

CHAPTER V. Verse 14—Leviticus, xiv. 4, &c.

CHAPTER VI. Verses, 3, 4—1 Samuel, xxi. 6.

CHAPTER VII. Verse 27—Malachi, iii. 1.

CHAPTER X. Verse 4—2 Kings, iv. 29. Verse 27—Deuteronomy, vi. 5, and Leviticus, xix. 18. Verse 28—Leviticus, xviii. 5.

CHAPTER XI. Verse 31—1 Kings, x. 1. Verse 32—Jonah, iii. 5. Verse 51—Genesis, iv. 8, and 2 Chronicles, xxiv. 21, 22.

CHAPTER XIII. Verse 35—Psalm, cxviii. 26.

CHAPTER XIV. Verse 8—Proverbs, xxv. 6.

CHAPTER XVII. Verse 27—Genesis, vii. 7. Verse 29—Genesis, xix. 15. Verse 32—Genesis, xix. 26.

CHAPTER XVIII. Verse 20—Exodus, xx. 12.

CHAPTER XIX. Verse 46—Isaiah, lvi. 7, and Jeremiah, vii. 11.

CHAPTER XX. Verse 17—Psalm, cxviii. 22. Verse 18—Daniel, ii. 31, 35. Verse 28—Deuteronomy, xxv. 5. Verse 37—Exodus, iii. 6. Verses 42, 43—Psalm, cx. 1.

CHAPTER XXII. Verse 37—Isaiah, liii. 12.

CHAPTER XXIII. Verse 29—Isaiah, liv. 1. Verse 30—Hosca, x. 8.

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. JOHN.

NOTE.—This Gospel was written at Ephesus, about A. D. 63

CHAPTER I.

1 *The divinity, humanity, and office of Jesus Christ.* **15** *The testimony of John.* **39** *The calling of Andrew, Peter, &c.*

1 IN the beginning, was the Word, and the Word, was with God, and the Word, was God. **2** The same, was in the beginning with God. **3** All things, were made by him ; and, without him, was not any thing made, that was made. **4** In him was life ; and the life, was the light of men. **5** And the light, shineth in darkness ; and the darkness, comprehended it not.

6 There was a man, sent from God, whose name, was John. **7** The same, came, for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all *men*, through him, might believe. **8** He was not that Light, but, *was sent*, to bear witness of that Light. **9** *That* was the true Light, which lighteth every man, that cometh into the world. **10** He was in the world, and the world, was made by him, and the world, knew him not. **11** He came unto his own, and his own, received him not. **12** But, as many, as received him, to them gave he power, to become the sons of God, *even* to them, that believe on his name : **13** which were born, not of blood, nor, of the will of the flesh, nor, of the will of man, but, of God.

14 And the Word, was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace, and truth. **15** John, bare witness of him, and cried, saying, “ This, was he, of whom I spake,

CHAPTER I.

“ ‘ He, that cometh after me, is preferred before me : for, he
“ ‘ was before me.’ ”

¹⁶ And of his fulness, have all we received, and grace for grace. ¹⁷ For, the law, was given by Moses, *but*, grace, and truth, came by Jesus Christ. ¹⁸ No man, hath seen God at any time ; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared *Him*.

¹⁹ And this, is the record of John, when the Jews, sent Priests, and Levites, from Jerusalem, to ask him, “ Who art thou ? ”

²⁰ And he confessed, and denied not ; but, confessed, “ I am not the Christ.”

²¹ And they asked him, “ What then ? Art thou Elias ? ”

And he saith, “ I am not.”

“ Art thou that prophet ? ”

And he answered, “ No.”

²² Then said they unto him, “ Who art thou ? that we may give an answer to them, that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself ? ”

²³ He said, “ I am ‘ the voice of one, crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord,’ as said the prophet Esaias.”

²⁴ And they, which were sent, were of the Pharisees.

²⁵ And they asked him, and said unto him, “ Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor, Elias, neither, that prophet ? ”

²⁶ John, answered them, saying, “ I baptize with water : but, there standeth one among you, whom ye know not ; ²⁷ he it is, who, coming after me, is preferred before me, whose shoe’s latchet, I am not worthy, to unloose.”

²⁸ These things, were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where John, was baptizing.

²⁹ The next day, John, seeth Jesus, coming unto him, and saith, “ Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world. ³⁰ This, is he, of whom I said, “ After me, cometh a man, which is preferred before me : for, he was before me.” ³¹ And I knew him not : but, that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore, am I come, baptizing with water.”

³² And John, bare record, saying, “ I saw the Spirit, descending from heaven, like a dove, and it abode upon him. ³³ And I knew him not: but, He, that sent me, to baptize with water, the same, said unto me, ‘ Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit, descending, and REMAINING on him, the same, is he, which baptizeth with the Holy Ghost.’ ³⁴ And I saw, and bare record, that this, is the Son of God.”

³⁵ Again, the next day after, John, stood, and two of his disciples; ³⁶ and, looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith, “ Behold the Lamb of God ! ”—³⁷ And the two disciples, heard him speak, and they followed Jesus.

³⁸ Then Jesus, turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them, “ What seek ye ? ”

They said unto him, “ Rabbi,” (which is to say, being interpreted, Master,) “ where dwellest thou ? ”

³⁹ He saith unto them, “ Come, and see.”

They came, and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for, it was about the tenth hour.

⁴⁰ One of the two, which heard John speak, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peter’s brother. ⁴¹ He, first, findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him, “ We have found the Messias,” which is, being interpreted, the Christ.—⁴² And he brought him to Jesus.

And when Jesus, beheld him, he said, “ Thou art Simon the son of Jona: thou shalt be called Cephas,” which is, by interpretation, A stone.

⁴³ The day following, Jesus, would go forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith unto him, “ Follow me.”

⁴⁴ Now, Philip, was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew, and Peter. ⁴⁵ Philip, findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, “ We have found him, of whom, Moses, in the Law, and the Prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph.”

⁴⁶ And Nathanael, said unto him, “ Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth ? ”

Philip, saith unto him, “ Come, and see.”

⁴⁷ Jesus, saw Nathanael, coming to him, and saith of him, “ Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom, is no guile ! ”

⁴⁸ Nathanael, saith unto him, “ Whence knowest thou me ? ”

Jesus, answered, and said unto him, “ Before that Philip, called thee, when thou wast under the fig tree, I saw thee.”

CHAPTER II.

⁴⁹ Nathanael answered, and saith unto him, “ Rabbi, thou art the Son of God ; thou art the King of Israel.”

⁵⁰ Jesus answered, and said unto him, “ Because I said unto thee, ‘ I saw thee under the fig tree,’ believest thou ? “ thou shalt see greater things than these.” ⁵¹ And he saith unto him, “ Verily, verily, I say unto you, Hereafter, ye shall “ see heaven open, and the angels of God, ascending, and “ descending, upon the Son of man.”

CHAPTER II.

1 Christ turneth water into wine, 12 departeth into Capernaum, and to Jerusalem, 14 where he purgeth the temple of buyers and sellers. 19 He foretelleth his death and resurrection. 23 Many believed because of his miracles, but he would not trust himself with them.

¹ And the third day, there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee ; and the mother of Jesus, was there : ² and both Jesus, was called, and his disciples, to the marriage.

³ And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus, saith unto him, “ They have no wine.”

⁴ Jesus, saith unto her, “ Woman, what have I to do with “ thee ? mine hour, is not yet come.”

⁵ His mother, saith unto the servants, “ Whatsoever he “ saith unto you, do it.”—⁶ And there were set there six waterpots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or threec firkins apiece.

⁷ Jesus, saith unto them, “ Fill the waterpots with water.”—And they filled them up to the brim.—⁸ And he saith unto them, “ Draw out now, and bear unto the governor of the “ feast.”—And they bare it.

⁹ When the ruler of the feast, had tasted the water, that was made wine, and knew not, whence it was : (but, the servants, which drew the water, knew :) the governor of the feast, called the bridegroom, ¹⁰ and saith unto him, “ Every “ man, at the beginning, doth set forth good wine ; and when “ men, have well drunk, then that, which is worse : but, thou “ hast kept the good wine until now.”

¹¹ This beginning of miracles, did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his glory ; and his disciples, believed on him. ¹² After this, he went down to Capernaum,

SAINT JOHN.

he, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples : and they continued there not many days.

¹³ And the Jews' Passover was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem, ¹⁴ and found in the temple, those, that sold oxen, and sheep, and doves, and the changers of money, sitting : ¹⁵ and, when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen ; and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables ; ¹⁶ and said unto them, that sold doves, " Take these things hence ; make not my Father's house an house " of merchandise."—¹⁷ And his disciples, remembered, that it was written, " The zeal of thine house, hath eaten me up."

¹⁸ Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, " What " sign shewest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these " things ? "

¹⁹ Jesus, answered, and said unto them, " Destroy this tem- " ple, and, in three days, I will raise it up."

²⁰ Then said the Jews, " Forty and six years, was this tem- " ple in building, and wilt thou rear it up, in three days ? "

²¹ But, he spake of the temple of his body.—²² When, therefore, he was risen from the dead, his disciples, remembered, that he had said this unto them ; and they believed the Scripture, and the word, which Jesus, had said.

²³ Now, when he was in Jerusalem at the Passover, in the feast day, many, believed in his name, when they saw the miracles, which he did. ²⁴ But, Jesus, did not commit himself unto them, because, he knew all men, ²⁵ and needed not, that any, should testify of man : for, he knew, what was in man.

CHAPTER III.

¹ Christ teacheth Nicodemus the necessity of regeneration. ¹⁴ Of faith in his death. ¹⁶ The great love of God towards the world.

¹⁸ Condemnation for unbelief. ²³ The baptism, witness, and doctrine of John concerning Christ.

¹ There was a man, of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews : ² the same, came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, " Rabbi, we know, that thou art a teacher

CHAPTER III.

“ come from God : for, no man, can do these miracles, that
“ thou doest, except, God, be with him.”

³ Jesus, answered, and said unto him, “ Verily, verily, I
“ say unto thee, Except a man, be born again, he cannot see
“ the kingdom of God.”

⁴ Nicodemus, saith unto him, “ How can a man be born,
“ when he is old ? can he enter, the second time, into his
“ mother’s womb, and be born ? ”

⁵ Jesus, answered, “ Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except
“ a man, be born of water, and *of* the Spirit, he cannot enter
“ into the kingdom of God. ⁶ That, which is born of the
“ flesh, is flesh ; and that, which is born of the Spirit, is spi-
“ rit. ⁷ Marvel not, that I said unto thee, ‘ Ye must be
“ born again.’ ⁸ The wind, bloweth where it listeth, and
“ thou hearest the sound thereof, but, canst not tell, whence
“ it cometh, and whither it goeth : so, is every one, that is
“ born of the Spirit.”

⁹ Nicodemus, answered, and said unto him, “ How can
“ these things be ? ”

¹⁰ Jesus, answered, and said unto him, “ Art thou a master
“ of Israel, and knowest not these things ? ¹¹ Verily, verily,
“ I say unto thee, We speak that, we do know, and testify that,
“ we have seen ; and ye receive not our witness. ¹² If I have
“ told you EARTHLY things, and ye believe not, how shall
“ ye believe, if I tell you *of* HEAVENLY things ? ¹³ And no
“ man, hath ascended up to heaven, but he, that came down
“ from heaven, *even* the Son of man, which is in heaven.
¹⁴ And as Moses, lifted up the serpent in the wilderness,
“ even so, must the Son of man be lifted up : ¹⁵ that whosoever
“ believeth in him, should not perish, but, have eternal life.

¹⁶ “ For, God, so loved the world, that He gave His only
“ begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him, should not
“ perish, but, have everlasting life. ¹⁷ For, God, sent not His
“ Son into the world, to condemn the world ; but, that the
“ world, through him, might be saved. ¹⁸ He, that believeth
“ on him, is not condemned : but, he, that believeth not, is
“ condemned already, because, he hath not believed, in the
“ name of the only begotten Son of God. ¹⁹ And this, is the
“ condemnation, that light, is come into the world, and men,
“ loved darkness rather than light, because, their deeds, were
“ evil. ²⁰ For, every one, that doeth evil, hateth the light,

SAINT JOHN.

“neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds, should be reproved.
“²¹ But, he, that doeth truth, cometh to the light, that his
“deeds, may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.”

²² After these things, came Jesus, and his disciples, into the land of Judæa; and, there, he tarried with them, and baptized.

²³ And John, also, was baptizing in Ænon, near to Salim, because, there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized. ²⁴ For, John, was not yet cast into prison.

²⁵ Then, there arose a question between *some* of John’s disciples, and the Jews, about purifying. ²⁶ And they came unto John, and said unto him, “Rabbi, he, that was with “thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou barest witness, behold, “the same, baptizeth, and all *men*, come to him.”

²⁷ John, answered, and said, “A man, can receive nothing, “except it be given him from heaven. ²⁸ Ye yourselves bear “me witness, that I said, ‘I am not the Christ,’ but that “‘I am sent before him.’ ²⁹ He, that hath the bride, is the “bridegroom: but, the friend of the bridegroom, which stand-“eth, and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly, because of the bride-“groom’s voice: this, my joy, therefore, is fulfilled. ³⁰ He “must increase, but, I *must* decrease. ³¹ He, that cometh “from above, is above all: he, that is of the earth, is earthly, “and speaketh of the earth: he, that cometh from heaven, is “above all. ³² And what he hath seen, and heard, that he “testifieth; and no man, receiveth his testimony. ³³ He, that “hath received his testimony, hath set to his seal, that God, is “true. ³⁴ For, he, whom God, hath sent, speaketh the WORDS “of God: for, God, giveth not the Spirit by measure *unto* him. ³⁵ The Father, loveth the Son, and hath given all things into “his hand. ³⁶ He, that believeth on the Son, hath everlasting “life: and he, that believeth not the Son, shall not see life; “but, the wrath of God, abideth on him.”

CHAPTER IV.

¹ *Christ talketh with a woman of Samaria, and revealeth himself unto her. 21 His disciples marvel. 31 He declareth to them his zeal to God’s glory. 39 Many Samaritans believe on him. 43 He departeth into Galilee, and healeth the ruler’s son that lay sick at Cupernaum.*

CHAPTER IV.

¹ When, therefore, the Lord knew how the Pharisees, had heard, that Jesus made, and baptized, more disciples than John, ² (though Jesus himself, baptized not, but his disciples,) ³ he left Judæa, and departed again into Galilee. ⁴ And he must needs go through Samaria. ⁵ Then cometh he to a city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground, that Jacob, gave to his son Joseph. ⁶ Now, Jacob's well, was there. Jesus, therefore, being wearied with his journey, sat thus on the well: *and* it was about the sixth hour.

⁷ There cometh a woman of Samaria, to draw water: Jesus, saith unto her, "Give me to drink." (⁸ For, his disciples, were gone away unto the city, to buy meat.)

⁹ Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, "How is it, "that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a "woman of Samaria? for, the Jews, have no dealings with "the Samaritans."

¹⁰ Jesus, answered, and said unto her, "If thou knewest the "gift of God, and who it is, that saith to thee, 'Give me to "drink;' thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would "have given thee living water."

¹¹ The woman, saith unto him, "Sir, thou hast nothing, to "draw with, and the well, is deep: from whence, then, hast "thou that living water? ¹² Art thou greater than our father "Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, "and his children, and his cattle?"

¹³ Jesus, answered, and said unto her, "Whosoever drink- "eth of this water, shall thirst again: ¹⁴ but, whosoever drink- "eth of the water, that I shall give him, shall never thirst; "but, the water, that I shall give him, shall be, in him, a well "of water, springing up into everlasting life."

¹⁵ The woman, saith unto him, "Sir, give me this water, "that I thirst not, neither, come hither, to draw."

¹⁶ Jesus, saith unto her, "Go, call thy husband, and come "hither."

¹⁷ The woman, answered, and said, "I have no husband." Jesus, said unto her, "Thou hast well said, 'I have no "husband:' ¹⁸ for, thou hast had five husbands; and he, "whom thou now hast, is not thy husband: in that, saidst "thou truly."

¹⁹ The woman, saith unto him, "Sir, I perceive, that thou

“ art a prophet. ²⁰ Our fathers, worshipped in this mountain ; and ye say, that in Jerusalem, is the place, where “ men, ought, to worship.”

²¹ Jesus, saith unto her, “ Woman, believe me, the hour, “ cometh, when ye shall, neither, in this mountain, nor yet, “ at Jerusalem, worship the Father. ²² Ye worship, ye know “ not what : we know, what we worship : for, salvation, is of “ the Jews. ²³ But, the hour, cometh, and now is, when the “ true worshippers, shall worship the Father, in spirit, and in “ truth : for, the Father, seeketh such, to worship Him. ²⁴ God, is a Spirit : and they, that worship Him, MUST “ worship Him, in spirit, and in truth.”

²⁵ The woman, saith unto him, “ I know, that Messias, “ cometh, which is called Christ : when he is come, he will “ tell us all things.”

²⁶ Jesus, saith unto her, “ I, that speak unto thee, am he.”

²⁷ And upon this, came his disciples, and marvelled, that he talked with the woman : yet, no man, said, “ What seek- “ est thou ? ” or, “ Why talkest thou with her ? ”

²⁸ The woman, then left her waterpot, and went her way into the city, and saith to the men, ²⁹ “ Come, see a “ man, which told me all things, that ever I did : is not this, “ the Christ ? ” —³⁰ Then they went out of the city, and came unto him.

³¹ In the mean while, his disciples, prayed him, saying, “ Master, eat.”

³² But, he said unto them, “ I have meat, to eat, that ye “ know not of.”

³³ Therefore, said the disciples one to another, “ Hath any “ man brought him *ought*, to eat ? ”

³⁴ Jesus, saith unto them, “ My meat, is to do the will of “ Him, that sent me, and to finish His work. ³⁵ Say not ye, “ ‘ There are yet four months, and *then*, cometh harvest ? ’ “ behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the “ fields ; for, they are white, already, to harvest. ³⁶ And he, “ that reapeth, receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life “ eternal : that both he, that soweth, and he, that reapeth, “ may rejoice together. ³⁷ And herein, is that saying true, “ ‘ One, soweth, and another, reapeth.’ ³⁸ I sent you, to reap “ that, whereon ye bestowed no labour : other men, laboured, “ and ye are entered into their labours.”

CHAPTER IV.

³⁹ And many of the Samaritans of that city, believed on him, for the saying of the woman, which testified, “ He “ told me all, that ever I did.” ⁴⁰ So, when the Samaritans, were come unto him, they besought him, that he would tarry with them: and he abode there two days. ⁴¹ And many more, believed, because of his own word; ⁴² and said unto the woman, “ Now, we believe, not because of thy saying: “ for, we have heard *him* OURSELVES, and know, that this, “ is, indeed, the Christ, the Saviour of the world.”

⁴³ Now, after two days, he departed thence, and went into Galilee. ⁴⁴ For, Jesus himself, testified, that a prophet, hath no honour in his own country. ⁴⁵ Then, when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans, received him, having seen all the things, that he did at Jerusalem at the feast: for, they, also, went unto the feast.

⁴⁶ So, Jesus, came again into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine. And there was a certain nobleman, whose son, was sick at Capernaum. ⁴⁷ When he heard, that Jesus, was come out of Judæa into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him, that he would come down, and heal his son: for, he was at the point of death.

⁴⁸ Then said Jesus unto him, “ Except ye see signs, and “ wonders, ye will not believe.”

⁴⁹ The nobleman, saith unto him, “ Sir, come down, ere my “ child, die.”

⁵⁰ Jesus, saith unto him, “ Go thy way; thy son, liveth.” —And the man, believed the word, that Jesus, had spoken unto him, and he went his way.

⁵¹ And as he was now going down, his servants, met him, and told *him*, saying, “ Thy son, liveth.” —⁵² Then enquired he of them, the hour, when he began, to amend.—And they said unto him, “ Yesterday, at the seventh hour, the “ fever, left him.”

⁵³ So, the father, knew, that *it was* at the same hour, in the which, Jesus, said unto him, “ Thy son, liveth:” and himself believed, and his whole house.

⁵⁴ This, is again the second miracle, that Jesus, did, when he was come out of Judæa into Galilee.

CHAPTER V.

1 Jesus on the sabbath day cureth him that was diseased eight and thirty years. 10 The Jews therefore cavil, and persecute him for it. 17 He answereth for himself, and reproveth them, shewing by the testimony of his Father, 32 of John, 36 of his works, 39 and of the Scriptures, who he is.

¹ After this, there was a feast of the Jews; and Jesus, went up to Jerusalem.

² Now, there is at Jerusalem, by the sheep market, a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue, Bethesda, having five porches. ³ In these, lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting, for the moving of the water. ⁴ For, an angel, went down, at a certain season, into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then, first, after the troubling of the water, stepped in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.—⁵ And a certain man, was there, which had an infirmitiy thirty and eight years.

⁶ When Jesus, saw him lie, and knew, that he had been, now, a long time *in that case*, he saith unto him, “ Wilt thou “ be made whole ? ”

⁷ The impotent man, answered him, “ Sir, I have no man, “ when the water, is troubled, to put me into the pool: but, “ while I am coming, another, steppeth down before me.”

⁸ Jesus, saith unto him, “ Rise, take up thy bed, and walk.”

⁹ And immedately, the man, was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked: and on the same day, was the sabbath.

¹⁰ The Jews, therefore, said unto him, that was cured, “ It is “ the sabbath day: it is not lawful, for thee to carry *thy* bed.”

¹¹ He answered them, “ He, that made me whole, the “ same, said unto me, ‘ Take up thy bed, and walk.’ ”

¹² Then asked they him, “ What man, is that, which said “ unto thee, ‘ Take up thy bed, and walk ? ’ ”

¹³ And he, that was healed, wist not, who it was: for, Jesus, had conveyed himself away, a multitude, being in *that* place.

¹⁴ Afterward, Jesus, findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, “ Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, “ lest a worse thing, come unto thee.”

¹⁵ The man, departed, and told the Jews, that it was Jesus, which had made him whole. ¹⁶ And therefore, did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought, to slay him, because, he had done these things on the sabbath day.

CHAPTER V.

¹⁷ But, Jesus, answered them, " My Father, worketh hither-
" to, and I work."

¹⁸ Therefore, the Jews, sought the more, to kill him, because,
he not only had broken the sabbath, but, said also, that God,
was his Father, making himself EQUAL with God.

¹⁹ Then answered Jesus, and said unto them, " Verily,
" verily, I say unto you, The Son, can do nothing of himself,
" but, what he seeth the Father do : for, what things soever
" He doeth, these, also, doeth the Son likewise. ²⁰ For, the
" Father, loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things, that
" Himself doeth : and He will shew him greater works than
" these, that ye may marvel. ²¹ For, as the Father, raiseth up
" the dead, and quickeneth *them* ; even so, the Son, quick-
" eneth whom he will. ²² For, the Father, judgeth no man,
" but, hath committed all judgment unto the Son : ²³ that all
" men, should honour the Son, even as they honour the Fa-
" ther. He, that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the
" Father, which hath sent him. ²⁴ Verily, verily, I say unto
" you, He, that heareth my word, and believeth on Hin, that
" sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into con-
" demnation ; but, is passed from death unto life.

²⁵ " Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour, is coming,
" and now is, when the dead, shall hear the voice of the Son
" of God : and they, that hear, shall live. ²⁶ For, as the
" Father, hath life in Himself ; so, hath He given to the Son,
" to have life in himself ; ²⁷ and hath given him authority, to
" execute judgment also, because, he is the Son of man.
" ²⁸ Marvel not at this : for, the hour, is coming, in the which,
" all, that are in the graves, shall hear his voice, ²⁹ and shall
" come forth ; they, that have done good, unto the resurrec-
" tion of life ; and they, that have done evil, unto the resur-
" rection of damnation.

³⁰ " I can, of mine own self, do nothing : as I hear, I judge :
" and my judgment, is just ; because, I seek not mine own
" will, but, the will of the Father, which hath sent me. ³¹ If
" I bear witness of myself, my witness, is not true. ³² There
" is another, that beareth witness of me ; and I know, that the
" witness, which he witnesseth of me, is true. ³³ Ye sent
" unto John, and he bare witness unto the truth. ³⁴ But, I
" receive not testimony from man : but, these things I say,
" that ye might be saved. ³⁵ He was a burning, and a shining

SAINT JOHN.

“ light : and ye were willing, for a season, to rejoice in his
“ light. ³⁶ But, I have greater witness than *that* of John :
“ for, the works, which the Father, hath given me, to finish,
“ —the same works, that I do,—bear witness of me, that the
“ Father, hath sent me. ³⁷ And the Father himself, which
“ hath sent me, hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither
“ heard His voice at any time, nor, seen His shape. ³⁸ And
“ ye have not His word abiding in you : for, whom He hath
“ sent, him ye believe not.

³⁹ “ Search the Scriptures ; for, in them, ye think ye have
“ eternal life : and they are they, which testify of me. ⁴⁰ And
“ ye will not come to me, that ye might have life. ⁴¹ I re-
“ ceive not honour from men. ⁴² But, I know you, that ye
“ have not the love of God in you. ⁴³ I am come, in my
“ Father’s name, and ye receive me not : if another, shall
“ come in his own name, him ye will receive. ⁴⁴ How can
“ ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek
“ not the honour, that *cometh* from God only ? ⁴⁵ Do not
“ think, that I will accuse you to the Father : there is *one*,
“ that accuseth you, *even* Moses, in whom ye trust. ⁴⁶ For,
“ had ye believed MOSES, ye would have believed ME : for,
“ he WROTE of ME. ⁴⁷ But, if ye believe not his WRITINGS,
“ how shall ye believe MY WORDS ? ”

CHAPTER VI.

1 Christ feedeth five thousand men with five loaves and two fishes.
15 Thereupon the people would have made him king. **16** But withdrawning himself, he walked on the sea to his disciples : **26** reproveth the people flocking after him, and all the fleshly hearers of his word : **32** declareth himself to be the bread of life to believers. **68** Many disciples depart from him. **70** Peter confesseth him. **70** Judas is a devil.

¹ After these things, Jesus, went over the sea of Galilee, which is *the sea* of Tiberias. ² And a great multitude, followed him, because, they saw his miracles, which he did on them, that were diseased. ³ And Jesus, went up into a mountain, and there, he sat with his disciples.—⁴ And the Passover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh.

⁵ When Jesus, then, lifted up *his* eyes, and saw a great company come unto him, he saith unto Philip, “ Whence,

CHAPTER VI.

" shall we buy bread, that these, may eat ? "—⁶ And this, he said, to prove him : for, he himself knew, what he would do.

⁷ Philip, answered him, " Two hundred pennyworth of bread, is not sufficient for them, that every one of them, may take a little."

⁸ One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him, ⁹ " There is a lad here, which hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes : but, what are they among so many ? "

¹⁰ And Jesus, said, " Make the men sit down."

Now, there was much grass in the place. So, the men, sat down, in number about five thousand.

¹¹ And Jesus, took the loaves ; and, when he had given thanks, he distributed to the disciples, and the disciples, to them, that were set down ; and likewise, of the fishes as much as they would. ¹² When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, " Gather up the fragments, that remain, that nothing, be lost."—¹³ Therefore, they gathered *them* together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley loaves, which remained, over and above, unto them, that had eaten.

¹⁴ Then those men, when they had seen the miracle, that Jesus, did, said, " This, is, of a truth, that prophet, that should come into the world."—¹⁵ When Jesus, therefore, perceived, that they would come, and take him, by force, to make him a king, he departed, again, into a mountain himself alone.

¹⁶ And when even, was now come, his disciples, went down unto the sea, ¹⁷ and entered into a ship, and went over the sea toward Capernaum. And it was now dark, and Jesus, was not come to them. ¹⁸ And the sea, arose by reason of a great wind, that blew. ¹⁹ So, when they had rowed about five and twenty or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus, walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship : and they were afraid.

²⁰ But, he saith unto them, " It is I ; be not afraid."

²¹ Then they willingly received him into the ship : and immediately, the ship, was at the land, whither they went.

²² The day following, when the people, which stood on the other side of the sea, saw, that there was none other boat there, save that one, whereinto, his disciples, were entered, and that Jesus, went not with his disciples into the boat, but

that his disciples, were gone away alone ; ²³ (howbeit, there came other boats from Tiberias, nigh unto the place, where they did eat bread, after that the Lord, had given thanks :) ²⁴ when the people therefore, saw, that Jesus, was not there, neither, his disciples, they, also, took shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus. ²⁵ And when they had found him, on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, “ Rabbi, when camest thou hither ? ”

²⁶ Jesus, answered them, and said, “ Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, “ but, because, ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled. “ ²⁷ Labour not for the meat, which perisheth, but, for that “ meat, which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son “ of man, shall give unto you : for, him hath God the Father “ sealed.”

²⁸ Then said they unto him, “ What shall we do, that we “ might work the works of God ? ”

²⁹ Jesus, answered, and said unto them, “ This, is the work “ of God, that ye believe on him, whom He hath sent.”

³⁰ They said, therefore, unto him, “ What sign, shewest thou “ then, that we may see, and believe thee ? what dost thou “ work ? ³¹ Our fathers, did eat manna in the desert ; as it “ is written, ‘ He gave them bread, from heaven, to eat.’ ”

³² Then Jesus, said unto them, “ Verily, verily, I say unto “ you, Moses, gave you not that bread from heaven ; but, my “ Father, giveth you the true bread from heaven. ³³ For, the “ bread of God, is he, which cometh down from heaven, and “ giveth life unto the world.”

³⁴ Then said they unto him, “ Lord, evermore, give us this “ bread.”

³⁵ And Jesus, said unto them, “ I am the bread of life : he, “ that cometh to me, shall never hunger ; and he, that be- “ lieveth on me, shall never thirst. ³⁶ But, I said unto you, “ That ye, also, have seen me, and believe not. ³⁷ All, that “ the Father, giveth me, shall come to me ; and him, that “ cometh to me, I will, in no wise, cast out. ³⁸ For, I came “ down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but, the will “ of Him, that sent me. ³⁹ And this, is the Father’s will, “ which hath sent me, that of all, which He hath given “ me, I should lose nothing, but, should raise it up again at “ the last day. ⁴⁰ And this, is the will of Him, that sent me,

CHAPTER VI.

“ that every one, which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, “ may have everlasting life : and I will raise him up at the “ last day.”

“ The Jews, then murmured at him, because he said, “ I “ am the bread, which came down from heaven.” “ And they said, “ Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose “ father, and mother, we know ? how is it, then, that he saith, “ ‘ I came down from heaven ? ’ ”

“ Jesus, therefore, answered, and said unto them, “ Mur- “ mur not among yourselves. “ No man, can come to me, “ except the Father, which hath sent me, draw him : and I “ will raise him up at the last day. “ It is written in the “ prophets, ‘ And they shall be all taught of God.’ Every “ man, therefore, that hath heard, and hath learned of the “ Father, cometh unto me. “ Not that any man, hath seen “ the Father, save he, which is of God, he hath seen the “ Father. “ Verily, verily, I say unto you, He, that believeth “ on me, hath everlasting life. “ I am that bread of life. “ Your fathers, did eat manna in the wilderness, and are “ dead. “ This, is the bread, which cometh down from hea- “ ven, that a man, may eat thereof, and not die. “ I am the “ living bread, which came down from heaven : if any man “ eat of this bread, he shall live for ever : and the bread, that “ I will give, is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the “ world.”

“ The Jews, therefore, strove among themselves, saying, “ How can this man give us *his* flesh, to eat ? ”

“ Then Jesus, said unto them, “ Verily, verily, I say unto “ you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink “ his blood, ye have no life in you. “ Whoso eateth my “ flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life ; and I will “ raise him up at the last day. “ For, my flesh, is meat “ indeed, and my blood, is drink indeed. “ He, that eateth “ my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in “ him. “ As the living Father, hath sent me, and I live by “ the Father : so, he, that eateth me, even he, shall live by “ me. “ This, is that bread, which came down from heaven : “ not as your fathers, did eat manna, and are dead : he, that “ eateth of this bread, shall live for ever.”

“ These things, said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

⁶⁰ Many, therefore, of his disciples, when they had heard *this*, said, " This, is an hard saying ; who can hear it ? "

⁶¹ When Jesus, knew in himself, that his disciples, murmured at it, he said unto them, " Doth this offend you ? "⁶² *What*, and if ye shall see the Son of man, ascend up " where he was before ? "⁶³ It is the spirit, that quickeneth ; " the flesh, profiteth nothing : the words, that I speak unto " you, *they* are spirit, and *they* are life. ⁶⁴ But, there are " some of you, that believe not." (For, Jesus, knew, from the beginning, who they were, that believed not, and who should betray him.) ⁶⁵ And he said, " Therefore, said I unto " you, that no man, can come unto me, except it were given " unto him of my Father."

⁶⁶ From that *time*, many of his disciples, went back, and walked no more with him.

⁶⁷ Then said Jesus unto the twelve, " Will ye, also, go " away ? "

⁶⁸ Then Simon Peter, answered him, " Lord, to whom shall " we go ? thou hast the words of eternal life. ⁶⁹ And we " believe, and are sure, that thou art that Christ, the Son of " the living God."

⁷⁰ Jesus, answered them, " Have not I chosen you twelve, " and one of you, is a devil ? " —⁷¹ He spake of Judas Isca-riot *the son of Simon* : for, he it was, that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

CHAPTER VII.

¹ *Jesus reproveth the ambition and boldness of his kinsmen : 10 goeth up from Galilee to the feast of tabernacles : 14 teacheth in the temple. 40 Divers opinions of him among the people. 45 The Pharisees are angry that their officers took him not, and chide with Nicodemus for taking his part.*

¹ After these things, Jesus, walked in Galilee : for, he would not walk in Jewry, because, the Jews, sought, to kill him.

² Now, the Jews' feast of tabernacles, was at hand.

³ His brethren, therefore, said unto him, " Depart hence, and " go into Judæa, that thy disciples, also, may see the works, " that thou doest. ⁴ For, *there is no man, that doth any* " thing in secret, and he himself seeketh, to be known openly.

CHAPTER VII.

“ If thou do these things, shew thyself to the world.” ⁵ For neither did his brethren believe in him.

⁶ Then Jesus, said unto them, “ My time, is not yet come : “ but, YOUR time, is alway ready. ⁷ The world, cannot hate “ you ; but, ME it hateth, because, I testify of it, that the “ works thereof, are evil. ⁸ Go ye up unto this feast : I go “ not up yet unto this feast ; for, my time, is not yet full “ come.” ⁹ When he had said these words unto them, he abode still in Galilee.

¹⁰ But, when his brethren, were gone up, then went he, also, up unto the feast, not openly, but, as it were, in secret.

¹¹ Then the Jews, sought him at the feast, and said, “ Where is he ? ” ¹² And there was much murmuring among the people, concerning him : for, some, said, “ He is a good “ man : ” others, said, “ Nay ; but, he deceiveth the people.” ¹³ Howbeit, no man, spake openly of him, for fear of the Jews.

¹⁴ Now, about the midst of the feast, Jesus, went up into the temple, and taught.

¹⁵ And the Jews, marvelled, saying, “ How knoweth this “ man letters, having never learned ? ”

¹⁶ Jesus, answered them, and said, “ My doctrine, is not “ mine, but, His, that sent me. ¹⁷ If any man will do His “ will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or, “ whether I speak of myself. ¹⁸ He, that speaketh of himself, “ seeketh his own glory : but, he, that seeketh His glory, that “ sent him, the same, is true, and no unrighteousness, is in him. ¹⁹ Did not Moses give you the law, and yet, none of you, “ KEEPETH the law ? Why go ye about, to kill me ? ”

²⁰ The people, answered, and said, “ Thou hast a devil : “ who goeth about, to kill thee ? ”

²¹ Jesus, answered, and said unto them, “ I have done one “ work, and ye all marvel. ²² Moses, therefore, gave unto “ you circumcision ; (not because it is of Moses, but, of the “ fathers;) and ye, on the sabbath day, circumcise a man. ²³ If “ a man, on the sabbath day, receive circumcision, that the law of “ Moses, should not be broken ; are ye angry at me, because, I “ have made a man, every whit, whole, on the sabbath day ? ²⁴ Judge not according to the appearance, but, judge right- “ eous judgment.”

²⁵ Then said some of them of Jerusalem, “ Is not this, he, “ whom they seek, to kill ? ²⁶ But, lo, he speaketh boldly,

" and they say nothing unto him. Do the rulers know " indeed, that this, is the very Christ ? ²⁷ Howbeit, we know " this man, whence he is : but, when Christ, cometh, no man, " knoweth, whence he is."

²⁸ Then cried Jesus in the temple, as he taught, saying, " Ye both know me, and ye know, whence I am : and I am " not come of myself, but, He, that sent me, is true, whom ye " know not. ²⁹ But, I know Him : for, I am from Him, and " He hath sent me."

³⁰ Then they sought, to take him : but, no man, laid hands on him, because, his hour, was not yet come. ³¹ And many of the people, believed on him, and said, " When Christ, " cometh, will he do more miracles than these, which this " man, hath done ? "

³² The Pharisees, heard, that the people, murmured such things concerning him ; and the Pharisees, and the Chief Priests, sent officers, to take him.

³³ Then said Jesus unto them, " Yet, a little while, am I " with you, and *then*, I go unto Him, that sent me. ³⁴ Ye " shall seek me, and shall not find me : and where I am, " *thither* ye cannot come."

³⁵ Then said the Jews among themselves, " Whither will " he go, that we shall not find him ? will he go unto the " dispersed among the Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles ? " ³⁶ What manner of saying, is this, that he said, ' Ye shall " seek me, and shall not find me : and where I am, *thither* " ye cannot come ? '

³⁷ In the last day, that great *day* of the feast, Jesus, stood, and cried, saying, " If any man thirst, let him come " unto me, and drink. ³⁸ He, that believeth on me, as the " Scripture, hath said, out of his belly, shall flow rivers of " living water." —(³⁹ But, this, spake he of the Spirit, which they, that believe on him, should receive : for, the Holy Ghost, was not yet *given* ; because, that Jesus, was not yet glorified.)

⁴⁰ Many of the people, therefore, when they heard this saying, said, " Of a truth, this, is the Prophet." ⁴¹ Others, said, " This, is the Christ." But, some, said, " Shall Christ come " out of Galilee ? ⁴² Hath not the Scripture said, ' That " Christ, cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town " of Bethlehem,' where David, was ? " ⁴³ So, there was a division among the people, because of him.

CHAPTER VIII.

⁴⁴ And some of them, would have taken him ; but, no man, laid hands on him.—⁴⁵ Then came the officers to the Chief Priests, and Pharisees ; and they said unto them, “ Why “ have ye not brought him ? ”

⁴⁶ The officers, answered, “ Never man, spake like this “ man.”

⁴⁷ Then answered them the Pharisees, “ Are ye, also, de-“ ceived ? ”⁴⁸ Have any of the rulers, or, of the Pharisees, “ believed on him ? ”⁴⁹ But, this people, who knoweth not the “ law, are cursed.”

⁵⁰ Nicodemus, saith unto them, (he, that came to Jesus by night, being one of them,) ⁵¹ “ Doth our law judge *any* man, “ before it hear him, and know, what he doeth ? ”

⁵² They answered, and said unto him, “ Art thou, also, of “ Galilee ? Search, and look : for, out of Galilee, ariseth no “ prophet.”—⁵³ And every man, went unto his own house.

CHAPTER VIII.

¹ Christ delivereth the woman taken in adultery. ¹² He preacheth himself the light of the world, and justifieth his doctrine : ³³ answer-eth the Jews that boasted of Abraham, ⁵⁹ and conveyeth himself from their cruelty.

¹ Jesus, went unto the mount of Olives. ² And, early in the morning, he came again into the temple, and all the people, came unto him ; and he sat down, and taught them.

³ And the Scribes, and Pharisees, brought unto him a woman, taken in adultery ; and when they had set her in the midst, ⁴ they say unto him, “ Master, this woman, was taken “ in adultery, in the very act. ⁵ Now, Moses, in the law, “ commanded us, that such, should be stoned : but, what say-“ est thou ? ”—⁶ This they said, tempting him, that they might have, to accuse him.

But, Jesus, stooped down, and, with *his* finger, wrote on the ground, *as though he heard them not.* ⁷ So, when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, “ He, that is without sin among you, let him, first, cast a stone “ at her.” ⁸ And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground.

⁹ And they, which heard *it*, being convicted by *their own*

conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, even unto the last : and Jesus was left alone, and the woman, standing in the midst.

" When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none, but the woman, he said unto her, " Woman, where are those, thine accusers ? hath no man condemned thee ? "

" She said, " No man, Lord."

And Jesus said unto her, " Neither do I condemn thee : go, and sin no more."

" Then spake Jesus again, unto them, saying, " I am the light of the world : he, that followeth me, shall not walk in darkness, but, shall have the light of life."

" The Pharisees, therefore, said unto him, " Thou bearest record of thyself ; thy record, is not true."

" Jesus answered, and said unto them, " Though I bear record of myself, yet, my record, is true : for, I know, whence I came, and whither I go ; but, ye cannot tell, whence I come, and whither I go. " Ye judge after the flesh ; I judge no man. " And yet, if I judge, my judgment, is true : for, I am not alone, but, I, and the Father, that sent me. " It is, also, written in your law, that the testimony of two men, is true. " I am one, that bear witness of myself, and the Father, that sent me, beareth witness of me."

" Then said they unto him, " Where is thy Father ? "

Jesus, answered, " Ye neither know me, nor, my Father : if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also." — These words, spake Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple : and no man, laid hands on him ; for, his hour, was not yet come.

" Then said Jesus, again, unto them, " I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins : whither I go, ye cannot come."

" Then said the Jews, " Will he kill himself ? because, he saith, ' Whither I go, ye cannot come.' "

" And he said unto them, " Ye are from beneath ; I am from above : ye are of this world ; I am not of this world. " I said, therefore, unto you, that ye shall die in your sins : for, if ye believe not, that I am he, ye SHALL die in your sins."

" Then said they unto him, " Who art thou ? "

CHAPTER VIII.

And Jesus saith unto them, "Even *the same*, that I said unto you from the beginning. ²⁶ I have many things to say, and to judge of you : but, He, that sent me, is true ; and I speak to the world those things, which I have heard of Him."—²⁷ They understood not, that he spake to them of the Father.—²⁸ Then said Jesus unto them, "When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know, that I am *he*, and *that I* do nothing of myself ; but, as my Father, hath taught me, I speak these things. ²⁹ And He, that sent me, is with me : the Father, hath not left me alone ; for, I do, always, those things, that please Him."—³⁰ As he spake these words, many, believed on him.—³¹ Then said Jesus to those Jews, which believed on him, "If ye continue in my word, *then are ye my disciples indeed* ; ³² and ye shall know the truth, and the truth, shall make you free."

³³ They answered him, "We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man : how sayest thou, 'Ye shall be made free ?'"

³⁴ Jesus answered them, "Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin, is the servant of sin. ³⁵ And the servant, abideth not in the house for ever : *but*, the Son, abideth ever. ³⁶ If the Son, therefore, shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed. ³⁷ I know, that ye are Abraham's seed ; but, ye seek to kill me, because, my word, hath no place in you. ³⁸ I speak that, which I have seen with MY Father : and ye do that, which ye have seen with YOUR father."

³⁹ They answered, and said unto him, "Abraham, is our father."

Jesus, saith unto them, "If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham. ⁴⁰ But, now, ye seek to kill me, a man, that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God : this did not Abraham. ⁴¹ Ye do the DEEDS of your father."

Then said they to him, "We be not born of fornication ; we have one Father, *even* God."

⁴² Jesus, said unto them, "If God were your Father, ye would love me : for, I proceeded forth, and came from God ; neither came I of myself, but, He sent me. ⁴³ Why do ye not understand my speech ? *even*, because, ye cannot hear my word. ⁴⁴ Ye are of *your* father the devil, and the lusts

" of your father, ye will do. He was a murderer, from beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own : for, he is a liar, and the father of it. " And, because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not. " Which of you convinceth me of sin ? and if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me ? " He, that is of God, heareth God's words : ye, therefore, hear them not, because ye are not of God."

" Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, " Say not well, that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil ? "

" Jesus answered, " I have not a devil ; but, I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me. " And I seek not my own glory : there is one, that seeketh, and judgeth. " Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death."

" Then said the Jews unto him, " Now, we know, that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets : thou sayest, ' If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death.' " Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead ? and the prophets are dead : whence makest thou thyself ? "

" Jesus answered, " If I honour myself, my honour is nothing : it is my Father, that honoureth me : of whom say, that He is your God : " yet ye have not known Him but, I know Him : and if I should say, I know Him, I shall be a liar like unto you : but, I know Him, and I honour His saying. " Your father Abraham rejoiced, to see my day : and he saw it, and was glad."

" Then said the Jews unto him, " Thou art not yet of years old, and hast thou seen Abraham ? "

" Jesus, said unto them, " Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am."

" Then took they up stones, to cast at him : but, Jesus, himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.

CHAPTER IX.

CHAPTER IX.

1 *The man that was born blind restored to sight.* **8** *He is brought to the Pharisees.* **13** *They are offended at it, and excommunicate him: 35 but he is received of Jesus, and confesseth him.* **39** *Who they are whom Christ enlighteneth.*

1 And as Jesus passed by, he saw a man, which was blind from his birth. **2** And his disciples asked him, saying, “Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind?”

3 Jesus answered, “Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but, that the works of God, should be made manifest in him. **4** I must work the works of Him, that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work. **5** As long as I am in the world, I am the **LIGHT** of the world.”—**6** When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay, **7** and said unto him, “Go, wash in the pool of Siloam,” (which is, by interpretation, Sent.)—He went his way therefore, and washed, and came, seeing.

8 The neighbours, therefore, and they, which, before, had seen him, that he was blind, said, “Is not this he, that sat, and begged?” **9** Some said, “This is he:” others said, “He is like him:” **but**, he said, “I am he.” **10** Therefore, said they unto him, “How were thine eyes opened?”

11 He answered, and said, “A man, that is called Jesus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, ‘Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash:’ and I went, and washed, and I received sight.”

12 Then said they unto him, “Where is he?”

He said, “I know not.”

13 They brought to the Pharisees him, that, aforetime, was blind. **14** (And it was the sabbath day, when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.) **15** Then, again the Pharisees, also, asked him, how he had received his sight.

He said unto them, “He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see.”

16 Therefore, said some of the Pharisees, “This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath day.” Others said, “How can a man, that is a sinner, do such miracles?”

And there was a division among them. ² They say unto the blind man again, "What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes?"

He said, "He is a prophet."

³ But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him, that had received his sight. ⁴ And they asked them, saying, "Is this your son, who, ye say, was born blind? how, then, doth he now see?"

⁵ His parents answered them, and said, "We know, that this is our son, and that he was born blind: ⁶ but, by what means, he now seeth, we know not; or, who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age; ask him: he shall speak for himself." ⁷ These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for, the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess, that he was Christ, he shold be put out of the synagogue. ⁸ Therefore, said his parents, "He is of age; ask him."

⁹ Then again called they the man, that was blind, and said unto him, "Give God the praise: we know that this man, is a sinner."

¹⁰ He answered, and said, "Whether he be a sinner, or no, I know not: one thing I know, that whereas I was blind, now I see."

¹¹ Then said they to him again, "What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?"

¹² He answered them, "I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore, would ye hear it again? will ye also, be his disciples?"

¹³ Then they reviled him, and said, "Thou art his disciple; but, we are Moses' disciples. ¹⁴ We know, that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not, from whence he is."

¹⁵ The man answered, and said unto them, "Why, herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not, from whence he is, and yet, he hath opened mine eyes. ¹⁶ Now, we know, that God heareth not sinners: but, if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth His will, him He heareth. ¹⁷ Since the world began, was it not heard, that any man, opened the eyes of one, that was born blind. ¹⁸ If this man were not of God, he could do nothing."

CHAPTER X.

³⁴ They answered, and said unto him, “ Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us ? ”—And they cast him out.

³⁵ Jesus, heard, that they had cast him out ; and when he had found him, he said unto him, “ Dost thou believe on the Son of God ? ”

³⁶ He answered, and said, “ Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him ? ”

³⁷ And Jesus, said unto him, “ Thou hast both seen him, and it is he, that talketh with thee.”

³⁸ And he said, “ Lord, I believe.”—And he worshipped him.

³⁹ And Jesus, said, “ For judgment, I am come into this world, that they, which see not, might see ; and that they, which see, might be made blind.”

⁴⁰ And some of the Pharisees, which were with him, heard these words, and said unto him, “ Are we blind also ? ”

⁴¹ Jesus, said unto them, “ If ye were blind, ye should have no sin : but, now, ye say, ‘ We see ; ’ therefore, your sin, remaineth.

CHAPTER X.

¹ Christ is the door, and the good shepherd. ¹⁹ Divers opinions of him. ²⁴ He proveth by his works that he is Christ the Son of God : ³⁹ escapeth the Jews, ⁴⁰ and went again beyond Jordan, where many believed on him.

¹ “ Verily, verily, I say unto you, He, that entereth not, by the door, into the sheepfold, but, climbeth up some other way, the same, is a thief, and a robber. ² But, he, that entereth in by the door, is the shepherd of the sheep. ³ To him, the porter, openeth ; and the sheep, hear his voice : and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out. ⁴ And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep, follow him : for, they know his voice. ⁵ And a stranger, will they not follow, but, will flee from him : for, they know not the voice of strangers.”

⁶ This parable, spake Jesus unto them : but, they understood not, what things they were, which he spake unto them.

⁷ Then said Jesus unto them again, " Verily, verily, I say unto you. I am the door of the sheep. ⁸ All, that ever came before me, are thieves, and robbers: but, the sheep did not hear them. ⁹ I am the door: by me, if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture. ¹⁰ The thief, cometh not, but, for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come, that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly. ¹¹ I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd, giveth his life for the sheep. ¹² But, he, that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own, the sheep, are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep. ¹³ The hireling fleeth, BECAUSE he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep. ¹⁴ I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine. ¹⁵ As the Father, knoweth me, even so, know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep. ¹⁶ And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also, I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd. ¹⁷ Therefore, doth my Father love me, because, I lay down my life, that I might take it again. ¹⁸ No man, taketh it from me, but, I lay it down of myself. I have power, to lay it down, and I have power, to take it again. This commandment, have I received of my Father."

¹⁹ There was a division therefore, again, among the Jews, for these sayings. ²⁰ And many of them, said, " He hath a devil, and is mad; why hear ye him? " ²¹ Others, said, " These are not the words of him, that hath a devil. Can a devil open the eyes of the blind? "

²² And it was, at Jerusalem, the feast of the dedication, and it was winter. ²³ And Jesus, walked in the temple in Solomon's porch.

²⁴ Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, " How long dost thou make us, to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly."

²⁵ Jesus, answered them, " I told you, and ye believed not: the works, that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me. ²⁶ But, ye believe not, because, ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you. ²⁷ My sheep, hear my voice,

CHAPTER XI.

“ and I know them, and they follow me : ²⁹ and I give unto them eternal life ; and they shall never perish, neither, shall any man pluck them out of my hand. ³⁰ My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all ; and no man, is able, to pluck them out of my Father’s hand. ³¹ I, and my Father are one.”

³¹ Then the Jews, took up stones again, to stone him.

³² Jesus, answered them, “ Many good works, have I shewed you from my Father ; for which of those works, do ye stone me ? ”

³³ The Jews, answered him, saying, “ For a good work, we stone thee not ; but, for blasphemy ; and because, that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.”

³⁴ Jesus, answered them, “ Is it not written in your law, ‘ I said, Ye are gods ? ’ ³⁵ If he called them gods, unto whom, the word of God, caine,—and the Scripture, cannot be broken ;—³⁶ say ye of him, whom the Father, hath sanctified, and sent into the world, ‘ Thou blasphemest ; ’ because, I said, I am the Son of God ? ³⁷ If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. ³⁸ But, if I do, though ye believe not ME, believe the WORKS : that ye may know, and believe, that the Father, is in me, and I in Him.”

³⁹ Therefore, they sought again, to take him : but, he escaped out of their hand, ⁴⁰ and went away again, beyond Jordan, into the place, where John, at first, baptized ; and there, he abode. ⁴¹ And many, resorted unto him, and said, “ John, did no miracle : but, all things, that John, spake of this man, were true.” ⁴² And many, believed on him there.

CHAPTER XI.

¹ Christ raiseth Lazarus, four days buried. ⁴⁵ Many Jews believe. ⁴⁷ The High Priests and Pharisees gather a council against Christ. ⁴⁹ Caiaphas prophesieth. ⁵⁴ Jesus hid himself. ⁵⁵ At the Passover they enquire after him, and lay wait for him.

¹ Now, a certain man, was sick, named Lazarus, of Bethany, the town of Mary, and her sister Martha. ² (It was that Mary, which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus, was sick.)

SAINT JOHN.

³ Therefore, his sisters, sent unto him, saying, “ Lord, behold, “ he, whom thou lovest, is sick.”

⁴ When Jesus, heard *that*, he said, “ This sickness, “ is not unto death, but, for the glory of God, that the Son “ of God, might be glorified thereby.”— Now, Jesus, loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus. ⁵ When he had heard, therefore, that he was sick, he abode two days still in the same place, where he was. ⁶ Then, after that, saith he to *his* disciples, “ Let us go into Judaea again.”

⁸ *His* disciples, say unto him, “ Master, the Jews, of late, “ sought, to stone thee; and goest thou thither again?”

⁹ Jesus, answered, “ Are there not twelve hours in the “ day? If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, be-“ cause, he seeth the light of this world. ¹⁰ But, if a man “ walk in the night, he stumbleth, because, there is no light “ in him.” ¹¹ These things, said he: and, after that, he saith unto them, “ Our friend Lazarus, sleepeth; but, I go, that I “ may awake him out of sleep.”

¹² Then said his disciples, “ Lord, if he sleep, he shall do “ well.”—¹³ Howbeit, Jesus, spake of his death: but, they thought, that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleep.

¹⁴ Then said Jesus unto them plainly, “ Lazarus, is dead. ¹⁵ And I am glad, for your sakes, that I was not there, to “ the intent, ye may believe; nevertheless, let us go unto him.”

¹⁶ Then said Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellow-disciples, “ Let us, also, go, that we may die with him.”

¹⁷ Then, when Jesus, came, he found, that he had *lain* in the grave four days already.—¹⁸ Now, Bethany, was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off: ¹⁹ and many of the Jews, came to Martha, and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.

²⁰ Then Martha as soon as she heard, that Jesus, was coming, went, and met him: but, Mary, sat *still* in the house. ²¹ Then said Martha unto Jesus, “ Lord, if thou hadst been “ here, my brother, had not died. ²² But, I know, that, even “ now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God, will give *it* thee.”

²³ Jesus, saith unto her, “ Thy brother, shall rise again.”

²⁴ Martha, saith unto him, “ I know, that he shall rise again, “ in the resurrection, at the last day.”

²⁵ Jesus, said unto her, “ I am the resurrection, and the

CHAPTER XI.

“ life : he, that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet,
“ shall he live : ²⁶ and whosoever liveth, and believeth in me,
“ shall never die. Believest thou this ? ”

²⁷ She saith unto him, “ Yea, Lord : I believe, that thou
“ art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into
“ the world.”

²⁸ And when she had so said, she went her way, and
called Mary her sister secretly, saying, “ The Master, is come,
“ and calleth for thee ”

²⁹ As soon as she heard *that*, she arose quickly, and came
unto him. ³⁰ (Now, Jesus, was not yet come into the town,
but, was in that place, where Martha, met him.) ³¹ The
Jews, then, which were with her in the house, and comforted
her, when they saw Mary, that she rose up hastily, and went
out, followed her, saying, “ She goeth unto the grave, to
“ weep there.”

³² Then, when Mary, was come, where Jesus, was, and
saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, “ Lord,
“ if thou hadst been here, my brother, had not died.”

³³ When Jesus, therefore, saw her weeping, and the Jews,
also, weeping, which came with her, he groaned in the spirit,
and was troubled, ³⁴ and said, “ Where have ye laid him ? ”

They said unto him, “ Lord, come, and see.”

³⁵ Jesus, wept.

³⁶ Then said the Jews, “ Behold, how he loved him ! ”

³⁷ And some of them, said, “ Could not this man, which
“ opened the eyes of the blind, have caused, that even this
“ man, should not have died ? ”

³⁸ Jesus, therefore, again groaning in himself, cometh to the
grave. It was a cave, and a stone, lay upon it.

³⁹ Jesus, said, “ Take ye away the stone.”

Martha, the sister of him, that was dead, saith unto him,
“ Lord, by this time, he stinketh : for, he hath been *dead*
“ four days.”

⁴⁰ Jesus, saith unto her, “ Said I not unto thee, that, if
“ thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God ? ”

⁴¹ Then, they took away the stone *from the place*, where
the dead, was laid.

And Jesus, lifted up *his* eyes, and said, “ Father, I thank
“ Thee, that Thou hast heard me. ⁴² And I knew, that Thou
“ hearest me always : but, because of the people, which

" stand by, I said *it*, that they may believe, that Thou hast sent me."—⁴³ And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, " Lazarus, come forth."

⁴⁴ And he, that was dead, came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin.

Jesus saith unto them, " Loose him, and let him go."

⁴⁵ Then many of the Jews, which came to Mary, and had seen the things, which Jesus did, believed on him.
⁴⁶ But, some of them, went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them, what things, Jesus, had done.

⁴⁷ Then gathered the Chief Priests, and the Pharisees, a council, and said, " What do we? for, this man, doeth many miracles. ⁴⁸ If we let him thus alone, all *men*, will believe on him: and the Romans, shall come, and take away both our place, and nation."

⁴⁹ And one of them, *named* Caiaphas, being the High Priest that same year, said unto them, " Ye know nothing at all, ⁵⁰ nor, consider, that it is expedient for us, that one man, should die for the people, and that the whole nation, perish not."—⁵¹ And this, spake he not of himself: but, being High Priest that year, he prophesied, that Jesus, should die for that nation; ⁵² and not for that nation only, but, *that*, also, he should gather together, in one, the children of God, that were scattered abroad.

⁵³ Then, from that day forth, they took counsel together, for to put him to death. ⁵⁴ Jesus therefore, walked no more, openly, among the Jews: but, went thence unto a country near to the wilderness, into a city, called Ephraim, and there, continued with his disciples.

⁵⁵ And the Jews' Passover, was nigh at hand: and many, went, out of the country, up to Jerusalem, before the Passover, to purify themselves. ⁵⁶ Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, " What think ye, that he will not come to the feast?"—⁵⁷ Now, both the Chief Priests, and the Pharisees, had given a commandment, that, if any man knew where he were *he* should shew *it*, that they might take him.

CHAPTER XII.

¹ Jesus excuseth Mary anointing his feet. ⁹ The people flock to see Lazarus. ¹⁰ The High Priests consult to kill him. ¹² Christ rideth into Jerusalem. ²⁰ Greeks desire to see Jesus. ²³ He foretelleth his death. ³⁷ The Jews are generally blinded: ⁴² yet many chief rulers believe, but do not confess him: ⁴⁴ therefore Jesus calleth earnestly for confession of faith.

¹ Then, Jesus, six days before the Passover, came to Bethany, where Lazarus, was, which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead. ² There they made him a supper; and Martha, served: but, Lazarus, was one of them, that sat at the table with him. ³ Then, took Mary a pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house, was filled with the odour of the ointment.

⁴ Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, which should betray him, ⁵ "Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?"—⁶ This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but, because, he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein.

⁷ Then said Jesus, "Let her alone: against the day of my "burying, hath she kept this. ⁸ For, the poor, **ALWAYS**, ye "have with you; but, **ME**, ye have **NOT** always."

⁹ Much people of the Jews, therefore, knew, that he was there: and they came, not for Jesus' sake only, but, that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead. ¹⁰ But, the Chief Priests, consulted, that they might put Lazarus, also, to death; ¹¹ because, that, by reason of him, many of the Jews, went away, and believed on Jesus.

¹² On the next day, much people, that were come to the feast, when they heard, that Jesus, was coming to Jerusalem, ¹³ took branches of palm trees, and went forth, to meet him, and cried, "Hosanna: Blessed is the King of Israel, "that cometh in the name of the Lord."

¹⁴ And Jesus, when he had found a young ass, sat thereon; as it is written, ¹⁵ "Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold, "thy King, cometh, sitting on an ass's colt."—¹⁶ These things, understood not his disciples, at the first: but, when Jesus, was

glorified, then remembered they, that these things, were written of him, and *that* they had done these things unto him.

¹⁷ The people, therefore, that was with him, when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record. ¹⁸ For this cause, the people, also, met him, for, that they heard, that he had done this miracle.

¹⁹ The Pharisees, therefore, said among themselves, “ Perceive ye, how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world, is “ gone after him.”

²⁰ And there were certain Greeks among them, that came up, to worship at the feast: ²¹ the same, came, therefore, to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, “ Sir, we would see Jesus.”

²² Philip cometh, and telleth Andrew: and again, Andrew, and Philip, tell Jesus.

²³ And Jesus, answered them, saying, “ The hour, is “ come, that the Son of man, should be glorified. ²⁴ Verily, “ verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the “ ground, and die, it abideth alone: but, if it die, it bringeth “ forth much fruit. ²⁵ He, that loveth his life, shall lose it; “ and he, that hateth his life in this world, shall keep it unto “ life eternal. ²⁶ If any man serve me, let him FOLLOW me; “ and where I am, there shall, also, my servant be: if any man “ serve me, him will *my* Father honour.

²⁷ “ Now, is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, “ save me from this hour: but, for this cause, came I unto this “ hour.—²⁸ Father, glorify Thy name.”

Then, came there a voice from heaven, *saying*,—

“ I have both glorified *it*, and will glo-
“ rify *it* again.”

²⁹ The people, therefore, that stood by, and heard *it*, said, that it thundered: others, said, “ An angel, spake to him.”

³⁰ Jesus, answered, and said, “ This voice, came, not because “ of me, but, for your sakes. ³¹ Now, is the judgment of this “ world: now, shall the prince of this world be cast out. “ ³² And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all *men* “ unto me.”—³³ This he said, signifying, what death, he should die.

³⁴ The people, answered him, “ We have heard, out of the

CHAPTER XII.

“ law, that Christ, abideth for ever: and how sayest thou,
“ ‘ The Son of man, must be lifted up ? ’ who is this Son of
“ man ? ”

³⁵ Then Jesus, said unto them, “ Yet, a little while, is the
“ light with you. Walk while ye have the light, lest dark-
“ ness, come upon you: for, he, that walketh in darkness
“ knoweth not, whither he goeth. ³⁶ While ye have light,
“ BELIEVE in the light, that ye may be the CHILDREN of
“ light.”—These things, spake Jesus, and departed, and did
hide himself from them.

³⁷ But, though he had done so many miracles before
them, yet, they believed not on him: ³⁸ that the saying of
Esaias the prophet, might be fulfilled, which he spake, “ Lord,
“ who hath believed our report ? and to whom, hath the arm
“ of the Lord been revealed ? ”—³⁹ Therefore, they could not
believe, because, that Esaias, said again, ⁴⁰ “ He hath blinded
“ their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not
“ see with *their* eyes, nor, understand with *their* heart, and
“ be converted, and I should heal them.”—⁴¹ These things,
said Esaias, when he saw his glory, and spake of him.

⁴² Nevertheless, among the chief rulers also, many, believed
on him; but, because of the Pharisees, they did not confess
him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue: ⁴³ for, they
loved the praise of men, more than the praise of God.

⁴⁴ Jesus, cried, and said, “ He, that believeth on me, believ-
“ eth not on me, but, on Him, that sent me. ⁴⁵ And he, that
“ seeth me, seeth Him, that sent me. ⁴⁶ I am come, a light
“ into the world, that whosoever believeth on me, should not
“ abide in darkness. ⁴⁷ And if any man hear my words, and
“ believe not, I judge him not: for, I came not, to JUDGE
“ the world, but, to SAVE the world. ⁴⁸ He, that rejecteth
“ me, and receiveth not my words, hath one, that judgeth him:
“ the word, that I have spoken, the same, shall judge him in
“ the last day. ⁴⁹ For, I have not spoken of myself; but, the
“ Father, which sent me, He gave me a commandment, what
“ I should say, and what I should speak. ⁵⁰ And I know,
“ that His commandment, is life everlasting: whatsoever I
“ speak therefore, even as the Father, said unto me, so I
“ speak.”

CHAPTER XIII.

1 Jesus washeth the disciples' feet : exhorteth them to humility and charity. **18** He foretelleth, and discovereth to John by a token, that Judas should betray him : **31** commandeth them to love one another, **36** and forewarneth Peter of his denial.

1 Now, before the feast of the Passover, when Jesus, knew, that his hour, was come, that he should depart out of this world, unto the Father, having loved his own, which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.—**2** And supper, being ended, the devil, having, now, put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him ; **3** Jesus, knowing that the Father, had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God ; **4** he riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments ; and took a towel, and girded himself. **5** After that, he poureth water into a basin, and began, to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe *them* with the towel, wherewith he was girded.

6 Then cometh he to Simon Peter : and Peter, saith unto him, “ Lord, dost **THOU** wash **MY** feet ? ”

7 Jesus, answered, and said unto him, “ What I do, thou knowest not now ; but, thou shalt know hereafter.”

8 Peter, saith unto him, “ Thou shalt **NEVER** wash my feet.”

Jesus, answered him, “ If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me.”

9 Simon Peter, saith unto him, “ Lord, not my FEET only, but, also, *my* HANDS, and *my* HEAD.”

10 Jesus, saith to him, “ He that is washed, needeth not, save to wash *his* feet, but, is clean every whit : and ye are “ clean, but, not all.”—**11** For, he knew, who should betray him ; therefore said he, “ Ye are not all clean.”

12 So, after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, “ Know ye, what I have done to you ? **13** Ye call me Master, and “ Lord : and ye say well ; for, so I am. **14** If I, then, *your* “ Lord, and Master, have washed your feet ; ye, also, ought, to “ wash **ONE ANOTHER**'s feet. **15** For, I have given you an “ example, that ye should do as I have done to you. **16** Verily, “ verily, I say unto you, The servant, is not greater than his “ lord ; neither he, that is sent, greater than he, that sent him.

CHAPTER XII

“ 17 If ye know these things, happy are ye, if ye do them
“ 18 I speak not of you all: I know, whom I have chosen:
“ but, that the Scripture, may be fulfilled, ‘ He, that eateth
“ bread with me, hath lifted up his heel against me.’ ”¹⁹ Now,
“ I tell you, before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye
“ may believe, that I am he. ”²⁰ Verily, verily, I say unto you,
“ He, that receiveth whomsoever I send, receiveth me; and
“ he, that receiveth me, receiveth Him, that sent me.”—
“ 21 When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and
testified, and said, “ Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one
“ of you, shall betray me.”

“ 22 Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting, of
whom he spake

“ 23 Now, there was leaning on Jesus’ bosom, one of his dis-
ciples, whom Jesus loved. ”²⁴ Simon Peter, therefore, beckon-
ed to him, that he should ask, who it should be, of whom he
spake.

“ 25 He, then lying on Jesus’ breast, saith unto him, “ Lord,
“ who is it ? ”

“ 26 Jesus answered, “ He it is, to whom I shall give a sop,
“ when I have dipped it.”

And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas
Iscariot, *the son of Simon*.—²⁷ And, after the sop, Satan, en-
tered into him.—Then said Jesus unto him, “ That, thou doest,
“ do quickly.”

“ 28 Now, no man at the table, knew, for what intent, he spake
this unto him. ”²⁹ For, some of them, thought, because, Judas,
had the bag, that Jesus, had said unto him, “ Buy those
“ things, that we have need of against the feast; ” or, that
he should give something to the poor.—³⁰ He then, having
received the sop, went immediately out: and it was night.

“ 31 Therefore, when he was gone out, Jesus, said,
“ Now, is the Son of man glorified, and God, is glorified in
“ him. ”³² If God be glorified in him, God, shall, also, glorify
“ him in Himself, and shall, straightway, glorify him. ”³³ Little
“ children, yet, a little while, I am with you. Ye shall seek
“ me: and, as I said unto the Jews, ‘ Whither I go, ye cannot
“ ‘ come; ’ so, now, I say to you. ”³⁴ A new commandment, I
“ give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved
“ you, that ye, also, love one another. ”³⁵ By this, shall all men
“ know, that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.”

SAINT JOHN.

³⁶ Simon Peter said unto him, "Lord, whither goest thou?" Jesus answered him, "Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but, thou shalt follow me afterwards."

³⁷ Peter said unto him, "Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thy sake."

³⁸ Jesus answered him, "Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow, till thou hast DENIED me thrice.

CHAPTER XIV.

1 Christ comforteth his disciples with the hope of heaven: 6 professeth himself the way, the truth, and the life, and one with the Father: 13 assureth their prayers in his name to be effectual: 15 requesteth love and obedience, 16 promiseth the Holy Ghost the Comforter, 27 and leaveth his peace with them.

¹ "Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe, also, in ME. ² In my Father's house, are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. ³ I go, to prepare a place for you. ³ And if I go, and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that, where I am, there ye may be also. ⁴ And whither I go, ye know, and the way, ye know."

Thomas saith unto him, "Lord, we know not, whither thou goest; and how can we know the way?"

⁶ Jesus saith unto him, "I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but, by me. ⁷ If ye had known ME, ye should have known my Father also: ⁸ and, from henceforth, ye know Him, and have seen HIm."

⁸ Philip saith unto him, "Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us."

⁹ Jesus saith unto him, "Have I been so long time with you, and yet, hast thou not known me, Philip? he, that hath seen ME, hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou *then*, 'Shew us the Father?' ¹⁰ Believest thou not, that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words, that I speak unto you, I speak not of myself: but, the Father, that dwelleth in me, He doeth the works. ¹¹ Believe me, that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else, believe me, for the very works' sake. ¹² Verily, verily, I

CHAPTER XIV.

“ say unto you, He, that believeth on me, the works, that
“ I do, shall he do also ; and greater *works* than these, shall
“ he do ; because, I go unto my Father. ¹³ And whatsoever
“ ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father,
“ may be glorified in the Son. ¹⁴ If ye shall ask any thing,
“ in my name, I will do it.

¹⁵ “ If ye love me, keep my commandments. ¹⁶ And I
“ will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Com-
“ forter, that he may abide with you for ever ; ¹⁷ even the
“ Spirit of truth ; whom the world, cannot receive, because,
“ it seeth him not, neither knoweth him : but, ye know him ;
“ for, he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

¹⁸ “ I will not leave you comfortless : I will come to you.
“ ¹⁹ Yet, a little while, and the world, seeth me no more ;
“ but, ye see me : because, I live, ye shall live also. ²⁰ At
“ that day, ye shall know, that I am in my Father, and ye
“ in me, and I in you. ²¹ He, that hath my commandments,
“ and keepeth them, he it is, that loveth me : and he, that
“ loveth me, shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him,
“ and will manifest myself to him.”

²² Judas, saith unto him,—not Iscariot,—“ Lord, how is
“ it, that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto
“ the world ?”

²³ Jesus, answered, and said unto him, “ If a man love me,
“ he will keep my words : and my Father, will love him, and
“ we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.
“ ²⁴ He, that loveth me not, keepeth not my sayings : and the
“ word, which ye hear, is not mine, but, the Father’s, which
“ sent me. ²⁵ These things, have I spoken unto you, being
“ yet present with you. ²⁶ But, the Comforter, which is the
“ Holy Ghost, whom the Father, will send in my name, he
“ shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your re-
“ membrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

²⁷ “ Peace, I leave with you, MY peace, I give unto you :
“ not as the world, giveth, give I unto you. Let not your
“ heart be troubled, neither, let it be afraid. ²⁸ Ye have heard,
“ how I said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you.
“ If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because, I said, ‘ I go
“ unto the Father :’ for, my Father, is greater than I.
“ ²⁹ And now I have told you, before it come to pass, that,
“ when it is come to pass, ye might believe. ³⁰ Hereafter, I

“ will not talk much with you : for, the prince of this world,
“ cometh, and hath nothing in me. ³¹ But, that the world,
“ may know, that I love the Father ; and as the Father, gave
“ me commandment, even so, I do. Arise, let us go hence.

CHAPTER XV.

1 *The consolation and mutual love between Christ and his members, under the parable of the vine.* **18** *A comfort in the hatred and persecution of the world.* **28** *The office of the Holy Ghost, and of the apostles.*

¹ “ I am the true vine, and my Father, is the husbandman.
“ ² Every branch in me, that beareth not fruit, He taketh
“ away : and every *branch*, that beareth fruit, He purgeth
“ it, that it may bring forth **MORE** fruit. ³ Now, ye are
“ clean, through the word, which I have spoken unto you.
“ ⁴ Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch, cannot bear
“ fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine ; no more can ye,
“ except ye abide in me. ⁵ I am the vine, ye *are* the
“ branches : He, that abideth in me, and I in him, the same,
“ bringeth forth much fruit : for, without me, ye can do
“ nothing. ⁶ If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a
“ branch, and is withered ; and men, gather them, and cast
“ *them* into the fire, and they are burned. ⁷ If ye abide in
“ me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will,
“ and it shall be done unto you. ⁸ Herein, is my Father glori-
“ fied, that ye bear much fruit ; so, shall ye be my disciples.
“ ⁹ As the Father, hath loved **ME**, so have I loved **YOU** :
“ continue ye in my love. ¹⁰ If ye keep my commandments,
“ ye shall abide in my love ; even as I have kept my
“ **FATHER**’s commandments, and abide in **HIS** love.
“ ¹¹ These things, have I spoken unto you, that **MY** joy,
“ might remain in you, and *that YOUR* joy, might be full.
“ ¹² This, is my commandment, That ye love one another, as
“ I have loved you. ¹³ Greater love hath no man than this,
“ that a man, lay down his life for his friends. ¹⁴ Ye are my
“ friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. ¹⁵ Henceforth,
“ I call you not servants ; for, the servant, knoweth not, what
“ his lord, doeth : but, I have called you **FRIENDS** ; for, all
“ things, that I have heard of my Father, I have made known

CHAPTER XVI.

“ unto you. ¹⁶ Ye have not chosen ME, but, I have chosen
“ YOU, and ordained you, that ye should go, and bring forth
“ fruit, and *that* your fruit, should remain: that whatsoever
“ ye shall ask of the Father, in my name, He may give it you.
“ ¹⁷ These things, I command you, that ye love one another.

¹⁸ “ If the world hate you, ye know, that it hated ME
“ before *it hated you*. ¹⁹ If ye were of the world, the world,
“ would love his own: but, because, ye are not of the world,
“ but, I have chosen you out of the world, therefore, the
“ world, hateth you. ²⁰ Remember the word, that I said unto
“ you, ‘ The servant, is not greater than his lord.’ If they
“ have persecuted ME, they will, also, persecute YOU; if they
“ have kept MY saying, they will keep YOURS also. ²¹ But, all
“ these things, will they do unto you, for my name’s sake,
“ because, they know not Him, that sent me. ²² If I had not
“ come, and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but,
“ now, they have no cloke for their sin.

²³ “ He, that hateth me, hateth my Father also. ²⁴ If I had
“ not done, among them, the works, which none other man,
“ did, they had not had sin: but, now, have they both seen,
“ and hated, both me, and my Father. ²⁵ But, *this, cometh*
“ *to pass*, that the word, might be fulfilled, that is written in
“ their law, ‘ They hated me without a cause.’ ²⁶ But, when
“ the Comforter, is come, whom I will send unto you from
“ the Father, *even* the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth
“ from the Father, he shall testify of me: ²⁷ and ye, also, shall
“ bear witness, because, ye have been with me from the
“ beginning.

CHAPTER XVI.

¹ Christ comforteth his disciples against tribulation by the promise
of the Holy Ghost, and by his resurrection and ascension: ²³ as-
sureth their prayers made in his name to be acceptable to his Father.
²³ Peace in Christ, and in the world affliction.

¹ “ These things, have I spoken unto you, that ye should
“ not be offended. ² They shall put you out of the syna-
“ gogues: yea, the time, cometh, that whosoever killeth you,
“ will think, that he doeth God service. ³ And these things,
“ will they do unto you, because, they have not known the

“ Father, nor me. “ But, these things, have I told you, that, “ when the time, shall come, ye may remember, that I told “ you of them. And these things, I said not unto you at the “ beginning, because, I was with you. “ But, now, I go my “ way to Him, that sent me; and none of you, asketh me, “ ‘ Whither goest thou ? ’ “ But, because, I have said these “ things unto you, sorrow, hath filled your heart. “ Nevertheless, I tell you the truth ; It is expedient for you, that I “ go away : for, if I go ~~NOT~~ away, the Comforter, will not “ come unto you ; but, if I depart, I will send him unto “ you. “ And when he is come, he will reprove the world “ of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment : “ of sin, “ because, they believe not on me ; “ of righteousness, because, “ I go to my Father, and ye see me no more ; “ of judgment, “ because, the prince of this world, is judged.

“ “ I have, yet, many things, to say unto you, but, ye can- “ not bear them now. “ Howbeit, when he, the Spirit of “ truth, is come, he will guide you into ALL truth : for, he “ shall not speak of himself ; but, whatsoever he shall hear, “ that shall he speak : and he will shew you things to come. “ “ He shall glorify me : for, he shall receive of mine, and “ shall shew it unto you. “ All things, that the Father, “ hath, are mine : therefore, said I, that he shall take of mine, “ and shall shew it unto you. “ A little while, and ye shall “ not see me : and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, “ because, I go to the Father.”

“ Then said *some* of his disciples among themselves, “ What is this, that he saith unto us, ‘ A little while, and “ ‘ ye shall not see me : and again, a little while, and ye shall “ ‘ see me : ’ and, ‘ Because, I go to the Father ? ’ ” “ They said therefore, “ What is this, that he saith, ‘ A little while ? ’ “ we cannot tell, what he saith.”

“ Now, Jesus, knew, that they were desirous, to ask him, and said unto them, “ Do ye enquire among yourselves, of that “ I said, ‘ A little while, and ye shall not see me : and again, “ ‘ a little while, and ye shall see me ? ’ ” Verily, verily, I “ say unto you, That ye shall weep, and lament, but, the “ world, shall rejoice : and ye shall be sorrowful, but, your “ sorrow, shall be turned into joy. “ A woman, when she is “ in travail, hath sorrow, because, her hour, is come : but, as “ soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no

CHAPTER XVII.

“ more the anguish, for joy, that a man is born into the
“ world. ²² And ye now, therefore, have sorrow : but, I will
“ see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy,
“ no man, taketh from you. ²³ And, in that day, ye shall
“ ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatso-
“ ever ye shall ask the Father, in my name, He will give it
“ you. ²⁴ Hitherto, have ye asked nothing in my name :
“ ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy, may be full.

²⁵ “ These things, have I spoken unto you in proverbs :
“ but, the time, cometh, when I shall, no more, speak unto
“ you in proverbs, but, I shall shew you plainly of the Father.
²⁶ At that day, ye shall ask in my name : and I say not
“ unto you, that I will pray the Father for you : ²⁷ for, the
“ Father himself, loveth you, because, ye have loved me, and
“ have believed, that I came out from God. ²⁸ I came forth
“ from the Father, and am come into the world : again, I
“ leave the world, and go to the Father.”

²⁹ His disciples, said unto him, “ Lo, now, speakest thou
“ plainly, and speakest no proverb. ³⁰ Now, are we sure,
“ that thou knowest all things, and needest not, that any
“ man, should ask thee : by this, we believe that thou camest
“ forth from God.”

³¹ Jesus, answered them, “ Do ye now believe ? ³² Behold,
“ the hour, cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scat-
“ tered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone :
“ and yet, I am not alone, because, the Father, is with me.
³³ These things, I have spoken unto you, that, in me, ye
“ might have peace. In the world, ye shall have tribulation :
“ but, be of good cheer ; I have overcome the world.”

CHAPTER XVII.

1 Christ prayeth to his Father to glorify him, 6 to preserve his apostles, 11 in unity, 17 and truth, 20 to glorify them, and all other believers with him in heaven.

¹ These words, spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, “ Father, the hour, is come ; glorify Thy Son, that Thy Son, also, may glorify Thee : ² as Thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give

SAINT JOHN.

“ eternal life to as many, as Thou hast given him. ³ And “ this, is life eternal, that they might know Thee, the only “ true God, and Jesus Christ, whom Thou hast sent. ⁴ I “ have glorified Thee on the earth : I have finished the work, “ which Thou gavest me, to do. ⁵ And now, O, Father, glo- “ rify Thou me, with Thine ownself, with the glory, which I “ had with Thee, before the world, was. ⁶ I have manifested “ Thy name unto the men, which Thou gavest me out of the “ world : Thine they were, and Thou gavest them me ; and “ they have kept Thy word. ⁷ Now, they have known, that “ all things whatsoever Thou hast given me, are of Thee. “ ⁸ For, I have given unto them the words, which Thou gav- “ est me ; and they have received *them*, and have known “ surely, that I came out from Thee, and they have believed, “ that Thou didst send me.

⁹ “ I pray for them : I pray not for the world, but, for them, “ which Thou hast given me ; for, they are Thine. ¹⁰ And “ all mine, are Thine, and Thine, are mine ; and I am glori- “ fied in them. ¹¹ And now, I am no more in the world, “ but, these, are in the world, and I come to Thee. Holy “ Father, keep, through Thine own name, those, whom Thou “ hast given me, that they may be one, as we *are*. ¹² While “ I was with them in the world, I kept them in Thy name : “ those, that Thou gavest me, I have kept, and none of them, “ is lost, but, the son of perdition ; that the Scripture, might “ be fulfilled. ¹³ And now, come I to Thee ; and these things, “ I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled “ in themselves. ¹⁴ I have given them Thy word ; and the world, “ hath hated them, because, **THEY** are not of the world, even “ as I am not of the world. ¹⁵ I pray not, that Thou should- “ est take them out of the world, but, that thou shouldest keep “ them from the evil. ¹⁶ **THEY** are not of the world, even “ as I am not of the world.” ¹⁷ Sanctify them through Thy “ truth : Thy word, is truth. ¹⁸ As Thou hast sent **ME** into “ the world, even so, have I, also, sent **THEM** into the world. “ ¹⁹ And, for their sakes, I sanctify myself, that they, also, might “ be sanctified, through the truth.

²⁰ “ Neither pray I for these alone, but, for them, also, which “ shall believe on me through their word ; ²¹ that they all “ may be one ; as Thou, Father, *art* in me, and I in Thee, “ that they, also, may be one in us : that the world, may be-

CHAPTER XVIII.

“ lieve, that Thou hast sent me. ²² And the glory, which “ Thou gavest **ME**, I have given **THEM**; that they may be “ one, even as we are one: ²³ I in them, and Thou in me, “ that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world “ may know, that Thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, “ as Thou hast loved me.

²⁴ “ Father, I will, that they also, whom Thou hast given “ me, be with me, where I am; that they may behold my “ glory, which Thou hast given me: for, Thou lovedst me “ before the foundation of the world. ²⁵ O, righteous Father, “ the world, hath not known Thee: but, I have known Thee, “ and these, have known, that Thou hast sent me. ²⁶ And I “ have declared unto them Thy name, and will declare *it*: “ that the love, wherewith Thou hast loved me, may be in “ them, and I in them.”

CHAPTER XVIII.

1 Judas betrayeth Jesus. 6 The officers fall to the ground 10 Peter smiteth off Malchus' ear. 12 Jesus is taken, and led unto Annas and Caiaphas. 15 Peter's denial. 19 Jesus examined before Caiaphas. 28 His arraignment before Pilate. 36 His kingdom. 40 The Jews ask Barabbas to be let loose.

¹ When Jesus, had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entered, and his disciples. ² And Judas also, which betrayed him, knew the place: for, Jesus, oftentimes resorted thither with his disciples.

³ Judas, then, having received a band *of men*, and officers from the Chief Priests, and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns, and torches, and weapons.

⁴ Jesus, therefore, knowing all things, that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them, “ Whom seek ye?”

⁵ They answered him, “ Jesus of Nazareth.”

Jesus, saith unto them, “ I am *he*.”

And Judas also, which betrayed him, stood with them.

⁶ As soon, then, as he had said unto them, “ I am *he*,” they went backward, and fell to the ground.

⁷ Then asked he them again, “ Whom seek ye?”

And they said, “ Jesus of Nazareth.”

SAINT JOHN.

⁸ Jesus answered, “ I have told you, that I am *he*: if, therefore, ye seek *me*, let these, go their way : ” ⁹ (that the saying, might be fulfilled, which he spake, “ Of them, which “ Thou gavest me, have I lost none.”)

¹⁰ Then Simon Peter, having a sword, drew it, and smote the High Priest’s servant, and cut off his right ear. The servant’s name, was Malchus.

¹¹ Then said Jesus unto Peter, “ Put up thy sword into the sheath : the cup, which my Father, hath given me, shall “ I not drink it ? ”

¹² Then the band, and the captain, and officers of the Jews, took Jesus, and bound him, ¹³ and led him away to Annas first ; for, he was father in law to Caiaphas, which was the High Priest that same year. ¹⁴ Now, Caiaphas, was he, which gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient, that one man, should die for the people.

¹⁵ And Simon Peter, followed Jesus, and *so did* another disciple : that disciple, was known unto the High Priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace of the High Priest.

¹⁶ But, Peter, stood at the door without. Then went out that other disciple, which was known unto the High Priest, and spake unto her, that kept the door, and brought in Peter.

¹⁷ Then saith the damsel, that kept the door, unto Peter, “ Art not thou, also, *one* of this man’s disciples ? ”

He saith, “ I am not.”

¹⁸ And the servants, and officers, stood there, who had made a fire of coals ; for, it was cold : and they warmed themselves : and Peter, stood with them, and warmed himself.

¹⁹ The High Priest, then, asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.

²⁰ Jesus, answered him, “ I spake, openly, to the world ; I “ ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither “ the Jews, always resort ; and, in secret, have I said nothing. “ ²¹ Why askest thou me ? ask them, which heard me, what “ I have said unto them : behold, they know what I said.”

²² And when he had thus spoken, one of the officers, which stood by, struck Jesus with the palm of his hand, saying, “ Answerest thou the High Priest so ? ”

²³ Jesus, answered him, “ If I have spoken evil, bear *WIT-*
“ *NESS* of the evil : but, if well, why smitest thou me ? ”—

CHAPTER XVIII.

²⁴ Now, Annas, had sent him bound unto Caiaphas the High Priest.

²⁵ And Simon Peter, stood, and warmed himself. They said, therefore, unto him, “ Art not thou, also, *one* of his dis-
“ ciples ? ”

He denied it, and said, “ I am not.”

²⁶ One of the servants of the High Priest,—being his kins-
man, whose ear, Peter, cut off,—saith, “ Did not I see thee
“ in the garden with him ? ”

²⁷ Peter, then, denied again: and immediately, the cock
crew.

²⁸ Then led they Jesus from Caiaphas unto the hall
of judgment: and it was early; and they themselves went not
into the judgment hall, lest they should be defiled; but, that
they might eat the Passover.

²⁹ Pilate, then, went out unto them, and said, “ What
“ accusation, bring ye against this man ? ”

³⁰ They answered, and said unto him, “ If he were not a
“ malefactor, we would not have delivered him up unto thee.”

³¹ Then said Pilate unto them, “ Take ye him, and judge
“ him according to your law.”

The Jews, therefore, said unto him, “ It is not lawful, for
“ us, to put any man to death : ” ³² (that the saying of Jesus,
might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying, what death, he
should die.)

³³ Then Pilate, entered into the judgment hall again,
and called Jesus, and said unto him, “ Art thou the King of
“ the Jews ? ”

³⁴ Jesus, answered him, “ Sayest thou this thing of thyself,
“ or, did others tell it thee of me ? ”

³⁵ Pilate, answered, “ Am I a Jew ? Thine own nation,
“ and the Chief Priests, have delivered thee unto me: what
“ hast thou done ? ”

³⁶ Jesus, answered, “ My kingdom, is not of this world: if
“ my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants
“ fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but, now,
“ is my kingdom not from hence.”

³⁷ Pilate, therefore, said unto him, “ Art thou a king then ? ”

Jesus, answered, “ Thou sayest, that I am a king. To this
“ end, was I born, and for this cause, came I into the world,

SAINT JOHN.

" that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one, that is of the truth, heareth my voice."

"²⁸ Pilate, saith unto him, "What is truth?"—And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, "I find in him no fault *at all*. ²⁹ But, ye have a custom, that I should release unto you one, at the Pass-over: will ye, therefore, that I release unto you the King of the Jews?"

"³⁰ Then cried they all again, saying, "Not this man, but, Barabbas."—Now, Barabbas, was a robber.

CHAPTER XIX.

1 Christ is scourged, crowned with thorns, and beaten. 4 Pilate is desirous to release him, but being overcome with the outrage of the Jews, he delivered him to be crucified. 23 They cast lots for his garments. 26 He commendeth his mother to John. 28 He dieth. 31 His side is pierced. 38 He is buried by Joseph and Nicodemus.

"¹ Then Pilate, therefore, took Jesus, and scourged him.
² And the soldiers, platted a crown of thorns, and put it on his head, and they put on him a purple robe, ³ and said, "Hail, King of the Jews!" and they smote him with their hands.

"⁴ Pilate, therefore, went forth again, and saith unto them, "Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know, that I find no fault in him."

"⁵ Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And Pilate, saith unto them, "Behold the man!"

"⁶ When the Chief Priests, therefore, and officers, saw him, they cried out, saying, "Crucify him, crucify him."

Pilate, saith unto them, "Take ye him, and crucify him: for, I find no fault in him."

"⁷ The Jews, answered him, "We have a law, and, by our law, he ought, to die, because, he made himself the Son of God."

"⁸ When Pilate, therefore, heard that saying, he was the more afraid; ⁹ and went again into the judgment hall, and saith unto Jesus, "Whence art thou?"—But, Jesus, gave him no answer.—¹⁰ Then saith Pilate unto him, "Speakest

CHAPTER XIX.

" thou not unto me? knowest thou not, that I have power,
" to crucify thee, and have power, to release thee?"

¹¹ Jesus, answered, " Thou couldst have no power, *at all*,
" against me, except it were given thee from above: there-
" fore, he, that delivered me unto thee, hath the greater sin."

¹² And, from thenceforth, Pilate, sought, to release him: but, the Jews, cried out, saying, " If thou let this man go,
" thou art not Cæsar's friend: whosoever maketh himself a
" king, speaketh against Cæsar."

¹³ When Pilate, therefore, heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgment seat, in a place, that is called the Pavement, but, in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.
¹⁴ And it was the preparation of the Passover, and about the sixth hour: and he saith unto the Jews, " Behold your
" King!"

¹⁵ But, they cried out, " Away with *him*, away with *him*,
" crucify him."

Pilate, saith unto them, " Shall I crucify your King?"

The Chief Priests, answered, " We have no king, but,
" Cæsar."

¹⁶ Then delivered he him, therefore, unto them, to be crucified. And they took Jesus, and led *him* away. ¹⁷ And he, bearing his cross, went forth into a place, called *the place* of a skull, which is called in the Hebrew, Golgotha: ¹⁸ where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst.

¹⁹ And Pilate, wrote a title, and put *it* on the cross. And the writing, was,—

" JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE
" JEWS."

²⁰ This title, then, read many of the Jews: for, the place, where Jesus, was crucified, was nigh to the city: and it was written in Hebrew, *and* Greek, *and* Latin.

²¹ Then said the Chief Priests of the Jews to Pilate, " Write not, ' The King of the Jews; ' but, that he SAID,
" ' I am the King of the Jews.' "

²² Pilate, answered, " What I have written, I have written."

²³ Then the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, and made four parts, to every soldier a

SAINT JOHN.

part; and also *his* coat: now, the coat, was without seam, woven from the top throughout. ²⁴ They said, therefore, among themselves, "Let us not rend it, but, cast lots for it, " whose it shall be:" that the Scripture, might be fulfilled, which saith, "They parted my raiment among them, and, for "my vesture, they did cast lots." These things, therefore, the soldiers, did.

²⁵ Now, there stood by the cross of Jesus, his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary the *wife* of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene. ²⁶ When Jesus, therefore, saw his mother, and the disciple, standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, "Woman, behold thy son!" ²⁷ Then saith he to the disciple, "Behold thy mother!"—And, from that hour, that disciple, took her unto his own *home*.

²⁸ After this, Jesus, knowing, that all things, were now accomplished, that the Scripture, might be fulfilled, saith, "I "thirst."—²⁹ Now there was set a vessel, full of vinegar: and they filled a spunge with vinegar, and put *it* upon hyssop, and put *it* to his mouth. ³⁰ When Jesus, therefore, had received the vinegar, he said,—

"It is finished:"

and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

³¹ The Jews therefore, because, it was the preparation, that the bodies, should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath day, (for, that sabbath day, was an high day,) besought Pilate, that their legs, might be broken, and *that* they might be taken away. ³² Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other, which was crucified with him. ³³ But, when they came to Jesus, and saw, that he was dead already, they brake not his legs: ³⁴ but, one of the soldiers, with a spear, pierced his side, and, forthwith, came thereout blood, and water. ³⁵ And he, that saw *it*, bare record, and his record, is true: and he knoweth, that he saith true, that ye might believe. ³⁶ For, these things, were done, that the Scripture, should be fulfilled, "A bone of him, shall not be "broken." ³⁷ And, again, another Scripture, saith, "They "shall look on him, whon they pierced."

³⁸ And, after this, Joseph of Arimathaea, being a dis-

CHAPTER XX.

ciple of Jesus, but, secretly, for fear of the Jews, besought Pilate, that he might take away the body of Jesus: and Pilate, gave him leave. He came therefore, and took the body of Jesus. ³⁹ And there came, also, Nicodemus, which, at the first, came to Jesus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about an hundred pound weight. ⁴⁰ Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes, with the spices, as the manner of the Jews, is, to bury. ⁴¹ Now, in the place, where he was crucified, there was a garden; and, in the garden, a new sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid. ⁴² There laid they Jesus therefore, because of the Jews' preparation day; for, the sepulchre, was nigh at hand.

CHAPTER XX.

1 Mary cometh to the sepulchre: 3 so do Peter and John, ignorant of the resurrection. 11 Jesus appeareth to Mary Magdalene, 19 and to his disciples. 24 The incredulity and confession of Thomas. 30 The Scripture is sufficient to salvation.

¹ The first day of the week, cometh Mary Magdalene early, when it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre, and seeth the stone, taken away from the sepulchre. ² Then she runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, “ They have taken away “ the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not, where they “ have laid him.”

³ Peter, therefore, went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre. ⁴ So, they ran both together: and the other disciple, did outrun Peter, and came, first, to the sepulchre. ⁵ And he, stooping down, *and looking in*, saw the linen clothes lying; yet, went he not in. ⁶ Then cometh Simon Peter, following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes lie, ⁷ and the napkin, that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but, wrapped together in a place by itself. ⁸ Then went in, also, that other disciple, which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw, and believed. ⁹ For, as yet, they knew not the Scripture, that he must rise again from the dead. ¹⁰ Then the disciples, went away again unto their own home.

¹¹ But, Mary, stood without at the sepulchre, weeping:

SAINT JOHN.

and, as she wept, she stooped down, *and looked* into the sepulchre,¹² and seeth two angels, in white, sitting, the one, at the head, and the other, at the feet, where the body of Jesus, had lain.

¹³ And they say unto her, “Woman, why weepest thou?”

She saith unto them, “Because, they have taken away my Lord, and I know not, where they have laid him.”—

¹⁴ And when she had thus said, she turned herself back, and saw Jesus, standing, and knew not, that it was Jesus.

¹⁵ Jesus, saith unto her, “Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou?”

She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, “Sir, if thou have borne him hence, tell me, where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.”

¹⁶ Jesus, saith unto her, “Mary.”

She turned herself, and saith unto him, “Rabboni;” which is to say, Master.

¹⁷ Jesus, saith unto her, “Touch me not; for, I am not yet ascended to my Father: but, go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto MY Father, and YOUR Father; and to MY God, and your God.”

¹⁸ Mary Magdalene, came, and told the disciples, that she had seen the Lord, and *that* he had spoken these things unto her.

¹⁹ Then, the same day, at evening, being the first *day* of the week, when the doors, were shut, where the disciples, were assembled, for fear of the Jews, came Jesus, and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, “Peace *be* unto you.”

²⁰ And when he had so said, he shewed unto them *his* hands, and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord.

²¹ Then said Jesus to them again, “Peace *be* unto you: as *my* Father, hath sent *ME*, even so, send I you.”

²² And when he had said this, he breathed on *them*, and saith unto them, “Receive ye the Holy Ghost: ²³ whose soever sins, ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever *sins*, ye retain, they are retained.”

²⁴ But, Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them, when Jesus, came. ²⁵ The other disciples, therefore, said unto him, “We have seen the Lord.”

But, he said unto them, “Except I shall see, in his hands,

CHAPTER XXI.

“ the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print
“ of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not
“ believe.”

²⁶ And, after eight days, again his disciples, were within, and Thomas with them : *then* came Jesus, the doors, being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, “ Peace *be* unto you.”

²⁷ Then saith he to Thomas, “ Reach hither thy finger, “ and behold my hands ; and reach hither thy hand, and “ thrust *it* into my side : and be not faithless, but, believing.”

²⁸ And Thomas, answered, and said unto him, “ My Lord, “ and my God.”

²⁹ Jesus, saith unto him, “ Thomas, because, thou hast “ seen me, thou hast believed : blessed *are* they, that have “ NOT seen, and *yet* have believed.”

³⁰ And many other signs, truly, did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book :

³¹ but, these, are written, that ye might believe, that Jesus, is the Christ, the Son of God ; and that, believing, ye might have life through his name.

CHAPTER XXI.

1 Christ appearing again to his disciples was known of them by the great draught of fishes. 12 He dinneth with them : 15 earnestly commandeth Peter to feed his lambs and sheep : 18 foretelleth him of his death : 22 rebuketh his curiosity touching John. 25 The conclusion.

¹ After these things, Jesus, shewed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias ; and, on this wise, shewed he himself.

² There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas, called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples. ³ Simon Peter, saith unto them, “ I go a fishing.”

They say unto him, “ We, also, go with thee.”—They went forth, and entered into a ship immediately ; and, that night, they caught nothing.

⁴ But, when the morning, was now come, Jesus, stood on the shore : but, the disciples, knew not, that it was Jesus.—⁵ Then Jesus, saith unto them, “ Children, have ye “ any meat ? ”

SAINT JOHN.

They answered him, " No."

" And he said unto them, " Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find."

They cast therefore, and now, they were not able, to draw it, for the multitude of fishes. ⁷ Therefore, that disciple, whom Jesus, loved, saith unto Peter, " It is the Lord."

Now, when Simon Peter, heard, that it was the Lord, he girt *his* fisher's coat *unto him*, (for, he was naked,) and did cast himself into the sea. ⁸ And the other disciples, came in a little ship ; (for, they were not far from land, but, as it were two hundred cubits,) dragging the net with fishes. ⁹ As soon, then, as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread.

¹⁰ Jesus, saith unto them, " Bring of the fish, which ye have now caught."

¹¹ Simon Peter, went up, and drew the net to land, full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three : and for all there were so many, yet, was not the net broken.

¹² Jesus, saith unto them, " Come, *and* dine."

And none of the disciples, durst ask him, " Who art thou?" knowing, that it was the Lord.

¹³ Jesus, then, cometh, and taketh bread, and giveth them, and fish likewise.—¹⁴ This, is now the third time, that Jesus, shewed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

¹⁵ So, when they had dined, Jesus, saith to Simon Peter, " Simon, *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these?"

He saith unto him, " Yea, Lord ; thou knowest, that I love thee."

He saith unto him, " Feed my lambs." ¹⁶ He saith to him again, the second time, " Simon, *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me?"

He saith unto him, " Yea, Lord ; thou knowest, that I love thee."

He saith unto him, " Feed my sheep." ¹⁷ He saith unto him the third time, " Simon, *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me?"

Peter, was grieved, because, he said unto him the third time, " Lovest thou me ?" And he said unto him, " Lord, thou knowest all things ; thou knowest, that I love thee."

Jesus, saith unto him, " Feed my sheep." ¹⁸ Verily, verily, " I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst

CHAPTER XXI.

“ thyself, and walkedst, whither thou wouldest : but, when
“ thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and
“ another, shall gird thee, and carry *thee*, whither thou would-
“ est not.”—¹⁹ This spake he, signifying, by what death, he
should glorify God.—And, when he had spoken this, he
saith unto him, “ Follow me.”

²⁰ Then Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple, whom Jesus
loved, following ; which, also, leaned on his breast at supper,
and said, “ Lord, which is he, that betrayeth thee ? ” ²¹ Peter,
seeing him, saith to Jesus, “ Lord, and what *shall* this man
“ *do* ? ”

²² Jesus, saith unto him, “ If I will, that he tarry, till I
“ come, what *is that* to thee ? follow thou me.”

²³ Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that
that disciple, should not die : yet, Jesus, said not unto him,
“ He shall not die ; ” but, “ If I will, that he tarry, till I
“ come, what *is that* to thee ? ”

²⁴ This, is the disciple, which testifieth of these things,
and wrote these things : and we know, that his testimony, is
true. ²⁵ And there are, also, many other things, which Jesus,
did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose,
that even the world itself, could not contain the books, that
should be written. Amen.

TABLE OF QUOTATIONS, &c.

ILLUSTRATIVE OF THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. JOHN.

CHAPTER I. Verse 23—Isaiah, xl. 3. Verse 51—Genesis, xxviii. 12.

CHAPTER II. Verse 17—Psalm, lxix. 9.

CHAPTER III. Verse 14—Numbers, xxxi. 8, 9.

CHAPTER VI. Verse 31—Exodus, xvi. 15, and Psalm, lxxviii. 24, 25. Verse 45—Isaiah, liv. 13, and Jeremiah, xxxi. 34. Verse 49—Exodus, xvi. 15.

CHAPTER VII. Verse 22—Leviticus, xii. 3, and Genesis, xvii. 10. Verse 38—Proverbs, xviii. 4, and Isaiah, xliv. 3. Verse 42—Psalm, lxxxix. 4, cxxxii. 11, and Micah, v. 2.

CHAPTER VIII. Verse 5—Leviticus, xx. 10, and Deuteronomy, xxii. 21. Verse 17—Deuteronomy, xvii. 6, and xix. 15.

CHAPTER IX. Verse 31—Proverbs, xxviii. 9.

CHAPTER X. Verse 34—Psalm, lxxxii. 6.

CHAPTER XII. Verse 13—Psalm, cxviii. 25, 26. Verse 15—Zechariah, ix. 9. Verse 34—Isaiah, ix. 7, and Psalm, lxxxii. 36, 37. Verse 39—Isaiah, liii. 1. Verse 40—Isaiah, vi. 10.

CHAPTER XIII. Verse 18—Psalm, xli. 9.

CHAPTER XIV. Verse 25—Psalm, lxix. 4.

CHAPTER XVII. Verse 12—Psalm, cix. 8—17.

CHAPTER XIX. Verse 24—Psalm, xxii. 18. Verse 28—Psalm, lxix. 21. Verse 36—Psalm, xxxiv. 20, and Numbers, ix. 12. Verse 37—Zechariah, xii. 10.

CHAPTER XX. Verse 9—Psalm, xvi. 10.

THE
ACTS OF THE APOSTLES.

NOTE.—This Book was written at Alexandria, by St. Luke, about
A. D. 63.

CHAPTER I.

1 Christ, preparing his apostles to the beholding of his ascension, gathereth them together into the mount Olivet, commandeth them to expect in Jerusalem the sending down of the Holy Ghost, promiseth after few days to send it : by virtue whereof they should be witnesses unto him, even to the utmost parts of the earth. 9 After his ascension they are warned by two angels to depart, and to set their minds upon his second coming. 12 They accordingly return, and, giving themselves to prayer, choose Matthias apostle in the place of Judas.

¹ THE former treatise, have I made, O Theophilus, of all, that Jesus, began, both to do, and teach, ² until the day, in which he was taken up, after that he, through the Holy Ghost, had given commandments unto the apostles, whom he had chosen : ³ to whom, also, he shewed himself alive, after his passion, by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things, pertaining to the kingdom of God : ⁴ and, being assembled together with *them*, commanded them, that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but, wait for the promise of the Father, “ which,” saith he, “ ye have heard of “ me. ⁵ For, John, truly, baptized with WATER ; but, ye “ shall be baptized with the HOLY GHOST not many days “ hence.”

⁶ When they, therefore, were come together, they asked of him, saying, “ Lord, wilt thou, at this time, restore again “ the kingdom to Israel ? ”

⁷ And he said unto them, “ It is not for you, to know the “ times, or, the seasons, which the Father, hath put in His “ own power. ⁸ But, ye shall receive power, after that the

THE ACTS.

“ Holy Ghost, is come upon you : and ye shall be witnesses unto me, both in Jerusalem, and in all Judæa, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.”

9 And, when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up ; and a cloud, received him out of their sight.

10 And, while they looked, stedfastly, toward heaven, as he went up, behold, two men, stood by them in white apparel ; 11 which, also, said, “ Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven ? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come, in like manner, as ye have seen him go into heaven.”

12 Then returned they unto Jerusalem from the mount, called Olivet, which is, from Jerusalem, a sabbath day’s journey.

13 And, when they were come in, they went up into an upper room, where abode both Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, James *the son of Alphæus*, and Simon Zelotes, and Judas *the brother of James*. 14 These all, continued, with one accord, in prayer, and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his brethren.

15 And, in those days, Peter, stood up in the midst of the disciples, and said, (the number of the names together, were about an hundred and twenty,) 16 “ Men, and brethren, this Scripture, must needs have been fulfilled, which the Holy Ghost, by the mouth of David, spake, before, concerning Judas, which was guide to them, that took Jesus. 17 For, he was numbered with us, and had obtained part of this ministry.”—18 Now, this man, purchased a field with the reward of iniquity ; and, falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels, gushed out. 19 And it was known unto all the dwellers at Jerusalem ; insomuch, as that field, is called in their proper tongue, Aceldama, that is to say, The field of blood.—20 “ For, it is written in the book of Psalms, ‘ Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein : ’ and, ‘ His bishopric, let another take.’ 21 Wherefore, of these men, which have companied with us, all the time, that the Lord Jesus, went in and out among us, 22 beginning from the baptism of John, unto that same day, that he was taken up from us, must one be ordained, to be a witness, with us, of his resurrection.”

23 And they appointed two, Joseph, called Barsabas, who

CHAPTER II.

was surnamed Justus, and Matthias. ²⁴ And they prayed, and said, "Thou, Lord, which knowest the hearts of all *men*, shew, whether of these two, thou hast chosen, ²⁵ that he may take part of this ministry, and apostleship, from which, "Judas, by transgression, fell, that he might go to his own "place."

²⁶ And they gave forth their lots; and the lot, fell upon Matthias; and he was numbered with the eleven apostles.

CHAPTER II.

1 The apostles, filled with the Holy Ghost, and speaking divers languages, are admired by some, and derided by others. 14 Whom Peter disproving, and shewing that the apostle spake by the power of the Holy Ghost, that Jesus was risen from the dead, ascended into heaven, had poured down the same Holy Ghost, and was the Messias, a man known to them to be approved of God by his miracles, wonders, and signs, and not crucified without His determinate counsel and foreknowledge : 37 he baptizeth a great number that were converted. 41 Who afterwards devoutly and charitably converse together : the apostles working many miracles, and God daily increasing His Church.

¹ And, when the day of Pentecost, was fully come, they were all, with one accord, in one place. ² And, suddenly, there came a sound from heaven, as of a rushing, mighty wind, and it filled all the house, where they were sitting. ³ And there appeared unto them cloven tongues, like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. ⁴ And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began, to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit, gave them utterance.

⁵ And there were, dwelling at Jerusalem, Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven. ⁶ Now, when this, was noised abroad, the multitude, came together, and were confounded, because, that every man, heard them speak in his own language. ⁷ And they were all amazed, and marvelled, saying one to another, "Behold, are not all these, which speak, "Galileans? ⁸ And how hear we every man in our own "tongue, wherein we were born? ⁹ Parthians, and Medes, "and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Ju- "daea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia, ¹⁰ Phrygia, and "Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya about Cy- "rene, and strangers of Rome, Jews, and proselytes, ¹¹ Cretes,

THE ACTS

“ and Arabians, we do hear them speak, in our tongues, the wonderful works of God.” ¹² And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, “ What meaneth this ? ”

¹³ Others, mocking, said, “ These men, are full of new wine.”

¹⁴ But, Peter, standing up with the eleven, lifted up his voice, and said unto them, “ Ye men of Judæa, and all ye, that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and hearken to my words : ¹⁵ for, these, are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeing, it is *but* the third hour of the day. ¹⁶ But, this, is that, which was spoken by the prophet Joel ; ¹⁷ ‘ And it shall come to pass, in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh : and your sons, and your daughters, shall prophesy, and your young men, shall see visions, and your old men, shall dream dreams : ¹⁸ and on my servants, and on my handmaidens, I will pour out, in those days, of my Spirit ; and they shall prophesy : ¹⁹ and I will shew wonders in heaven above, and signs in the earth beneath ; blood, and fire, and vapour of smoke : ²⁰ the sun, shall be turned into darkness, and the moon, into blood, before that great, and notable day of the Lord, come : ²¹ and it shall come to pass, *that* whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord, shall be saved.’

²² “ Ye men of Israel, hear these words ; Jesus of Nazareth, a man, approved of God among you, by miracles, and wonders, and signs, which God, did, by him, in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know : ²³ him, being delivered by the determinate counsel, and foreknowledge, of God, ye have taken, and, by wicked hands, have crucified, and slain : ²⁴ whom God, hath raised up, having loosed the pains of death : because, it was not possible, that he should be holden of it. ²⁵ For, David, speaketh concerning him, ‘ I foresaw the Lord, always, before my face, for, he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved : ²⁶ therefore, did my heart rejoice, and my tongue, was glad ; moreover, also, my flesh, shall rest in hope : ²⁷ because, Thou wilt not leave my soul in hell, neither, wilt Thou suffer Thine Holy One, to see corruption. ²⁸ Thou hast made known to me the ways of life ; Thou shalt make me full of joy, with Thy countenance.’

²⁹ “ Men, and brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead, and buried, and

CHAPTER II

“ his sepulchre, is with us unto this day. ³⁰ Therefore, being “ a prophet, and knowing, that God, had sworn, with an oath, “ to him, that, of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, “ He would raise up Christ, to sit on his throne ; ³¹ he, see- “ ing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his “ soul, was not left in hell, neither, his flesh, did see corrup- “ tion. ³² This Jesus, hath God raised up, whereof we all “ are witnesses. ³³ Therefore, being, by the right hand of “ God, exalted, and having received, of the Father, the promise “ of the Holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which ye now “ see, and hear. ³⁴ For, David, is not ascended into the hea- “ vens : but, he saith himself, ‘ The L ORD, said unto my “ ‘ Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, ³⁵ until I make thy “ ‘ foes thy footstool.’ ³⁶ Therefore, let all the house of “ Israel know assuredly, that God, hath made that same “ Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord, and Christ.”

³⁷ Now, when they heard *this*, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter, and to the rest of the apostles, “ Men, and brethren, what shall we do ? ”

³⁸ Then Peter, said unto them, “ Repent, and be baptized, “ every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ, for the re- “ mission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy “ Ghost. ³⁹ For, the promise, is unto you, and to your chil- “ dren, and to all, that are afar off, *even* as many, as the “ Lord our God, shall call.” — ⁴⁰ And, with many other words, did he testify, and exhort, saying, “ Save yourselves “ from this untoward generation.”

⁴¹ Then they, that gladly received his word, were baptized : and the same day, there were added *unto them*, about three thousand souls. ⁴² And they continued, stedfastly, in the apostles’ doctrine, and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers. ⁴³ And fear, came upon every soul : and many wonders, and signs, were done by the apostles.

⁴⁴ And all, that believed, were together, and had all things common ; ⁴⁵ and sold their possessions, and goods, and parted them to all *men*, as every man, had need. ⁴⁶ And they, contin-
uing daily, with one accord, in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness, and singleness of heart, ⁴⁷ praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord, added to the Church daily, such, as should be saved.

CHAPTER III.

1 Peter preaching to the people that came to see a lame man restored to his feet, **12** professeth the cure not to have been wrought by his or John's own power, or holiness, but by God, and His Son Jesus, and through faith in his name : **13** withal reprehending them for crucifying Jesus. **17** Which because they did it through ignorance, and that thereby were fulfilled God's determinate counsel, and the Scriptures : **19** he exhorted them by repentance and faith to seek remission of their sins, and salvation in the same Jesus.

1 Now Peter, and John, went up together into the temple, at the hour of prayer, *being the ninth hour.* **2** And a certain man, lame from his mother's womb, was carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple, which is called Beautiful, to ask alms of them, that entered into the temple ; **3** who, seeing Peter, and John, about, to go into the temple, asked an alms. **4** And Peter, fastening his eyes upon him, with John, said, "Look on us."

5 And he gave heed unto them, expecting to receive something of them.

6 Then Peter, said, "Silver, and gold, have I none ; but, "such as I have, give I thee : In the name of Jesus Christ "of Nazareth, rise up, and walk."

7 And he took him by the right hand, and lifted him up : and, immediately, his feet, and ankle bones, received strength. **8** And he, leaping up, stood, and walked, and entered, with them, into the temple, walking, and leaping, and praising God. **9** And all the people, saw him, walking, and praising God : **10** and they knew, that it was he, which sat, for alms, at the Beautiful gate of the temple : and they were filled with wonder, and amazement, at that, which had happened unto him. **11** And as the lame man, which was healed, held Peter, and John, all the people, ran together unto them in the porch, that is called Solomon's, greatly wondering.

12 And when Peter, saw it, he answered unto the people, "Ye men of Israel, why marvel ye at this ? or, why look ye, "so earnestly, on us, as though, by our own power, or, holiness, we had made this man, to walk ? **13** The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers, "hath glorified His Son Jesus ; whom ye delivered up, and "denied him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined, to let him go. **14** But, ye denied the Holy One, and

CHAPTER IV.

" the Just, and desired a murderer, to be granted unto you ;
" ¹⁵ and killed the Prince of life, whom God, hath raised
" from the dead ; whereof we are witnesses. ¹⁶ And his
" name, through faith in his name, hath made this man
" strong, whom ye see, and know : yea, the faith, which is
" by him, hath given him this perfect soundness, in the pre-
" sence of you all.

¹⁷ " And now, brethren, I wot, that, through ignorance, ye
" did *it*, as *did*, also, your rulers. ¹⁸ But, those things, which
" God, before, had shewed by the mouth of all His prophets,
" that Christ, should suffer, He hath so fulfilled. ¹⁹ Repent
" ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins, may be
" blotted out, when the times of refreshing, shall come from
" the presence of the Lord ; ²⁰ and He shall send Jesus
" Christ, which, before, was preached unto you : ²¹ whom the
" heaven, must receive, until the times of restitution of all
" things, which God, hath spoken by the mouth of all His
" holy prophets, since the world, began. ²² For, Moses,
" truly said unto the fathers, ' A prophet, shall the Lord
" ' your God raise up unto you, of your brethren, like unto
" ' me ; him shall ye hear in all things, whatsoever he shall
" ' say unto you. ²³ And it shall come to pass, *that* every
" ' soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed
" ' from among the people.'

²⁴ " Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel, and those,
" that follow after, as many, as have spoken, have likewise
" foretold of these days. ²⁵ Ye are the children of the pro-
" phets, and of the covenant, which God, made with our
" fathers, saying unto Abraham, ' And, in thy seed, shall all
" ' the kindreds of the earth be blessed.' ²⁶ Unto you first,
" God, having raised up His Son Jesus, sent him, to bless
" you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities."

CHAPTER IV.

¹ *The rulers of the Jews offended with Peter's sermon, 4 (though thousands of the people were converted that heard the word,) imprisoned him and John. 5 After, upon examination Peter boldly avouching the lame man to be healed by the name of Jesus, and that by the same Jesus only we must be eternally saved, 13 they command him and John to preach no more in that name, adding also threat-*

THE ACTS.

ening, 23 whereupon the Church steeeth to prayer. 31 And God, by moving the place where they were assembled, testified that He heard their prayer: confirming the Church with the gift of the Holy Ghost, and with mutual love and charity.

¹ And, as they spake unto the people, the Priests, and the captain of the temple, and the Sadducees, came upon them, ² being grieved, that they taught the people, and preached, through Jesus, the resurrection from the dead. ³ And they laid hands on them, and put *them* in hold unto the next day: for, it was now eventide. ⁴ Howbeit, many of them, which heard the word, believed; and the number of the men, was about five thousand. ⁵ And it came to pass, on the morrow, that their rulers, and elders, and Scribes, ⁶ and Annas the High Priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many, as were of the kindred of the High Priest, were gathered together at Jerusalem.

⁷ And when they had set them in the midst, they asked, “By what power, or, by what name, have ye done this?”

⁸ Then Peter, filled with the Holy Ghost, said unto them, “Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel, ⁹ if we, this day, be examined of the good deed, done to the impotent man, by what means, he is made whole; ¹⁰ be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God, raised from the dead, even by him, doth this man stand here before you whole. ¹¹ This, is the stone, which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner. ¹² Neither, is there salvation in any other: for, there is none other name, under heaven, given among men, whereby we must be saved.”

¹³ Now, when they saw the boldness of Peter, and John, and perceived, that they were unlearned, and ignorant men, they marvelled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus. ¹⁴ And, beholding the man, which was healed, standing with them, they could say nothing against it. ¹⁵ But, when they had commanded them, to go aside out of the council, they conferred among themselves, ¹⁶ saying, “What shall we do to these men? for, that, indeed, a notable miracle, hath been done by them, is manifest to all them, that dwell in Jerusalem; and we cannot deny it. ¹⁷ But, that it spread no further among the people, let us straitly

CHAPTER IV.

“ threaten them, that they speak, henceforth, to no man in this “ name.” ¹⁸ And they called them, and commanded them, not to speak at all, nor, teach, in the name of Jesus.

¹⁹ But, Peter, and John, answered, and said unto them, “ Whether it be right, in the sight of God, to hearken unto “ you, more than unto God, judge ye. ²⁰ For, we cannot but “ speak the things, which we have seen, and heard.”

²¹ So, when they had further threatened them, they let them go, finding nothing, how they might punish them, because of the people: for, all *men*, glorified God, for that, which was done. ²² For, the man, was above forty years old, on whom, this miracle of healing, was shewed.

²³ And, being let go, they went to their own company, and reported all, that the Chief Priests, and elders, had said unto them.

²⁴ And when they heard that, they lifted up their voice to God, with one accord, and said, “ Lord, Thou *art* God, which “ hast made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all, that in “ them is: ²⁵ who, by the mouth of Thy servant David, hast “ said, ‘ Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine “ ‘ vain things? ²⁶ The kings of the earth, stood up, and “ ‘ the rulers, were gathered together against the Lord, and “ ‘ against His Christ.’ ²⁷ For, of a truth, against Thy holy “ child Jesus, whom Thou hast anointed, both Herod, and “ Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, “ were gathered together, ²⁸ for to do whatsoever Thy hand, “ and Thy counsel, determined before, to be done. ²⁹ And “ now, Lord, behold their threatenings: and grant unto Thy “ servants, that, with all boldness, they may speak Thy word, “ ³⁰ by stretching forth Thine hand, to heal; and that signs, “ and wonders, may be done, by the name of Thy holy child “ Jesus.”

³¹ And when they had prayed, the place, was shaken, where they were assembled together; and they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldness.

³² And the multitude of them, that believed, were of one heart, and of one soul: neither said any *of them*, that ought of the things, which he possessed, was his own; but, they had all things common.

³³ And, with great power, gave the apostles witness, of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and great grace, was upon

them all. ³⁴ Neither, was there any among them, that lacked: for, as many, as were possessors of lands, or, houses, sold them, and brought the prices of the things, that were sold, ³⁵ and laid *them* down at the apostles' feet: and distribution, was made unto every man, according as he had need.

³⁶ And Joses, who, by the apostles, was surnamed Barnabas, (which is, being interpreted, The son of consolation,) a Levite, *and* of the country of Cyprus, ³⁷ having land, sold *it*, and brought the money, and laid *it* at the apostles' feet.

CHAPTER V.

1 After that Ananias and Sapphira his wife for their hypocrisy at Peter's rebuke had fallen down dead, **12** and that the rest of the apostles had wrought many miracles, **14** to the increase of the faith: **17** the apostles are again imprisoned, **19** but delivered by an angel bidding them to preach openly to all: **21** when, after their teaching accordingly in the temple, **29** and before the council, **33** they are in danger to be killed, through the advice of Gamaliel, a great counsellor among the Jews, they be kept alive, **40** and are but beaten: for which they glorify God, and cease no day from preaching.

1 But, a certain man, named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession, **2** and kept back *part* of the price, his wife, also, being privy to *it*, and brought a certain part, and laid *it* at the apostles' feet.

3 But, Peter, said, "Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart, to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back *part* of the price of the land? **4** Whiles it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? **5** why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto MEN, but, unto GOD."

5 And Ananias, hearing these words, fell down, and gave up the ghost: and great fear, came on all them, that heard these things. **6** And the young men, arose, wound him up, and carried him out, and buried him.

7 And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing, what was done, came in.

8 And Peter, answered unto her, "Tell me, whether ye sold the land for so much?"

And she said, "Yea, for so much."

9 Then Peter, said unto her, "How is it, that ye have

CHAPTER V.

“ agreed together, to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold,
“ the feet of them, which have buried thy husband, *are* at the
“ door, and shall carry thee out.”

¹⁰ Then fell she down, straightway, at his feet, and yielded up the ghost: and the young men, came in, and found her dead, and, carrying *her* forth, buried *her* by her husband.

¹¹ And great fear, came upon all the Church, and upon as many, as heard these things.

¹² And, by the hands of the apostles, were many signs, and wonders, wrought among the people; (and they were all, with one accord, in Solomon’s porch. ¹³ And, of the rest, durst no man join himself to them: but, the people, magnified them. ¹⁴ And believers, were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men, and women.) ¹⁵ Insomuch, that they brought forth the sick into the streets, and laid *them* on beds, and couches, that, at the least, the shadow of Peter, passing by, might overshadow some of them. ¹⁶ There came, also, a multitude, *out* of the cities round about unto Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them, which were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed every one.

¹⁷ Then the High Priest, rose up, and all they, that were with him, (which is the sect of the Sadducees,) and were filled with indignation, ¹⁸ and laid their hands on the apostles, and put them in the common prison.

¹⁹ But, the angel of the Lord, by night, opened the prison doors, and brought them forth, and said, ²⁰ “ Go, stand, and “ speak in the temple, to the people, all the words of this life.”

²¹ And when they heard *that*, they entered into the temple, early in the morning, and taught.

But, the High Priest, came, and they, that were with him, and called the council together, and all the senate of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison, to have them brought.

²² But, when the officers, came, and found them not in the prison, they returned, and told, ²³ saying, “ The prison, truly, “ found we shut, with all safety, and the keepers, standing “ without before the doors: but, when we had opened, we “ found no man within.”

²⁴ Now, when the High Priest, and the captain of the temple, and the Chief Priests, heard these things, they doubted of them, whereunto, this, would grow.

THE ACTS

²⁵ Then came one, and told them, saying, “Behold, the men, whom ye put in prison, are standing in the temple, and teaching the people.”

²⁶ Then went the captain, with the officers, and brought them without violence: for, they feared the people, lest they should have been stoned. ²⁷ And when they had brought them, they set *them* before the council: and the High Priest, asked them, ²⁸ saying, “Did not we straitly command you, ‘that ye should not teach in this name?’ and, behold, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend, to bring ‘this man’s blood upon us.’”

²⁹ Then Peter, and the *other* apostles, answered, and said, “We ought, to obey God, rather than men. ³⁰ The God of our fathers, raised up Jesus, whom ye slew, and hanged on a tree. ³¹ Him hath God exalted, with His right hand, *to be a Prince, and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.* ³² And we are his witnesses of these things; and *so is*, also the Holy Ghost, whom God, hath given to them, that obey Him.”

³³ When they heard *that*, they were cut to the heart, and took counsel, to slay them.

³⁴ Then, stood there up one, in the council, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a doctor of the law, had in reputation among all the people, and commanded, to put the apostles forth a little space; ³⁵ and said unto them, “Ye men of Israel, take heed to yourselves, what ye intend, to do, as touching these men. ³⁶ For, before these days, rose up Thendas, boasting himself, to be somebody; to whom, a number of men, about four hundred, joined themselves: who was slain; and all, as many, as obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to nought. ³⁷ After this man, rose up Judas of Galilee, in the days of the taxing, and drew away much people after him: he, also, perished; and all, *even* as many, as obeyed him, were dispersed. ³⁸ And now, I say unto you, Refrain from these men, and let them alone: for, if this counsel, or, this work, be of men, it will come to nought: ³⁹ but, if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it; lest, haply, ye be found, even to fight against God.”

⁴⁰ And, to him, they agreed: and when they had called the apostles, and beaten *them*, they commanded, that they should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go.

CHAPTER VI.

⁴ And they departed from the presence of the council, rejoicing, that they were counted worthy, to suffer **SHAME** for his name. ⁵ And, daily, in the temple, and in every house, they ceased not, to teach, and preach, Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER VI.

1 *The apostles, desirous to have the poor regarded for their bodily sustenance, as also careful themselves to dispense the word of God, the food of the soul, 3 appoint the office of deaconship to seven chosen men. 5 Of whom Stephen, a man full of faith, and of the Holy Ghost, is one. 12 Who is taken of those, whom he confounded in disputing, 13 and after falsely accused of blasphemy against the law and the temple.*

¹ And, in those days, when the number of the disciples, was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews, because, their widows, were neglected in the daily ministration.

² Then the twelve, called the multitude of the disciples *unto them*, and said, “ It is not reason, that we should leave “ the word of God, and serve tables. ³ Wherefore, brethren, “ look ye out, among you, seven men of honest report, full of “ the Holy Ghost, and wisdom, whom we may appoint over “ this business. ⁴ But, we will give ourselves, continually, to “ prayer, and to the ministry of the word.”

⁵ And the saying, pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith, and of the Holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parinenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch: ⁶ whom they set before the apostles: and, when they had prayed, they laid *their* hands on them.

⁷ And the word of God, increased; and the number of the disciples, multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the Priests, were obedient to the faith.

⁸ And Stephen, full of faith, and power, did great wonders, and miracles, among the people.

⁹ Then, there arose certain of the synagogue, which is called *the synagogue* of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, and of them of Cilicia, and of Asia, disputing with Stephen. ¹⁰ And they were not able, to resist the wisdom, and the spirit, by which he spake. ¹¹ Then they

THE ACTS.

suborned men, which said, “ We have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses, and *against God*. ” ¹² And they stirred up the people, and the elders, and the Scribes, and came upon *him*, and caught him, and brought *him* to the council, ¹³ and set up false witnesses, which said, “ This man, “ ceaseth not, to speak blasphemous words against this holy “ place, and the law : ¹⁴ for, we have heard him say, that this “ Jesus of Nazareth, shall destroy this place, and shall change “ the customs, which Moses, delivered us.”

¹⁵ And all, that sat in the council, looking stedfastly on him, saw his face, as it had been the face of an angel.

CHAPTER VII.

¹ Stephen, permitted to answer to the accusation of blasphemy, ² sheweth that Abraham worshipped God rightly, and how God chose the fathers ²⁰ before Moses was born, and before the tabernacle and temple were built : ³⁷ that Moses himself witnessed of Christ : ⁴⁴ and that all outward ceremonies were ordained according to the heavenly pattern, to last but for a time : ⁵¹ reprehending their rebellion, and murdering of Christ, the Just One, whom the prophets foretold should come into the world. ⁵⁴ Whereupon they stoned him to death, who commendeth his soul to Jesus, and humbly prayeth for them.

¹ Then said the High Priest, “ Are these things so ? ”
And he said, “ Men, brethren, and fathers, hearken ; “ The God of glory, appeared unto our father Abraham, when “ he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran, ³ and “ said unto him, ‘ Get thee out of thy country, and from thy “ kindred, and come into the land, which I shall shew thee.’ “ ⁴ Then came he out of the land of the Chaldæans, and “ dwelt in Charran : and, from thence, when his father, was “ dead, He removed him into this land, wherein ye now “ dwell. ⁵ And He gave him none inheritance in it, no, not *so much* as to set his foot on : yet, He promised, that He “ would give it to him for a possession, and to his seed after “ him, when *as yet* he had no child. ⁶ And God, spake on “ this wise, ‘ That his seed, should sojourn in a strange “ land ; and that they should bring them into bondage, and “ entreat *them* evil four hundred years. ⁷ And the nation, “ to whom they shall be in bondage, will I judge,’ said God :

CHAPTER VII.

“ ‘ and, after that, shall they come forth, and serve me in this
“ ‘ place.’ ⁸ And He gave him the covenant of circumcision:
“ and so, *Abraham*, begat *Isaac*, and circumcised him the
“ eighth day ; and *Isaac*, *begat* *Jacob* ; and *Jacob*, *begat* the
“ twelve patriarchs.

“ “ And the patriarchs, moved with envy, sold Joseph into
“ Egypt : but, God, was with him, ¹⁰ and delivered him out
“ of all his afflictions, and gave him favour, and wisdom, in
“ the sight of Pharaoh king of Egypt ; and he made him
“ governor over Egypt, and all his house. ¹¹ Now, there
“ came a dearth over all the land of Egypt, and Chanaan, and
“ great affliction : and our fathers, found no sustenance.
“ ¹² But, when Jacob, heard, that there was corn in Egypt,
“ he sent out our fathers first. ¹³ And at the second time,
“ Joseph, was made known to his brethren ; and Joseph’s
“ kindred, was made known unto Pharaoh. ¹⁴ Then sent
“ Joseph, and called his father Jacob to *him*, and all his kin-
“ dred, threescore and fifteen souls. ¹⁵ So, Jacob, went down
“ into Egypt, and died, he, and our fathers, ¹⁶ and were car-
“ ried over into Sychem, and laid in the sepulchre, that
“ Abraham, bought, for a sum of money, of the sons of Em-
“ mor, *the father* of Sychem.

“ “ But, when the time of the promise, drew nigh, which
“ God, had sworn to Abraham, the people, grew, and multi-
“ plied in Egypt, ¹⁸ till another king, arose, which knew not
“ Joseph. ¹⁹ The same, dealt subtilly with our kindred, and
“ evil entreated our fathers, so, that they cast out their young
“ children, to the end, they might not live. ²⁰ In which time,
“ Moses, was born, and was exceeding fair, and nourished up
“ in his father’s house three months : ²¹ and when he was
“ cast out, Pharaoh’s daughter, took him up, and nourished
“ him for her own son.

“ “ And Moses, was learned in all the wisdom of the
“ Egyptians, and was mighty in words, and in deeds.
“ ²³ And, when he was full forty years old, it came into his
“ heart, to visit his brethren the children of Israel. ²⁴ And
“ seeing one of *them* suffer wrong, he defended *him*, and
“ avenged him, that was oppressed, and smote the Egyptian :
“ ²⁵ for, he supposed, his brethren, would have understood,
“ how, that God, by his hand, would deliver them : but, they
“ understood not. ²⁶ And, the next day, he shewed himself

THE ACTS.

“ unto them as they strove, and would have set them at one
“ again, saying, ‘ Sirs, ye are brethren; why do ye wrong
“ one to another ? ’ ²⁷ But, he, that did his neighbour wrong,
“ thrust him away, saying, ‘ Who made thee a ruler, and a
“ judge, over us ? ²⁸ wilt thou kill me, as thou diddest the
“ Egyptian yesterday ? ’ ²⁹ Then fled Moses at this saying,
“ and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat
“ two sons.

³⁰ “ And, when forty years, were expired, there appeared to
“ him, in the wilderness of mount Sina, an angel of the Lord,
“ in a flame of fire in a bush. ³¹ When Moses, saw it, he
“ wondered at the sight: and, as he drew near, to behold it,
“ the voice of the Lord, came unto him, ³² saying, ‘ I am
“ the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the
“ God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.’

“ Then Moses, trembled, and durst not behold.

³³ “ Then said the Lord to him, ‘ Put off thy shoes from
“ thy feet: for, the place, where thou standest, is holy
“ ground. ³⁴ I have seen, I have seen the affliction of my
“ people, which is in Egypt, and I have heard their groan-
“ ing, and am come down, to deliver them. And now,
“ come, I will send thee into Egypt.’

³⁵ “ This Moses, whom they refused, saying, ‘ Who made
“ thee a ruler, and a judge ? ’ the same, did God send, *to be*
“ a ruler, and a deliverer, by the hand of the angel, which
“ appeared to him in the bush. ³⁶ He brought them out,
“ after that he had shewed wonders, and signs, in the land of
“ Egypt, and in the Red sea, and in the wilderness forty
“ years. ³⁷ This, is that Moses, which said unto the children
“ of Israel, ‘ A prophet, shall the Lord your God raise up
“ unto you, of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye
“ hear.’ ³⁸ This, is he, that was in the Church in the
“ wilderness, with the angel, which spake to him in the mount
“ Sina, and *with* our fathers: who received the lively ora-
“ cles, to give unto us: ³⁹ to whom, our fathers, would not
“ obey, but, thrust *him* from them, and, in their hearts, turned
“ back again into Egypt, ⁴⁰ saying unto Aaron, ‘ Make us
“ gods, to go before us: for, *as for* this Moses, which
“ brought us out of the land of Egypt, we wot not, what is
“ become of him.’

⁴¹ “ And they made a calf in those days, and offered saeri-

CHAPTER VII.

“ free unto the idol, and rejoiced in the works of their own
“ hands. “⁴² Then God, turned, and gave them up, to wor-
“ ship the host of heaven ; as it is written in the book of
“ the Prophets, ‘ O, ye house of Israel, have ye offered to
“ me slain beasts, and sacrifices, *by the space of* forty years,
“ in the wilderness ? “⁴³ yea, ye took up the tabernacle of
“ Moloch, and the star of your god Remphan, figures,
“ which ye made, to worship them : and I will carry you
“ away beyond Babylon.’

“ “ Our fathers, had the tabernacle of witness in the wil-
“ derness, as He had appointed, speaking unto Moses, that
“ he should make it, according to the fashion, that he had
“ seen. “⁴⁴ Which, also, our fathers, that came after, brought
“ in with Jesus into the possession of the Gentiles, whom
“ God, drove out before the face of our fathers, unto the
“ days of David ; “⁴⁵ who found favour before God, and desired,
“ to find a tabernacle for the God of Jacob. “⁴⁶ But, Solo-
“ mon, built Him an house.

“ “ Howbeit, the most High, dwelleth not in temples
“ made with hands ; as saith the prophet, “⁴⁹ ‘ Heaven, *is* my
“ throne, and earth, *is* my footstool : what house will ye
“ build me ? saith the Lord : or, what *is* the place of my
“ rest ? “⁵⁰ Hath not my hand made all these things ? ’

“ “ Ye stiffnecked, and uncircumcised in heart, and ears,
“ ye do, always, resist the Holy Ghost : as your fathers, *did*,
“ so *do* ye. “⁵² Which of the prophets, have not your fathers
“ persecuted ? and they have slain them, which shewed,
“ before, of the coming of the Just One ; of whom ye have
“ been, now, the betrayers, and murderers : “⁵³ who have received
“ the law, by the disposition of angels, and have not kept *it*.”

“ “ When they heard these things, they were cut to the
heart, and they gnashed on him with *their* teeth.

“ “ But, he, being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up, sted-
fastly, into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus,
standing on the right hand of God, “⁵⁶ and said, “ Behold, I
“ see the heavens opened, and the Son of man, standing
“ on the right hand of God.”

“ “ Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their
ears, and ran upon him with one accord, “⁵⁸ and cast *him* out
of the city, and stoned *him* : and the witnesses, laid down
their clothes at a young man’s feet, whose name, was Saul.

⁴⁹ And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, " Lord Jesus, receive my spirit." ⁵⁰ And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, " Lord, lay not this sin to " their charge."—And when he had said this, he fell asleep.

CHAPTER VIII.

1 By occasion of the persecution in Jerusalem, the Church being planted in Samaria, **5** by Philip the Deacon, who preached, did miracles, and baptized many, among the rest Simon the sorcerer, a great seducer of the people: **14** Peter and John come to confirm and enlarge the Church: where, by prayer and imposition of hands giving the Holy Ghost, **18** when Simon would have bought the like power of them, **20** Peter sharply reproving his hypocrisy, and covetousness, and exhorting him to repentance, together with John preaching the word of the Lord, return to Jerusalem. **26** But the angel sendeth Philip to teach, and baptize the Ethiopian eunuch.

1 And Saul, was consenting unto his death.

And, at that time, there was a great persecution against the Church, which was at Jerusalem; and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judæa, and Samaria, except the apostles.

2 And devout men, carried Stephen to his burial, and made great lamentation over him.

3 As for Saul, he made havock of the Church, entering into every house, and, haling men, and woenen, committed them to prison. **4** Therefore, they, that were scattered abroad, went every where, preaching the word.

5 Then Philip, went down to the city of Samaria, and preached Christ unto them. **6** And the people, with one accord, gave heed unto those things, which Philip, spake, hearing, and seeing the miracles, which he did. **7** For, unclean spirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many, that were possessed with them: and many, taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed. **8** And there was great joy in that city.

9 But, there was a certain man, called Simon, which, beforetime, in the same city, used sorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out, that himself was some great one: **10** to whom, they all gave heed, from the least to the greatest, saying, " This man, is the great power of God."

11 And to him, they had regard, because, that, of long time, he

CHAPTER VIII.

had bewitched them with sorceries. ¹² But, when they believed Philip, preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men, and women. ¹³ Then Simon himself, believed also: and, when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles, and signs, which were done.

¹⁴ Now, when the apostles, which were at Jerusalem, heard, that Samaria, had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter, and John: ¹⁵ who, when they were come down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Ghost: ¹⁶ (for, as yet, he was fallen upon none of them: only, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.) ¹⁷ Then laid they *their* hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost.

¹⁸ And when Simon saw, that, through laying on of the apostles' hands, the Holy Ghost, was given, he offered them money, ¹⁹ saying, "Give me, also, this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost."

²⁰ But, Peter, said unto him, "Thy money perish with thee, because, thou hast thought, that the gift of God, may be purchased with money. ²¹ Thou hast neither part, nor, lot, in this matter: for, thy heart, is not right in the sight of God. ²² Repent, therefore, of this, thy wickedness, and pray God, if, perhaps, the thought of thine heart, may be forgiven thee. ²³ For, I perceive, that thou art in the gall of bitterness, and in the bond of iniquity."

²⁴ Then answered Simon, and said, "Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these things, which ye have spoken, come upon me."

²⁵ And they, when they had testified, and preached the word of the Lord, returned to Jerusalem, and preached the Gospel in many villages of the Samaritans.

²⁶ And the angel of the Lord, spake unto Philip, saying, "Arise, and go, toward the south, unto the way, that goeth down from Jerusalem unto Gaza, which is desert."

²⁷ And he arose, and went: and, behold, a man of Ethiopia, an eunuch, of great authority, under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and had come to Jerusalem, for to worship, ²⁸ was returning, and sitting in his chariot, read Esaias the prophet.

THE ACTS.

²⁹ Then the Spirit said unto Philip, “ Go near, and join thyself to this chariot.”

³⁰ And Philip, ran thither to him, and heard him read the prophet Esaias, and said, “ Understandest thou, what thou readest ? ”

³¹ And he said, “ How can I, except some man, should guide me ? ”—And he desired Philip, that he would come up, and sit with him.

³² The place of the Scripture, which he read, was this, “ He was led as a sheep to the slaughter ; and like a lamb, dumb before his shearer, so, opened he not his mouth : ³³ in his humiliation, his judgment, was taken away : and who shall declare his generation ? for, his life, is taken from the earth.”

³⁴ And the eunuch, answered Philip, and said, “ I pray thee, of whom, speaketh the prophet this ? of himself, or, of some other man ? ”

³⁵ Then Philip, opened his mouth, and began at the same Scripture, and preached unto him Jesus.

³⁶ And as they went on *their* way, they came unto a certain water : and the eunuch, said, “ See, here is water ; what doth hinder me, to be baptized ? ”

³⁷ And Philip, said, “ If thou believest, with all thine heart, thou mayest.”

And he answered, and said, “ I believe, that Jesus Christ, is the Son of God.”

³⁸ And he commanded, the chariot to stand still : and they went down, both, into the water, both Philip, and the eunuch ; and he baptized him.

³⁹ And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord, caught away Philip, that the eunuch, saw him no more : and he went on his way rejoicing. ⁴⁰ But, Philip, was found at Azotus : and, passing through, he preached in all the cities, till he came to Cæsarea.

CHAPTER IX.

¹ Saul, going towards Damascus, ⁴ is stricken down to the earth, ¹⁰ is called to the apostleship, ¹⁸ and is baptized by Ananias. ²⁰ He preacheth Christ boldly. ²³ The Jews lay wait to kill him : ²⁹ so do the Grecians, but he escapeth both. ³¹ The Church having rest, Peter healeth *Aeneas* of the palsy, ³⁶ and restoreth *Tubitha* to life.

CHAPTER IX.

¹ And Saul, yet breathing out threatenings, and slaughter, against the disciples of the Lord, went unto the High Priest, ² and desired of him letters to Damascus, to the synagogues, that, if he found any of this way, whether they were men, or women, he might bring them bound unto Jerusalem.

³ And, as he journeyed, he came near Damascus: and, suddenly, there shined round about him a light from heaven:

⁴ and he fell to the earth, and heard a voice, saying unto him,

“ Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?”

⁵ And he said, “ Who art thou, Lord?”

And the Lord said, “ I am Jesus, whom thou persecutest: “ it is hard, for thee, to kick against the pricks.”

⁶ And he, trembling, and astonished, said, “ Lord, what wilt “ thou have me, to do?”

And the Lord, said unto him, “ Arise, and go into the “ city, and it shall be told thee, what thou must do.”

⁷ And the men, which journeyed with him, stood speechless, hearing a voice, but, seeing no man.

⁸ And Saul, arose from the earth; and when his eyes, were opened, he saw no man: but, they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus. ⁹ And he was three days without sight, and neither did eat, nor, drink.

¹⁰ And there was a certain disciple at Damascus, named Ananias; and to him, said the Lord, in a vision, “ Ananias.”

And he said, “ Behold, I am here, Lord.”

¹¹ And the Lord, said unto him, “ Arise, and go into the “ street, which is called Straight, and enquire, in the house of “ Judas, for one called Saul, of Tarsus: for, behold, he pray- “ eth, ¹² and hath seen, in a vision, a man named Ananias, “ coming in, and putting his hand on him, that he might re- “ ceive his sight.”

¹³ Then Ananias, answered, “ Lord, I have heard, by many, “ of this man, how much evil he hath done to thy saints at “ Jerusalem: ¹⁴ and here, he hath authority from the Chief “ Priests, to bind all, that call on thy name.”

¹⁵ But, the Lord, said unto him, “ Go thy way: for, he is “ a chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gen- “ tiles, and kings, and the children of Israel: ¹⁶ for, I will shew “ him, how great things HE must suffer, for my name’s sake.”

THE ACTS.

¹⁷ And Ananias went his way, and entered into the house ; and, putting his hands on him, said, “ Brother Saul, “ the Lord, even Jesus, that appeared unto thee in the way “ as thou camest, hath sent me, that thou mightest receive “ thy sight, and be filled with the Holy Ghost.”

¹⁸ And, immediately, there fell from his eyes as it had been scales : and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized. ¹⁹ And when he had received meat, he was strengthened. Then was Saul certain days with the disciples, which were at Damascus. ²⁰ And, straightway, he preached Christ in the synagogues, that he is the Son of God. ²¹ But, all, that heard *him*, were amazed, and said ; “ Is not this, he, that “ destroyed them, which called on this name in Jerusalem, “ and came hither, for that intent, that he might bring them “ bound unto the Chief Priests ? ” ²² But, Saul, increased the more in strength, and confounded the Jews, which dwelt at Damascus, proving, that this, is very Christ.

²³ And, after that many days, were fulfilled, the Jews, took counsel, to kill him : ²⁴ but, their laying await, was known of Saul. And they watched the gates, day and night, to kill him. ²⁵ Then the disciples, took him by night, and let *him* down by the wall in a basket.

²⁶ And when Saul, was come to Jerusalem, he assayed, to join himself to the disciples : but, they were all afraid of him, and believed not, that he was a disciple. ²⁷ But, Barnabas, took him, and brought *him* to the apostles, and declared unto them, how he had seen the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to him, and how he had preached, boldly, at Damascus, in the name of Jesus. ²⁸ And he was with them, coming in and going out, at Jerusalem.

²⁹ And he spake, boldly, in the name of the Lord Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians : but, they went about, to slay him. ³⁰ Which when the brethren, knew, they brought him down to Cæsarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus. ³¹ Then had the churches rest throughout all Judæa, and Galilee, and Samaria, and were edified ; and, walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the comfort of the Holy Ghost, were multiplied.

³² And, it came to pass, as Peter, passed throughout all quarters, he came down, also, to the saints, which dwelt at Lydda. ³³ And there, he found a certain man named

CHAPTER X.

Æneas, which had kept his bed eight years, and was sick of the palsy.

³⁴ And Peter said unto him, “ Æneas, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise, and make thy bed.”

And he arose immediately. ³⁵ And all, that dwelt at Lydda, and Saron, saw him, and turned to the Lord.

³⁶ Now, there was, at Joppa, a certain disciple named Tabitha, which, by interpretation, is called Doreas: this woman, was full of good works, and almsdeeds, which she did.

³⁷ And it came to pass in those days, that she was sick, and died: whom when they had washed, they laid *her* in an upper chamber. ³⁸ And forasmuch, as Lydda, was nigh to Joppa, and the disciples, had heard, that Peter, was there, they sent unto him two men, desiring *him*, that he would not delay, to come to them. ³⁹ Then Peter, arose, and went with them. When he was come, they brought him into the upper chamber: and all the widows, stood by him, weeping, and shewing the coats, and garments, which Dorcas, made, while she was with them. ⁴⁰ But, Peter, put them all forth, and kneeled down, and prayed; and, turning *him* to the body, said, “ Tabitha, “ arise.” And she opened her eyes: and when she saw Peter, she sat up. ⁴¹ And he gave her *his* hand, and lifted her up, and, when he had called the saints, and widows, presented her alive. ⁴² And it was known throughout all Joppa; and many, believed in the Lord.

⁴³ And it came to pass, that he tarried many days in Joppa, with one Simon a tanner.

CHAPTER X.

¹ Cornelius, a devout man, ⁵ being commanded by an angel, sendeth for Peter: ¹¹ who by a vision ^{15, 20} is taught not to despise the Gentiles. ³⁴ As he preacheth Christ to Cornelius and his company, ⁴⁴ the Holy Ghost falleth on them, ⁴⁸ and they are baptized.

¹ There was a certain man, in Cæsarea, called Cornelius, a centurion of the band, called the Italian band, ² a devout man, and one, that feared God, with all his house, which gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God alway. ³ He saw in a vision, evidently, about the ninth hour

THE ACTS.

of the day, an angel of God, coming in to him, and saying unto him, " Cornelius."

" And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, " What is it, Lord ? "

And he said unto him, " Thy prayers, and thine alms, are come up, for a memorial, before God. " And now, send men to Joppa, and call for one Simon, whose surname, is Peter : " he lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house, is by the sea side : he shall tell thee, what thou oughtest, to do."

7 And when the angel, which spake unto Cornelius, was departed, he called two of his household servants, and a devout soldier of them, that waited on him continually ; ⁸ and when he had declared all these things unto them, he sent them to Joppa.

⁹ On the morrow, as they went on their journey, and drew nigh unto the city, Peter, went up upon the housetop, to pray, about the sixth hour : ¹⁰ and he became very hungry, and would have eaten : but, while they made ready, he fell into a trance, ¹¹ and saw heaven opened, and a certain vessel, descending unto him, as it had been a great sheet knit at the four corners, and let down to the earth : ¹² wherein, were all manner of fourfooted beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air.

¹³ And there came a voice to him, " Rise, Peter ; kill, and eat."

¹⁴ But, Peter, said, " Not so, Lord ; for, I have never eaten any thing, that is common, or unclean."

¹⁵ And the voice, spake unto him again, the second time, " What God, hath cleansed, that, call not thou common." —

¹⁶ This, was done thrice : and the vessel, was received up again into heaven.

¹⁷ Now, while Peter, doubted in himself, what this vision, which he had seen, should mean, behold, the men, which were sent from Cornelius, had made enquiry for Simon's house, and stood before the gate, ¹⁸ and called, and asked, whether Simon, which was surnamed Peter, were lodged there.

¹⁹ While Peter, thought on the vision, the Spirit, said unto him, " Behold, three men, seek thee. " Arise, therefore, " and get thee down, and go with them, doubting nothing : " for, I have sent them."

CHAPTER X

²¹ Then Peter went down to the men, which were sent unto him from Cornelius ; and said, “ Behold, I am he, “ whom ye seek : what is the cause, wherefore ye are come ? ”

²² And they said, “ Cornelius the centurion, a just man, “ and one, that feareth God, and of good report among all “ the nation of the Jews, was warned, from God, by an holy “ angel, to send for thee into his house, and to hear words of “ thee.” —²³ Then called he them in, and lodged *them*.

And, on the morrow, Peter, went away with them, and certain brethren from Joppa, accompanied him. ²⁴ And, the morrow after, they entered into Cæsarea. And Cornelius, waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen, and near friends. ²⁵ And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius, met him, and fell down at his feet, and worshipped *him*.

²⁶ But, Peter, took him up, saying, “ Stand up ; I myself, “ also, am a man.” ²⁷ And as he talked with him, he went in, and found many, that were come together. ²⁸ And he said unto them, “ Ye know, how, that it is an unlawful thing, for “ a man, that is a Jew, to keep company, or, come unto one “ of another nation ; but, God, hath shewed me, that I should “ not call any man common, or, unclean. ²⁹ Therefore, came “ I unto you, without gainsaying, as soon as I was sent for : “ I ask, therefore, for what intent, ye have sent for me ? ”

³⁰ And Cornelius, said, “ Four days ago, I was fasting until “ this hour ; and, at the ninth hour, I prayed in my house, “ and, behold, a man, stood before me in bright clothing, “ ³¹ and said, ‘ Cornelius, thy prayer, is heard, and thine “ alms, are had in remembrance in the sight of God. “ ³² Send, therefore, to Joppa, and call hither Simon, whose “ surname, is Peter ; he is lodged in the house of *one* Simon, “ a tanner, by the sea side : who, when he cometh, shall “ speak unto thee.’ ³³ Immediately, therefore, I sent to “ thee ; and thou hast well done, that thou art come. Now, “ therefore, are we all here present before God, to hear all “ things, that are commanded thee of God.”

³⁴ Then Peter, opened *his* mouth, and said, “ Of a truth, “ I perceive, that God, is no respecter of persons : ³⁵ but, in “ every nation, he, that feareth Him, and worketh righteousness, “ is accepted with Him. ³⁶ The word, which *God*, “ sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus “ Christ : (he is Lord of all :) ³⁷ that word, *I say*, ye know,

THE ACTS.

“ which was published throughout all Judæa, and began from “ Galilee, after the baptism, which John, preached ; ³⁸ how “ God, anointed Jesus of Nazareth, with the Holy Ghost, “ and with power : who went about doing good, and healing “ all, that were oppressed of the devil ; for, God, was with “ him. ³⁹ And we are witnesses of all things, which he did, “ both in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem ; whom “ they slew, and hanged on a tree : ⁴⁰ him, God, raised up “ the third day, and shewed him openly ; ⁴¹ not to all the “ people, but unto witnesses chosen, before, of God, *even* to “ us, who did eat, and drink, with him, after he rose from the “ dead. ⁴² And he commanded us, to preach unto the peo- “ ple, and to testify, that it is he, which was ordained of God, “ *to be* the Judge of quick, and dead. ⁴³ To him, give all “ the prophets witness, that, through his name, whosoever “ believeth in him, shall receive remission of sins.”

⁴⁴ While Peter, yet spake these words, the Holy Ghost, fell on all them, which heard the word. ⁴⁵ And they of the circumcision, which believed, were astonished, as many, as came with Peter, because, that on the Gentiles also, was poured out the gift of the Holy Ghost. ⁴⁶ For, they heard them speak with tongues, and magnify God.

Then answered Peter, ⁴⁷ “ Can any man forbid water, that “ these, should not be baptized, which have received the “ Holy Ghost as well as we ? ” —⁴⁸ And he commanded them, to be baptized in the name of the Lord.

Then prayed they him, to tarry certain days.

CHAPTER XI.

1 Peter, being accused for going in to the Gentiles, **5** maketh his defence, **18** which is accepted. **19** The Gospel being spread into Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, Barnabas is sent to confirm them. **26** The disciples there are first called Christians. **27** They send relief to the brethren in Judea in time of famine.

¹ And the apostles, and brethren, that were in Ju-
dæa, heard, that the Gentiles, had, also, received the word
of God.

² And when Peter, was come up to Jerusalem, they,
that were of the circumcision, contended with him, ³ saying,

CHAPTER XI.

“ Thou wentest in to men uncircumcised, and didst eat
“ with them.”

“ But, Peter, rehearsed *the matter* from the beginning, and expounded *it*, by order, unto them, saying, “ I was in the city of Joppa, praying: and, in a trance, I saw a vision, A certain vessel, descend, as it had been a great sheet, let down from heaven by four corners; and it came even to me: ” upon the which, when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, and saw fourfooted beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air. ” And I heard a voice, saying unto me, ‘ Arise, Peter; slay, and eat.’ ” But, I said, ‘ Not so, Lord: for, nothing common, or, ‘ unclean, hath, at any time, entered into my mouth.’ ” But, the voice, answered me again from heaven, ‘ What God, ‘ hath cleansed, *that*, call not thou common.’ ” And this, was done three times: and all, were drawn up again into heaven. ” And, behold, immediately, there were three men, already come unto the house, where I was, sent from Cæsarea unto me. ” And the spirit, bade me go with them, nothing doubting. Moreover, these six brethren, accompanied me, and we entered into the man’s house: ” and he shewed us, how he had seen an angel in his house, which stood, and said unto him, ‘ Send men to Joppa, and call for Simon, whose surname, is Peter; ” who shall tell thee words, whereby, thou, and all thy house, shall be saved.’ ” ” And, as I began, to speak, the Holy Ghost, fell on THEM, as on US at the beginning. ” Then remembered I the word of the Lord, how, that he said, ‘ John, indeed, baptized with water; but, ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost.’ ” Forasmuch, then, as God, gave them the like gift as *He did* unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ; what was I, that I could withstand God?”

” When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, “ Then hath God, also, to the Gentiles, granted repentance unto life.”

” Now, they, which were scattered abroad upon the persecution, that arose about Stephen, travelled as far as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching the word to none, but unto the Jews only. ” And some of them, were men of Cyprus, and Cyrene, which, when they were come to

THE ACTS.

Antioch, spake unto the Grecians, preaching the Lord Jesus. ²¹ And the hand of the Lord, was with them : and a great number, believed, and turned unto the Lord.

²² Then tidings of these things, came unto the ears of the church, which was in Jerusalem : and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go as far as Antioch. ²³ Who, when he came, and had seen the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that, with purpose of heart, they would cleave unto the Lord. ²⁴ For, he was a good man, and full of the Holy Ghost, and of faith : and much people, was added unto the Lord.

²⁵ Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seek Saul : ²⁶ and when he had found him, he brought him unto Antioch. And it came to pass, that, a whole year, they assembled themselves with the church, and taught much people. And the disciples, were called Christians first in Antioch.

²⁷ And, in these days, came prophets from Jerusalem unto Antioch. ²⁸ And there stood up one of them, named Agabus, and signified, by the spirit, that there should be great dearth throughout all the world : which came to pass in the days of Claudius Cæsar ²⁹ Then the disciples, every man according to his ability, determined, to send relief unto the brethren, which dwelt in Judæa : ³⁰ which, also, they did, and sent it to the elders, by the hands of Barnabas, and Saul.

CHAPTER XII.

1 King Herod persecuteth the Christians, killeth James, and imprisoneth Peter ; whom an angel delivereth upon the prayers of the Church. 20 In his pride taking to himself the honour due to God, he is stricken by an angel, and dieth miserably. 24 After his death, the word of God prospereth.

¹ Now, about that time, Herod the king, stretched forth his hands, to vex certain of the Church. ² And he killed James, the brother of John, with the sword. ³ And, because, he saw, it pleased the Jews, he proceeded further, to take Peter also. (Then, were the days of unleavened bread.)

⁴ And when he had apprehended him, he put him in prison, and delivered him to four quaternions of soldiers, to keep

CHAPTER XII.

him ; intending, after Easter, to bring him forth to the people. ⁵ Peter, therefore, was kept in prison : but, prayer, was made, without ceasing, of the Church unto God for him.

⁶ And when Herod, would have brought him forth, the same night, Peter, was sleeping between two soldiers, bound with two chains : and the keepers before the door, kept the prison.

⁷ And, behold, the angel of the Lord, came upon *him*, and a light, shined in the prison : and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, “ Arise up quickly.”—And his chains, fell off from *his* hands.—⁸ And the angel, said unto him, “ Gird thyself, and bind on thy sandals.”—And so he did.—And he saith unto him, “ Cast thy garment “ about thee, and follow me.”

⁹ And he went out, and followed him ; and wist not, that it was true, which was done by the angel ; but, thought, he saw a vision.

¹⁰ When they were past the first, and the second ward, they came unto the iron gate, that leadeth unto the city ; which opened to them, of his own accord : and they went out, and passed on through one street ; and, forthwith, the angel, departed from him.

¹¹ And when Peter, was come to himself, he said, “ Now, “ I know, of a surety, that the Lord, hath sent his angel, and “ hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and *from* all “ the expectation of the people of the Jews.” ¹² And when he had considered *the thing*, he came to the house of Mary the mother of John, whose surname, was Mark ; where many, were gathered together, praying.

¹³ And as Peter, knocked at the door of the gate, a damsel, came, to hearken, named Rhoda. ¹⁴ And when she knew Peter’s voice, she opened not the gate, for gladness, but, ran in, and told, how Peter, stood before the gate.

¹⁵ And they said unto her, “ Thou art mad.”—But, she constantly affirmed, that it was even so.—Then said they, “ It is his angel.”

¹⁶ But, Peter, continued knocking : and when they had opened *the door*, and saw him, they were astonished. ¹⁷ But, he, beckoning unto them with the hand, to hold their peace, declared unto them, how the Lord, had brought him out of the prison. And he said, “ Go, shew these things unto

THE ACTS.

"James, and to the brethren."—And he departed, and went into another place.

¹⁸ Now, as soon as it was day, there was no small stir among the soldiers, what was become of Peter. ¹⁹ And when Herod, had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded, that *they* should be put to death.

And he went down from Judea to Cæsarea, and *there* abode. ²⁰ And Herod, was highly displeased with them of Tyre, and Sidon: but, they came, with one accord, to him, and, having made Blastus, the king's chamberlain, their friend, desired peace; because, their country, was nourished by the king's *country*.

²¹ And, upon a set day, Herod, arrayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them. ²² And the people, gave a shout, *saying*, "It is the voice of a god, " and not of a man."

²³ And, immediately, the angel of the Lord, smote him, because, he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost.

²⁴ But, the word of God, grew, and multiplied. ²⁵ And Barnabas, and Saul, returned from Jerusalem, when they had fulfilled *their* ministry, and took with them John, whose surname, was Mark.

CHAPTER XIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas are chosen to go to the Gentiles. 7 Of Sergius Paulus, and Elymas the sorcerer. 14 Paul preacheth at Antioch, that Jesus is Christ. 42 The Gentiles believe: 45 but the Jews gainsay and blaspheme: 46 whereupon they turn to the Gentiles. 48 As many as were ordained to life believed.

¹ Now, there were in the church, that was at Antioch, certain prophets, and teachers; as Barnabas, and Simeon, that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Saul.

² As they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the Holy Ghost, said, "Separate me Barnabas, and Saul, for the work, " whereunto I have called them." ³ And when they had fasted, and prayed, and laid *their* hands on them, they sent *them* away.

⁴ So, they, being sent forth by the Holy Ghost, de-

CHAPTER XIII.

parted unto Seleucia ; and, from thence, they sailed to Cyprus.
¶ And, when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews : and they had, also, John to *their* minister.

⁶ And, when they had gone through the isle unto Paphos, they found a certain sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew, whose name, *was* Bar-jesus : ⁷ which was with the deputy of the country, Sergius Paulus, a prudent man ; who called for Barnabas, and Saul, and desired, to hear the word of God.
⁸ But, Elymas the sorcerer, (for, so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking, to turn away the deputy from the faith.

⁹ Then Saul, (who, also, *is called* Paul,) filled with the Holy Ghost, set his eyes on him, ¹⁰ and said, “ O, full of all “ subtily, and all mischief, *thou* child of the devil, *thou* ene-“ my of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease, to pervert the “ right ways of the Lord ? ” ¹¹ And now, behold, the hand of “ the Lord, *is* upon thee, and thou shalt be blind, not seeing “ the sun for a season.” —And, immediately, there fell on him a mist, and a darkness ; and he went about, seeking some, to lead him by the hand.

¹² Then the deputy, when he saw, what was done, believed, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord.

¹³ Now, when Paul, and his company, loosed from Paphos, they came to Perga in Pamphylia : and John, departing from them, returned to Jerusalem. ¹⁴ But, when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue, on the sabbath day, and sat down.

¹⁵ And, after the reading of the Law, and the Prophets, the rulers of the synagogue, sent unto them, saying, “ Ye men, “ and brethren, if ye have any word of exhortation for the “ people, say on.”

¹⁶ Then Paul, stood up, and, beckoning with *his* hand, said, “ Men of Israel, and ye, that fear God, give audience. ¹⁷ The “ God of this people of Israel, chose our fathers, and exalted “ the people, when they dwelt, as strangers, in the land of “ Egypt, and, with an high arm, brought He them out of it. ¹⁸ And, about the time of forty years, suffered He their man-“ ners in the wilderness. ¹⁹ And when He had destroyed seven “ nations in the land of Chanaan, He divided their land to “ them by lot. ²⁰ And, after that, He gave *unto them* judges,

THE ACTS.

“ about the space of four hundred and fifty years, until Samuel
“ the prophet. ²¹ And, afterward, they desired a king: and
“ God, gave unto them Saul the son of Cis, a man of the
“ tribe of Benjamin, by the space of forty years. ²² And
“ when He had removed him, He raised up unto them David,
“ to be their king; to whom, also, He gave testimony, and
“ said, ‘ I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after
“ mine own heart, which shall fulfil all my will.’ ²³ Of this
“ man’s seed, hath God, according to His promise, raised unto
“ Israel a Saviour, Jesus: ²⁴ when John, had first preached,
“ before his coming, the baptism of repentance to all the peo-
“ ple of Israel. ²⁵ And as John, fulfilled his course, he said,
“ ‘ Whom think ye, that I am? I am not he. But, behold,
“ ‘ there cometh one after me, whose shoes of his feet, I am
“ ‘ not worthy to loose.’ ”

²⁶ “ Men, and brethren, children of the stock of Abraham,
“ and whosoever among you, feareth God, to you, is the word
“ of this salvation sent. ²⁷ For, they, that dwell at Jerusalem,
“ and their rulers, because, they knew him not, nor yet, the
“ voices of the prophets, which are read every sabbath day,
“ they have fulfilled them in condemning him. ²⁸ And though
“ they found no cause of death in him, yet, desired they Pi-
“ late, that he should be slain. ²⁹ And, when they had ful-
“ filled all, that was written of him, they took him down from
“ the tree, and laid him in a sepulchre. ³⁰ But, God, raised
“ him from the dead: ³¹ and he was seen, many days, of them,
“ which came up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who
“ are his witnesses unto the people. ³² And we declare unto
“ you glad tidings, how, that the promise, which was made
“ unto the fathers, ³³ God, hath fulfilled the same unto us
“ their children, in that He hath raised up Jesus again; as
“ it is, also, written in the second psalm, ‘ Thou art my Son,
“ ‘ this day, have I begotten thee.’ ³⁴ And as concerning, that
“ He raised him up from the dead, now, no more, to return to
“ corruption, He said on this wise, ‘ I will give you the sure
“ ‘ mercies of David.’ ³⁵ Wherefore, he saith, also, in another
“ psalm, ‘ Thou shalt not suffer Thine Holy One, to see cor-
“ ‘ ruption.’ ³⁶ For, David, after he had served his own ge-
“ neration, by the will of God, fell on sleep, and was laid
“ unto his fathers, and saw corruption: ³⁷ but he, whom God,
“ raised again, saw no corruption.

CHAPTER XIII.

³⁸ “ Be it known unto you therefore, men, *and* brethren, “ that, through this man, is preached unto you the forgiveness “ of sins: ³⁹ and, by him, all, that believe, are justified from “ all things, from which ye could NOT be justified by the law “ of Moses. ⁴⁰ Beware, therefore, lest that, come upon you, “ which is spoken of in the Prophets; ⁴¹ ‘Behold, ye de-“ spisers, and wonder, and perish: for, I work a work in your “ days, a work, which ye shall, in no wise, believe, though “ ‘a man, declare it unto you.’”

⁴² And when the Jews, were gone out of the synagogue, the Gentiles, besought, that these words, might be preached to them the next sabbath.

⁴³ Now, when the congregation, was broken up, many of the Jews, and religious proselytes, followed Paul, and Barnabas: who, speaking to them, persuaded them, to continue in the grace of God.

⁴⁴ And, the next sabbath day, came almost the whole city together, to hear the word of God. ⁴⁵ But, when the Jews, saw the multitudes, they were filled with envy, and spake against those things, which were spoken by Paul, contradicting, and blaspheming.

⁴⁶ Then Paul, and Barnabas, waxed bold, and said, “ It was “ necessary, that the word of God, should, first, have been “ spoken to **you**: but, seeing, ye put it from you, and judge “ yourselves, unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the “ **GENTILES**. ⁴⁷ For, so, hath the Lord commanded us, *saying*, ‘I have set thee, to be a light of the Gentiles, that “ ‘thou shouldest be for salvation, unto the ends of the earth.’”

⁴⁸ And when the Gentiles, heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many, as were ordained to eternal life, believed. ⁴⁹ And the word of the Lord, was published throughout all the region.

⁵⁰ But, the Jews, stirred up the devout, and honourable women, and the chief men of the city, and raised persecution against Paul, and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts. ⁵¹ But, they shook off the dust of their feet against them, and came unto Iconium. ⁵² And the disciples, were filled with joy, and with the Holy Ghost.

CHAPTER XIV.

¹ *Paul and Barnabas are persecuted from Iconium. 8 At Lystra Paul healeth a cripple, whereupon they are reputed as gods. 19 Paul is stoned. 21 They pass through divers churches, confirming the disciples in faith and patience. 26 Returning to Antioch, they report what God had done with them.*

¹ And it came to pass in Iconium, that they went, both together, into the synagogue of the Jews, and so spake, that a great multitude, both of the Jews, and also of the Greeks, believed. ² But, the unbelieving Jews, stirred up the Gentiles, and made their minds evil affected against the brethren. ³ Long time, therefore, abode they, speaking boldly in the Lord, which gave testimony unto the word of his grace, and granted signs, and wonders, to be done by their hands. ⁴ But, the multitude of the city, was divided: and part, held with the Jews, and part, with the apostles. ⁵ And when there was an assault made, both of the Gentiles, and also of the Jews, with their rulers, to use *them* despitefully, and to stone them, ⁶ they were ware of *it*, and fled unto Lys-
tra, and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and unto the region, that lieth round about: ⁷ and there, they preached the Gospel.

⁸ And there sat a certain man at Lystra, impotent in his feet, being a cripple from his mother's womb, who never had walked: ⁹ the same, heard Paul speak: who, stedfastly beholding him, and perceiving, that he had faith, to be healed, ¹⁰ said with a loud voice, " Stand upright on thy feet."— And he leaped, and walked.

¹¹ And when the people, saw, what Paul, had done, they listed up their voices, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, " The " gods, are come down to us in the likeness of men." ¹² And they called Barnabas, Jupiter; and Paul, Mercurius, because, he was the chief speaker.

¹³ Then the priest of Jupiter, which was before their city, brought oxen, and garlands, unto the gates, and would have done sacrifice with the people. ¹⁴ Which when the apostles, Barnabas, and Paul, heard of, they rent their clothes, and ran in among the people, crying out, ¹⁵ and saying, " Sirs, why " do ye these things? We, also, are men, of like passions " with you, and preach unto you, that ye should turn from " these vanities unto the living God, which made heaven,

CHAPTER XV.

“ and earth, and the sea, and all things, that are therein :
“ ¹⁶ who, in times past, suffered all nations, to walk in their
“ own ways. ¹⁷ Nevertheless, He left not Himself without
“ witness, in that He did good, and gave us rain from hea-
“ ven, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food, and
“ gladness.”

¹⁸ And, with these sayings, scarce restrained they the people,
that they had not done sacrifice unto them.

¹⁹ And there came thither *certain* Jews from Antioch,
and Iconium, who persuaded the people, and, having stoned
Paul, drew *him* out of the city, supposing, he had been dead.
²⁰ Howbeit, as the disciples, stood round about him, he rose
up, and came into the city : and, the next day, he departed
with Barnabas to Derbe.

²¹ And when they had preached the Gospel to that
city, and had taught many, they returned again to Lystra,
and to Iconium, and Antioch, ²² confirming the souls of the
disciples, *and* exhorting them, to continue in the faith, and
“ that we must, through much tribulation, enter into the king-
“ dom of God.” ²³ And when they had ordained them elders
in every church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended
them to the Lord, on whom they believed.

²⁴ And, after they had passed throughout Pisidia, they
came to Pamphylia. ²⁵ And, when they had preached the
word in Perga, they went down into Attalia : ²⁶ and thence,
sailed to Antioch, from whence, they had been recommended
to the grace of God, for the work, which they fulfilled. ²⁷ And,
when they were come, and had gathered the church together,
they rehearsed all, that God, had done with them, and how
He had opened the door of faith unto the Gentiles. ²⁸ And
there, they abode, long time, with the disciples.

CHAPTER XV.

¹ Great dissension ariseth touching circumcision. ⁶ The apostles
consult about it, ²² and send their determination by letters to the
churches. ³⁶ Paul and Barnabas, thinking to visit the brethren
together, fall at strife, and depart asunder.

¹ And certain men, which came down from Judæa,

taught the brethren, *and said*, “ Except ye be circumcised, “ after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved.” ² When, therefore, Paul, and Barnabas, had no small dissension, and disputation with them, they determined, that Paul, and Barnabas, and certain other of them, should go up to Jerusalem unto the apostles, and elders, about this question.

³ And, being brought on their way by the church, they passed through Phenice, and Samaria, declaring the conversion of the Gentiles : and they caused great joy unto all the brethren.

⁴ And, when they were come to Jerusalem, they were received of the church, and *of* the apostles, and elders, and they declared all things, that God, had done with them.

⁵ But, there rose up certain of the sect of the Pharisees, which believed, saying, “ That it was needful, to circumcise “ them, and to command *them*, to keep the law of Moses.”

⁶ And the apostles, and elders, came together, for to consider of this matter.

⁷ And when there had been much disputing, Peter, rose up, and said unto them, “ Men, *and* brethren, ye know, how, “ that, a good while ago, God, made choice among us, that “ the Gentiles, by my mouth, should hear the word of the “ Gospel, and believe. ⁸ And God, which knoweth the “ hearts, bare them witness, giving **THEM** the Holy Ghost, “ even as *He did* unto us ; ⁹ and put no difference between “ us, and them, purifying their hearts by faith. ¹⁰ Now “ therefore, why tempt ye God, to put a yoke upon the neck “ of the disciples, which neither our fathers, nor, we, were able, “ to bear ? ¹¹ But, we believe, that, through the grace of the “ Lord Jesus Christ, we shall be saved, even as they.”

¹² Then all the multitude, kept silence, and gave audience to Barnabas, and Paul, declaring what miracles, and wonders, God, had wrought among the Gentiles by them.

¹³ And, after they had held their peace, James, answered, saying, “ Men, *and* brethren, hearken unto me : ¹⁴ Simeon, “ hath declared, how God, at the first, did visit the Gentiles, “ to take out of them a people for His name. ¹⁵ And to “ this, agree the words of the prophets ; as it is written, “ ¹⁶ After this, I will return, and will build again the taber-“ nacle of David, which is fallen down ; and I will build “ again the ruins thereof, and I will set it up : ¹⁷ that the “ residue of men, might seek after the Lord, and all the

CHAPTER XV.

“ ‘ ‘ Gentiles, upon whom, my name, is called, saith the Lord,
“ ‘ ‘ who doeth all these things.’ ”

“ “ Known unto God are all His works, from the beginning
“ of the world.”

“ “ Wherefore, my sentence, is, that we trouble not them,
“ which, from among the Gentiles, are turned to God : “ “ but,
“ that we write unto them, that they abstain from pollutions
“ of idols, and *from* fornication, and *from* things strangled,
“ and *from* blood. “ “ For, Moses, of old time, hath, in every
“ city, them, that preach him, being read in the synagogues
“ every sabbath day.”

“ “ Then pleased it the apostles, and elders, with the
whole church, to send chosen men, of their own company, to
Antioch, with Paul, and Barnabas ; *namely*, Judas, surnamed
Barsabas, and Silas, chief men among the brethren : “ “ and
they wrote *letters* by them after this manner ; “ “ The apostles,
“ and elders, and brethren, *send* greeting unto the brethren,
“ which are of the Gentiles, in Antioch, and Syria, and Cili-
“ cia :—“ “ Forasmuch, as we have heard, that certain, which
“ went out from us, have troubled you with words, subverting
“ your souls, saying, ‘ *Ye must* be circumcised, and keep
“ ‘ the law : ’ to whom, we gave no *such* commandment : “ “ it
“ seemed good unto us, being assembled with one accord, to
“ send chosen men unto you, with our beloved Barnabas, and
“ Paul, “ “ men, that have hazarded their lives, for the name of
“ our Lord Jesus Christ. “ “ We have sent, therefore, Judas,
“ and Silas, who shall, also, tell *you* the same things by mouth.
“ “ For, it seemed good to the Holy Ghost, and to us, to lay
“ upon you no greater burden than these necessary things ;
“ “ that ye abstain from meats offered to idols, and from blood,
“ and from things strangled, and *from* fornication : from
“ which if ye keep yourselves, ye shall do well. Fare ye well.”

“ “ So, when they were dismissed, they came to Antioch :
and, when they had gathered the multitude together, they
delivered the epistle : “ “ which when they had read, they
rejoiced for the consolation. “ “ And Judas, and Silas, being
prophets, also, themselves, exhorted the brethren with many
words, and confirmed *them*. “ “ And, after they had tarried
there a space, they were let go, in peace, from the brethren
unto the apostles. “ “ Notwithstanding, it pleased Silas, to
abide there still. “ “ Paul, also, and Barnabas, continued in

THE ACTS.

Antioch, teaching, and preaching, the word of the Lord, with many others also.

³⁶ And, some days after, Paul, said unto Barnabas, “ Let us go again, and visit our brethren in every city, where “ we have preached the word of the Lord, *and see how “ they do.*”

³⁷ And Barnabas, determined, to take with them John, whose surname, was Mark. ³⁸ But, Paul, thought not good, to take him with them, who departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work. ³⁹ And the contention, was so sharp between them, that they departed asunder one from the other: and so, Barnabas, took Mark, and sailed unto Cyprus; ⁴⁰ and Paul, chose Silas, and departed, being recommended by the brethren unto the grace of God. ⁴¹ And he went through Syria, and Cilicia, confirming the churches.

CHAPTER XVI.

1 Paul having circumcised Timothy, 7 and being called by the Spirit from one country to another, 14 converteth Lydia, 16 casteth out a spirit of divination. 19 For which cause he and Silas are whipped and imprisoned. 26 The prison doors are opened. 31 The jailor is converted, 37 and they are delivered.

¹ Then came he to Derbe, and Lystra: and, behold, a certain disciple, was there, named Timotheus, the son of a certain woman, which was a Jewess, and believed; but, his father, *was a Greek:* ² which was well reported of by the brethren, that were at Lystra, and Iconium. ³ Him would Paul have, to go forth with him; and took, and circumcised him, because of the Jews, which were in those quarters: for, they knew all, that his father, was a Greek. ⁴ And as they went through the cities, they delivered them the decrees, for to keep, that were ordained of the apostles, and elders, which were at Jerusalem. ⁵ And so, were the churches established in the faith, and increased in number daily.

⁶ Now, when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden, of the Holy Ghost, to preach the word in Asia, ⁷ after they were come to Mysia, they assayed, to go into Bithynia: but, the Spirit, suffered

CHAPTER XVI.

them not. ⁸ And they, passing by Mysia, came down to Troas.

⁹ And a vision appeared to Paul in the night; There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, "Come over into Macedonia, and help us."

¹⁰ And, after he had seen the vision, immediately, we endeavoured, to go into Macedonia, assuredly gathering, that the Lord, had called us, for to preach the Gospel unto them.

¹¹ Therefore, loosing from Troas, we came, with a straight course, to Samothracia, and the next *day*, to Neapolis; ¹² and from thence, to Philippi, which is the chief city of that part of Macedonia, *and* a colony: and we were in that city abiding certain days. ¹³ And, on the sabbath, we went out of the city by a river side, where prayer, was wont, to be made; and we sat down, and spake unto the women, which resorted *thither*.

¹⁴ And a certain woman, named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, which worshipped God, heard *us*: whose heart, the Lord, opened, that she attended unto the things, which were spoken of Paul. ¹⁵ And when she was baptized, and her household, she besought *us*, saying, "If ye have judged me, to be faithful to the Lord, come into my house, and abide *there*."—And she constrained us.

¹⁶ And, it came to pass, as we went to prayer, a certain damsel, possessed with a spirit of divination, met us, which brought her masters much gain by soothsaying: ¹⁷ the same, followed Paul, and us, and cried, saying, "These men, are the servants of the most high God, which shew unto us the way of salvation."—¹⁸ And this, did she many days.

But, Paul, being grieved, turned, and said to the spirit, "I command thee, in the name of Jesus Christ, to come out of her."—And he came out the same hour.

¹⁹ And when her masters, saw, that the hope of their gains, was gone, they caught Paul, and Silas, and drew *them* into the market-place, unto the rulers, ²⁰ and brought them to the magistrates, saying, "These men, being Jews, do, exceedingly trouble our city,²¹ and teach customs, which are not lawful, for us, to receive, neither, to observe, being Romans."

²² And the multitude, rose up together against them: and

the magistrates, rent off their clothes, and commanded, to beat *them*. ²³ And when they had laid many stripes upon them, they cast *them* into prison, charging the jailor, to keep them safely: ²⁴ who, having received such a charge, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stocks.

²⁵ And, at midnight, Paul, and Silas, prayed, and sang praises unto God: and the prisoners, heard them. ²⁶ And, suddenly, there was a great earthquake, so, that the foundations of the prison, were shaken: and, immediately, all the doors, were opened, and every one's bands, were loosed.

²⁷ And the keeper of the prison, awaking out of his sleep, and seeing the prison doors open, he drew out his sword, and would have killed himself, supposing, that the prisoners, had been fled.

²⁸ But, Paul, cried with a loud voice, saying, "Do thyself no harm: for, we are all here."

²⁹ Then he called for a light, and sprang in, and came, trembling, and fell down before Paul, and Silas, ³⁰ and brought them out, and said, "Sirs, what must I do, to be saved?"

³¹ And they said, "Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house."—³² And they spake unto him the word of the Lord, and to all, that were in his house.

³³ And he took them, the same hour of the night, and washed *their* stripes; and was baptized, he, and all his, straight-way. ³⁴ And, when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoiced, believing in God with all his house.

³⁵ And, when it was day, the magistrates, sent the serjeants, saying, "Let those men go."

³⁶ And the keeper of the prison, told this, saying to Paul, "The magistrates, have sent, to let you go: now, therefore, depart, and go in peace."

³⁷ But, Paul, said unto them, "They have beaten us OPENLY, uncondemned, being Romans, and have cast *us* into prison; and now, do they thrust us out PRIVILY? nay, verily; but, let them come themselves, and fetch us out."

³⁸ And the serjeants, told these words unto the magistrates: and they feared, when they heard, that they were Romans.

³⁹ And they came, and besought them, and brought *them* out, and desired *them*, to depart out of the city. ⁴⁰ And they went

CHAPTER XVII.

out of the prison, and entered into *the house of Lydia* : and when they had seen the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

CHAPTER XVII.

1 Paul preacheth at Thessalonica, 4 where some believe, and others persecute him. 10 He is sent to Berea, and preacheth there. 13 Being persecuted at Thessalonica, 15 he cometh to Athens, and disputeth, and preacheth the living God to them unknown, 34 whereby many are converted unto Christ.

¹ Now, when they had passed through Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Jews : ² and Paul, as his manner was, went in unto them, and, three sabbath days, reasoned with them out of the Scriptures, ³ opening, and alledging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead ; and that “ this Jesus, whom I preach unto you, is Christ.” ⁴ And some of them, believed, and consorted with Paul, and Silas ; and, of the devout Greeks, a great multitude, and, of the chief women, not a few.

⁵ But, the Jews, which believed not, moved with envy, took unto them certain lewd fellows, of the baser sort, and gathered a company, and set all the city on an uproar, and assaulted the house of Jason, and sought, to bring them out to the people. ⁶ And when they found them not, they drew Jason, and certain brethren, unto the rulers of the city, crying, “ These, “ that have turned the world upside down, are come hither “ also ; ⁷ whom, Jason, hath received : and these all, do con- “ trary to the decrees of Cæsar, saying, that there is another “ king, *one Jesus.*”

⁸ And they troubled the people, and the rulers of the city, when they heard these things. ⁹ And when they had taken security of Jason, and of the other, they let them go.

¹⁰ And the brethren, immediately, sent away Paul, and Silas, by night, unto Berea : who, coming *thither*, went into the synagogue of the Jews. ¹¹ These, were more noble than those, in Thessalonica, in that they received the word, with all readiness of mind, and searched the Scriptures daily, whether those things, were so. ¹² Therefore, many of them,

believed ; also of honourable women, which were Greeks, and of men, not a few. ¹³ But, when the Jews of Thessalonica, had knowledge, that the word of God, was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, and stirred up the people. ¹⁴ And then, immediately, the brethren, sent away Paul, to go as it were to the sea : but, Silas, and Timotheus, abode there still. ¹⁵ And they, that conducted Paul, brought him unto Athens : and, receiving a commandment unto Silas, and Timotheus, for to come to him with all speed, they departed.

¹⁶ Now, while Paul, waited for them at Athens, his spirit, was stirred in him, when he saw the city, wholly given to idolatry. ¹⁷ Therefore, disputed he in the synagogue with the Jews, and with the devout persons, and in the market, daily, with them, that met with him.

¹⁸ Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoics, encountered him. And some, said, “ What will this “ babbler say ? ” other some, “ He seemeth to be a setter “ forth of strange gods : ”—because, he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection.

¹⁹ And they took him, and brought him unto Areopagus, saying, “ May we know, what this new doctrine, whereof thou “ speakest, is ? ” ²⁰ For, thou bringest certain strange things “ to our ears : we would know, therefore, what these things, “ mean.” ²¹ (For, all the Athenians, and strangers, which were there, spent their time in nothing else, but, either, to tell, or, to hear, some new thing.)

²² Then Paul, stood in the midst of Mars’ hill, and said, “ Ye men of Athens, I perceive, that, in all things, ye are too “ superstitious. ²³ For, as I passed by, and beheld your de- “ votions, I found an altar with this inscription,—

“ ‘ TO THE UNKNOWN GOD.’

“ Whom, therefore, ye ignorantly worship, Him, declare I unto “ you. ²⁴ God, that made the world, and all things therein, “ seeing, that He is Lord of heaven, and earth, dwelleth not “ in temples made with hands ; ²⁵ neither, is worshipped with “ men’s hands, as though He needed any thing, seeing, He “ giveth to all life, and breath, and all things ; ²⁶ and hath “ made, of one blood, all nations of men, for to dwell on all “ the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before “ appointed, and the bounds of their habitation ; ²⁷ that they

CHAPTER XVIII.

“ should seek the Lord, if, haply, they might feel after Him,
“ and find Him, though He be not far from every one of us :
“ ² for, in Him, we live, and move, and have our being ; as
“ certain, also, of your own poets, have said, ‘ For, we are, also,
“ His offspring.’ ² Forasmuch, then, as we are the offspring
“ of God, we ought not, to think, that the Godhead, is like
“ unto gold, or, silver, or, stone, graven by art, and man’s de-
“ vice. ³⁰ And the times of this ignorance, God, winked at ;
“ but, now, commandeth all men, every where, to repent :
“ ³¹ because, He hath appointed a day, in the which, He will
“ judge the world in righteousness, by *that* man, whom He
“ hath ordained ; *whereof* He hath given assurance unto all
“ *men*, in that He hath raised him from the dead.”

³² And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead,
some, mocked : and others, said, “ We will hear thee again
“ of this *matter*.”

³³ So, Paul, departed from among them. ³⁴ Howbeit, cer-
tain men, clave unto him, and believed : among the which,
was Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman, named Damaris,
and others with them.

CHAPTER XVIII.

*3 Paul laboureth with his hands, and preacheth at Corinth to the Gentiles. 9 The Lord encourageth him in a vision. 12 He is ac-
cused before Gallio the deputy, but is dismissed. 18 Afterwards
passing from city to city he strengtheneth the disciples. 24 Apollos,
being more perfectly instructed by Aquila and Priscilla, 28 preach-
eth Christ with great efficacy.*

¹ After these things, Paul, departed from Athens, and came to Corinth ; ² and found a certain Jew, named Aquila, born in Pontus, lately come from Italy, with his wife Priscilla ; (because, that Claudius, had commanded all Jews, to depart from Rome :) and came unto them. ³ And, because, he was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought : for, by their occupation, they were tentmakers. ⁴ And he reasoned in the synagogue, every sabbath, and persuaded the Jews, and the Greeks.

⁵ And when Silas, and Timotheus, were come from

THE ACTS.

Macedonia, Paul, was pressed in the spirit, and testified to the Jews, *that Jesus, was Christ.* ⁶ And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, he shook *his* raiment, and said unto them, “ Your blood *be* upon your own heads ; I am “ clean : from henceforth, I will go unto the Gentiles.”

⁷ And he departed thence, and entered into a certain *man's* house, named Justus, *one*, that worshipped God, whose house, joined hard to the synagogue. ⁸ And Crispus, the chief ruler of the synagogue, believed on the Lord with all his house ; and many of the Corinthians, hearing, believed, and were baptized.

⁹ Then spake the Lord to Paul, in the night, by a vision, “ Be not afraid, but, speak, and hold not thy peace : ¹⁰ for, I “ am with thee, and no man, shall set on thee, to hurt thee : “ for, I have much people in this city.”

¹¹ And he continued *there*, a year and six months, teaching the word of God among them.

¹² And when Gallio, was the deputy of Achaia, the Jews, made insurrection, with one accord, against Paul, and brought him to the judgment seat, ¹³ saying, “ This *fellow,* persuadeth men, to worship God contrary to the “ law.”

¹⁴ And when Paul, was now, about to open *his* mouth, Gallio, said unto the Jews, “ If it were a matter of wrong, or, “ wicked lewdness, O, ye Jews, reason would, that I should “ bear with you : ¹⁵ but, if it be a question of words, and “ names, and *of* your law, look ye *to it* ; for, I will be no “ judge of such *matters.*”—¹⁶ And he drove them from the judgment seat.

¹⁷ Then all the Greeks, took Sosthenes, the chief ruler of the synagogue, and beat *him* before the judgment seat. And Gallio, cared for none of those things.

¹⁸ And Paul, *after this,* tarried *there* yet a good while, and then, took his leave of the brethren, and sailed thence into Syria, and with him Priscilla, and Aquila ; having shorn *his* head in Cenchrea : for, he had a vow. ¹⁹ And he came to Ephesus, and left them there : but, he himself entered into the synagogue, and reasoned with the Jews. ²⁰ When they desired *him*, to tarry longer time with them, he consented not ; ²¹ but, bade them farewell, saying, “ I must, by all

CHAPTER XIX.

"means, keep this feast, that cometh in Jerusalein : but, I will return again unto you, if God will."

And he sailed from Ephesus. ²² And when he had landed at Cæsarea, and gone up, and saluted the church, he went down to Antioch. ²³ And, after he had spent some time there, he departed, and went over all the country of Galatia, and Phrygia, in order, strengthening all the disciples.

²⁴ And a certain Jew, named Apollos, born at Alexandria, an eloquent man, and mighty in the Scriptures, came to Ephesus. ²⁵ This man, was instructed in the way of the Lord ; and, being fervent in the spirit, he spake, and taught, diligently, the things of the Lord, knowing only the baptism of John. ²⁶ And he began, to speak boldly in the synagogue : whom when Aquila, and Priscilla, had heard, they took him unto them, and expounded unto him the way of God more perfectly. ²⁷ And when he was disposed, to pass into Achaia, the brethren, wrote, exhorting the disciples, to receive him : who, when he was come, helped them much, which had believed through grace : ²⁸ for, he mightily convinced the Jews, and that publicly, shewing, by the Scriptures, that Jesus, was Christ.

CHAPTER XIX.

6 The Holy Ghost is given by Paul's hands. 9 The Jews blaspheme his doctrine, which is confirmed by miracles. 13 The Jewish exorcists 16 are beaten by the devil. 19 Conjuring books are burnt. 24 Demetrius, for love of gain, raiseth an uproar against Paul, 35 which is appeased by the townclerk.

¹ And it came to pass, that, while Apollos, was at Corinth, Paul, having passed through the upper coasts, came to Ephesus : and finding certain disciples, ² he said unto them, "Have ye received the Holy Ghost, since ye believed ?"

And they said unto him, "We have not so much as heard, "whether there be any Holy Ghost."

³ And he said unto them, "Unto what, then, were ye baptized ?"

And they said, "Unto John's baptism."

⁴ Then said Paul, "John, verily, baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should

THE ACTS.

" believe on him, which should come after him, that is, on " Christ Jesus."

⁶ When they heard *this*, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. ⁶ And when Paul had laid *his* hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied. ⁷ And all the men, were about twelve.

⁸ And he went into the synagogue, and spake boldly, for the space of three months, disputing, and persuading the things concerning the kingdom of God. ⁹ But, when divers, were hardened, and believed not, but, spake evil of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples, disputing, daily, in the school of one Tyrannus. ¹⁰ And this, continued by the space of two years; so, that all they, which dwelt in Asia, heard the word of the Lord Jesus, both Jews, and Greeks. ¹¹ And God, wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul: ¹² so, that from his body, were brought unto the sick, handkerchiefs, or, aprons, and the diseases, departed from them, and the evil spirits, went out of them.

¹³ Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them, to call over them, which had evil spirits, the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, " We adjure you by Jesus, whom " Paul, preacheth."—¹⁴ And there were seven sons of *one* Sceva, a Jew, *and* chief of the Priests, which did so.

¹⁵ And the evil spirit, answered, and said, " Jesus, I know, " and Paul, I know; but, who are ye?"

¹⁶ And the man, in whom, the evil spirit, was, leaped on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so, that they fled out of that house, naked, and wounded.—

¹⁷ And this, was known to all the Jews, and Greeks also, dwelling at Ephesus; and fear, fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus, was magnified. ¹⁸ And many, that believed, came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds. ¹⁹ Many of them also, which used curious arts, brought their books together, and burned them before all *men*: and they counted the price of them, and found *it*, fifty thousand *pieces* of silver.

²⁰ So, mightily, grew the word of God, and prevailed.

²¹ After these things, were ended, Paul, purposed, in the spirit, when he had passed through Macedonia, and

CHAPTER XIX.

Achaia, to go to Jerusalem, saying, “ After I have been “ there, I must also, see Rome.” ²² So, he sent into Macedonia two of them, that ministered unto him, Timotheus, and Erastus ; but, he himself stayed in Asia for a season.

²³ And, the same time, there arose no small stir about that way. ²⁴ For, a certain *man*, named Demetrius, a silversmith, which made silver shrines for Diana, brought no small gain unto the craftsmen ; ²⁵ whom he called together, with the workmen of like occupation, and said, “ Sirs, ye know, that, “ by this craft, we have our wealth. ²⁶ Moreover, ye see, and “ hear, that not alone at Ephesus, but, almost throughout all “ Asia, this Paul, hath persuaded, and turned away, much “ people, saying, that they be no gods, which are made with “ hands : ²⁷ so, that not only this, our craft, is in danger, to be “ set at nought ; but, also, that the temple of the great god- “ dess Diana, should be despised, and her magnificence, should “ be destroyed, whom all Asia, and the world, worshippeth.”

²⁸ And when they heard *these sayings*, they were full of wrath, and cried out, saying, “ Great is Diana of the Ephesians.”

²⁹ And the whole city, was filled with confusion : and, having caught Gaius, and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Paul’s companions in travel, they rushed, with one accord, into the theatre.

³⁰ And when Paul, would have entered in unto the people, the disciples, suffered him not. ³¹ And certain of the chief of Asia, which were his friends, sent unto him, desiring *him*, that he would not adventure himself into the theatre. ³² Some, therefore, cried one thing, and some, another : for, the assembly, was confused ; and the more part, knew not, wherefore they were come together. ³³ And they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Jews, putting him forward. And Alexander, beckoned with the hand, and would have made his defence unto the people. ³⁴ But, when they knew, that he was a Jew, all, with one voice, about the space of two hours, cried out, “ Great is Diana of the Ephesians.”

³⁵ And when the townclerk, had appeased the people, he said, “ Ye men of Ephesus, what man is there, that knoweth “ not, how, that the city of the Ephesians, is a worshipper of “ the great goddess Diana, and of the *image*, which fell “ down from Jupiter ? ³⁶ Seeing, then, that these things, can-

THE ACTS.

“ not be spoken against, ye ought, to be quiet, and to do
“ nothing rashly.”³⁷ For, ye have brought hither these men,
“ which are neither robbers of churches, nor yet, blasphemers
“ of your goddess.”³⁸ Wherefore, if Demetrius, and the
“ craftsmen, which are with him, have a matter against any
“ man, the law, is open, and there are deputies: let them
“ implead one another.”³⁹ But, if ye enquire any thing con-
cerning other matters, it shall be determined in a lawful
“ assembly.”⁴⁰ For, we are in danger, to be called in question
“ for this day’s uproar, there being no cause, whereby, we
“ may give an account of this concourse.”—⁴¹ And when he
had thus spoken, he dismissed the assembly.

CHAPTER XX.

1 Paul goeth to Macedonia. 7 He celebrateth the Lord’s supper, and preacheth. 9 Eutychus having fallen down dead, 10 is raised to life. 17 At Miletum he calleth the elders together, telleth them what shall befall to himself, 28 committeth God’s flock to them, 29 warneth them of false teachers, 32 commendeth them to God, 36 prayeth with them, and goeth his way.

¹ And, after the uproar, was ceased, Paul, called unto him the disciples, and embraced them, and departed, for to go into Macedonia. ² And when he had gone over those parts, and had given them much exhortation, he came into Greece, ³ and there, abode three months. And when the Jews, laid wait for him, as he was about, to sail into Syria, he purposed, to return through Macedonia. ⁴ And there accompanied him into Asia, Sopater of Berea; and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus, and Secundus; and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus; and of Asia, Tychicus, and Trophimus. ⁵ These, going before, tarried for us at Troas.

⁶ And we sailed away from Philippi, after the days of unleavencd bread, and came unto them to Troas, in five days; where we abode seven days.

⁷ And, upon the first day of the week, when the disciples, caine together, to break bread, Paul, preached unto them, ready, to depart on the morrow; and continued his speech until midnight. ⁸ And there were many lights in the upper chaimber, where they were gathered together. ⁹ And there sat in

CHAPTER XX.

a window a certain young man, named Eutychus, being fallen into a deep sleep : and as Paul was long preaching, he sunk down with sleep, and fell down from the third loft, and was taken up dead.

¹⁰ And Paul went down, and fell on him, and embracing him, said, “ Trouble not yourselves ; for, his life, is in him.”

¹¹ When he, therefore, was come up again, and had broken bread, and eaten, and talked a long while, even till break of day, so he departed. ¹² And they brought the young man alive, and were not a little comforted.

¹³ And we went before to ship, and sailed unto Assos, there, intending to take in Paul : for, so had he appointed, ininding himself, to go afoot. ¹⁴ And when he met with us at Assos, we took him in, and came to Mitylene. ¹⁵ And we sailed thence, and caine, the next *day*, over against Chios ; and, the next *day*, we arrived at Samos, and tarried at Trogyllium ; and, the next *day*, we came to Miletus. ¹⁶ For, Paul, had determined, to sail by Ephesus, because, he would not pend the time in Asia : for, he hasted, if it were possible for him, to be at Jerusalem the day of Pentecost.

¹⁷ And, from Miletus, he sent to Ephesus, and called the elders of the church. ¹⁸ And when they were come to him, he said unto them, “ Ye know, from the first day, that “ I came into Asia, after what manner I have been with you, “ at all seasons, ¹⁹ serving the Lord with all humility of mind, “ and with many tears, and temptations, which befell me, by “ the lying in wait of the Jews : ²⁰ and how I kept back “ nothing, that was profitable *unto you*, but, have shewed “ you, and have taught you publicly, and from house to house, “ ²¹ testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, “ repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus “ Christ. ²² And now, behold, I go, bound in the spirit, unto “ Jerusalem, not knowing the things, that shall befall me “ there : ²³ save, that the Holy Ghost, witnesseth in every city, “ saying, that bonds, and afflictions, abide me. ²⁴ But, none “ of these things, move me, neither, count I my life dear *unto myself*, so, that I might finish my course with joy, and the “ ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify “ the Gospel of the grace of God.

²⁵ “ And now, behold, I know, that ye all, among whom I “ have gone, preaching the kingdom of God, shall see my

THE ACTS.

“ face no more. ²⁶ Wherefore, I take you to record this day, “ that I am pure from the blood of all men. ²⁷ For, I have “ not shunned, to declare unto you all the counsel of God. “ ²⁸ Take heed, therefore, unto yourselves, and to all the “ flock, over the which, the Holy Ghost, hath made you over- “ seers, to feed the Church of God, whieh He hath purchased “ with His own blood. ²⁹ For, I know this, that, after my “ departing, shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not “ sparing the flock. ³⁰ Also, of your own selves, shall men “ arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after “ them. ³¹ Therefore watch, and remember, that, by the “ space of three years, I ceased not, to warn every one, night “ and day, with tears. ³² And now, brethren, I command “ you to God, and to the word of His grace, which is able, “ to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all “ them, which are sanctified.

³³ “ I have coveted no man’s silver, or, gold, or, apparel. “ ³⁴ Yea, ye yourselves know, that these hands, have ministered “ unto my necessities, and to them, that were with me. ³⁵ I “ have shewed you all things, how, that, so labouring, ye “ ought, to support the weak, and to remember the words of “ the Lord Jesus, how he said, ‘ It is more blessed, to give, “ than to receive.’ ”

³⁶ And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled down, and prayed with them all. ³⁷ And they all wept sore, and fell on Paul’s neck, and kissed him, ³⁸ sorrowing most of all, for the words, which he spake, that they should see his face no more. And they accompanied him unto the ship.

CHAPTER XXI.

1 Paul will not by any means be dissuaded from going to Jerusalem.

*9 Philip’s daughters prophetesses. 17 Paul cometh to Jerusalem :
27 where he is apprehended, and in great danger, 31 but by the
chief captain is rescued, and permitted to speak to the people.*

¹ And it came to pass, that after we were gotten from them, and had launched, we came, with a straight course, unto Coos, and the day following, unto Rhodes, and from thence, unto Patara : ² and finding a ship, sailing over unto Phenicia, we went aboard, and set forth. ³ Now, when we had dis-

CHAPTER XXI.

covered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and sailed into Syria, and landed at Tyre: for, there, the ship, was to unlade her burden. ⁴ And, finding disciples, we tarried there seven days: who said to Paul, through the Spirit, that he should not go up to Jerusalem. ⁵ And when we had accomplished those days, we departed, and went our way; and they all brought us on our way, with wives, and children, till *we were* out of the city: and we kneeled down on the shore, and prayed. ⁶ And when we had taken our leave one of another, we took ship; and they returned home again. ⁷ And when we had finished *our* course from Tyre, we came to Ptolemais, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

⁸ And, the next *day*, we, that were of Paul's company, departed, and came unto Cæsarea: and we entered into the house of Philip the evangelist, which was *one* of the seven; and abode with him. ⁹ And the same man, had four daughters, virgins, which did prophesy.

¹⁰ And, as we tarried *there* many days, there came down from Judæa a certain prophet, named Agabus. ¹¹ And when he was come unto us, he took Paul's girdle, and bound his own hands, and feet, and said, "Thus saith the Holy Ghost, 'So, shall the Jews, at Jerusalem, bind the man, that owneth this girdle, and shall deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles.'"

¹² And when we heard these things, both we, and they of that place, besought him, not to go up to Jerusalem.

¹³ Then Paul, answered, "What, mean ye to weep, and to break mine heart? for, I am ready, not to be bound only, but, also, to die at Jerusalem, for the name of the Lord Jesus."

¹⁴ And when he would not be persuaded, we ceased, saying, "The will of the Lord be done."

¹⁵ And, after those days, we took up our carriages, and went up to Jerusalem. ¹⁶ There went with us, also, *certain* of the disciples of Cæsarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an old disciple, with whom we should lodge. ¹⁷ And when we were come to Jerusalem, the brethren, received us gladly.

¹⁸ And, the *day* following, Paul, went in with us unto James; and all the elders, were present. ¹⁹ And when he had saluted them, he declared particularly, what things, God, had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministry.

THE ACTS.

²⁰ And when they heard it, they glorified the Lord, and said unto him, "Thou seest, brother, how many thousands of Jews there are, which believe; and they are all zealous of the law: ²¹ and they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Jews, which are among the Gentiles, to forsake Moses, saying, that they ought not, to circumcise *their* children, neither, to walk after the customs. ²² What is it therefore? the multitude, must needs come together: for, they will hear, that thou art come. ²³ Do, therefore, this, that we say to thee: We have four men, which have a vow on them; ²⁴ them take, and purify thyself with them, and be at charges with them, that they may shave *their* heads: and all, may know, that those things, whereof they were informed concerning thee, are nothing; but, *that* thou thyself, also, walkest orderly, and keepest the law. ²⁵ As touching the Gentiles, which believe, we have written, and concluded, that they observe no such thing, save only, that they keep themselves from *things* offered to idols, and from blood, and from strangled, and from fornication."

²⁶ Then Paul, took the men, and, the next day, purifying himself with them, entered into the temple, to signify, the accomplishment of the days of purification, until, that an offering, should be offered for every one of them.

²⁷ And when the seven days, were almost ended, the Jews, which were of Asia, when they saw him in the temple, stirred up all the people, and laid hands on him, ²⁸ crying out, "Men of Israel, help: This, is the man, that teacheth all men, every where, against the people, and the law, and this place: and further, brought Greeks, also, into the temple, and hath polluted this holy place." ²⁹ (For, they had seen, before, with him in the city, Trophimus an Ephesian, whom they supposed, that Paul, had brought into the temple.)

³⁰ And all the city, was moved, and the people, ran together: and they took Paul, and drew him out of the temple: and, forthwith, the doors, were shut.

³¹ And, as they went about, to kill him, tidings, came unto the chief captain of the band, that all Jerusalem, was in an uproar. ³² Who, immediately, took soldiers, and centurions, and ran down unto them: and when they saw the chief captain, and the soldiers, they left beating of Paul. ³³ Then the chief captain, came near, and took him, and commanded him,

CHAPTER XXII.

to be bound with two chains ; and demanded, who he was, and what he had done. ³⁴ And soone, cried one thing, some, another, among the multitude : and when he could not know the certainty, for the tumult, he commanded him, to be carried into the castle. ³⁵ And when he came upon the stairs, so it was, that he was borne of the soldiers, for the violence of the people. ³⁶ For, the multitude of the people, followed after, crying, “ Away with him.”

³⁷ And as Paul, was to be led into the castle, he said unto the chief captain, “ May I speak unto thee ? ”

Who said, “ Canst thou speak Greek ? ³⁸ art not thou that “ Egyptian, which, before these days, madest an uproar, and “ leddest out into the wilderness four thousand men, that “ were murderers ? ”

³⁹ But, Paul, said, “ I am a man, *which am* a Jew of Tar-“ sus, *a city* in Cilicia, a citizen of no mean city : and, I be-“ seech thee, suffer me, to speak unto the people.”

⁴⁰ And when he had given him licence, Paul, stood on the stairs, and beckoned with the hand unto the people. And when there was made a great silence, he spake unto *them*, in the Hebrew tongue, saying,—

¹ “ Men, brethren, and fathers, “ hear ye my defence, *which I* “ *make* now unto you.”—² (And when they heard, that he spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence : and he saith,)—³ “ I am, verily, a man, “ *which am* a Jew, born in Tarsus, “ *a city* in Cilicia, yet, brought up in “ this city, at the feet of Gama-“ licl, and taught according to “ the perfect manner of the law of the fathers, and was zealous “ toward God, as ye all are this day. ⁴ And I persecuted this “ way, unto the death, binding, and delivering into prisons, “ both men, and woenen. ⁵ As, also, the High Priest, doth “ bear me witness, and all the estate of the elders : from “ whom, also, I received letters unto the brethren, and went to “ Damascus, to bring them, which were there, bound, unto “ Jerusalem, for to be punished.

⁶ “ And it came to pass, that, as I made my journey, and

CHAPTER XXII

¹ *Paul declareth at large, how he was converted to the faith, 17 and called to his apostleship. 22 At the very mentioning of the Gentiles, the people exclaim on him. 24 He should have been scourged, 25 but claiming the privilege of a Roman, he escapeth.*

THE ACTS.

“ was come nigh unto Damascus, about noon, suddenly, there
“ shone, from heaven, a great light round about me.

“ “ And I fell unto the ground, and heard a voice, saying
“ unto me, ‘ Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me ? ’

“ “ And I answered, ‘ Who art thou, Lord ? ’

“ “ And he said unto me, ‘ I am Jesus of Nazareth, whom
“ thou persecutest.’—⁹ And they, that were with me, saw, in-
“ deed, the light, and were afraid ; but, THEY heard not the
“ voice of him, that spake to me.

“ “ And I said, ‘ What shall I do, Lord ? ’

“ “ And the Lord, said unto me, ‘ Arise, and go into Da-
“ mascus ; and there, it shall be told thee of all things, which
“ are appointed for thee, to do.’

“ “ And when I could not see, for the glory of that light,
“ being led by the hand of them, that were with me, I came
“ into Damascus. ¹² And one, Ananias, a devout man, ac-
“ cording to the law, having a good report of all the
“ Jews, which dwelt *there*, ¹³ came unto me, and stood, and
“ said unto me, ‘ Brother Saul, receive thy sight.’—And, the
“ same hour, I looked up upon him.—¹⁴ And he said, ‘ The
“ God of our fathers, hath chosen thee, that thou shouldest
“ know His will, and see that Just One, and shouldest hear
“ the voice of his mouth. ¹⁵ For, thou shalt be his wit-
“ ness, unto all men, of what thou hast seen, and heard.
“ “ ¹⁶ And now, why tarriest thou ? arise, and be baptized,
“ and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the
“ Lord.’

“ “ And it came to pass, that, when I was come again to
“ Jerusalem, even while I prayed in the temple, I was in a
“ trance ; ¹⁸ and saw him saying unto me, ‘ Make haste, and
“ get thee quickly out of Jerusalem : for, they will not re-
“ ceive thy testimony concerning me.’

“ “ And I said, ‘ Lord, they know, that I imprisoned, and
“ beat in every synagogue, them, that believed on thee : ²⁰ and
“ when the blood of thy martyr Stephen, was shed, I, also,
“ was standing by, and consenting unto his death, and kept
“ the raiment of them, that slew him.’

“ “ And he said unto me, ‘ Depart : for, I will send thee,
“ far hence, unto the Gentiles.’ ”

“ “ And they gave him audience unto this word, and
then, lifted up their voices, and said, “ Away with such a

CHAPTER XXIII.

"*fellow* from the earth: for, it is not fit, that he should "live."

²⁴ And, as they cried out, and cast off *their* clothes, and threw dust into the air, ²⁴ the chief captain, commanded him, to be brought into the castle, and bade, that he should be examined by scourging; that he might know, wherefore they cried so against him.

²⁵ And, as they bound him with thongs, Paul, said unto the centurion, that stood by, "Is it lawful, for you, to scourge a "man, that is a Roman, and uncondemned?"

²⁶ When the centurion, heard *that*, he went, and told the chief captain, saying, "Take heed what thou doest: for, this "man, is a Roman."

²⁷ Then the chief captain, came, and said unto him, "Tell "me, art thou a Roman?"

He said, "Yea."

²⁸ And the chief captain, answered, "With a great sum, ob- "tained I this freedom."

And Paul, said, "But, I was *free* born."

²⁹ Then, straightway, they departed from him, which should have examined him: and the chief captain also, was afraid, after he knew, that he was a Roman, and, because, he had bound him.

³⁰ On the morrow, because, he would have known the certainty, wherefore he was accused of the Jews, he loosed him from *his* bands, and commanded the Chief Priests, and all their council, to appear, and brought Paul down, and set him before them.

CHAPTER XXIII.

¹ As Paul pleadeth his cause, ² Ananias commandeth them to smite him. ⁷ Dissension among his accusers. ¹¹ God encourageth him. ¹⁴ The Jews' laying wait for Paul ²⁰ is declared unto the chief captain. ²⁷ He sendeth him to Felix the governor.

¹ And Paul, earnestly beholding the council, said, "Men, and brethren, I have lived in all good conscience be- "fore God, until this day."

² And the High Priest Ananias, commanded them, that stood by him, to smite him on the mouth.

THE ACTS.

³ Then said Paul unto him, “ God, shall smite thee, thou whited wall: for, sittest thou, to judge me after the law, “ and commandest me, to be smitten CONTRARY to the “ law?”

⁴ And they, that stood by, said, “ Revilest thou God’s High Priest?”

⁵ Then said Paul, “ I wist not, brethren, that HE was the High Priest: for, it is written, ‘ Thou shalt not speak evil “ of the ruler of thy people.’”

⁶ But, when Paul, perceived, that the one part, were Sadducees, and the other, Pharisees, he cried out in the council, “ Men, and brethren, I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee: of the hope, and resurrection of the dead, I am called “ in question.”

⁷ And when he had so said, there arose a dissension between the Pharisees, and the Sadducees: and the multitude, was divided. ⁸ For, the Sadducees, say, that there is no resurrection, neither, angel, nor, spirit: but, the Pharisees, confess both. ⁹ And there arose a great cry: and the Scribes, that were of the Pharisees’ part, arose, and strove, saying, “ We find no evil in this man: but, if a spirit, or, an angel, HATH spoken to him, let us not fight against “ God.”

¹⁰ And when there arose a great dissension, the chief captain, fearing, lest Paul, should have been pulled in pieces of them, commanded the soldiers, to go down, and to take him, by force, from among them, and to bring him into the castle.

¹¹ And, the night following, the Lord, stood by him, and said, “ Be of good cheer, Paul: for, as thou hast testified “ of me in Jerusalem, so, must thou bear witness, also, at “ Rome.”

¹² And when it was day, certain of the Jews, banded together, and bound themselves under a curse, saying, that they would neither eat, nor, drink, till they had killed Paul.

¹³ And they were more than forty, which had made this conspiracy. ¹⁴ And they came to the Chief Priests, and elders, and said, “ We have bound ourselves under a great curse, that “ we will eat nothing, until we have slain Paul. ¹⁵ Now, “ therefore, ye, with the council, signify to the chief captain, “ that he bring him down unto you to morrow, as though ye

CHAPTER XXIII.

“ would enquire something, more perfectly, concerning him :
“ and we, or ever he come near, are ready, to kill him.”

¹⁶ And when Paul’s sister’s son, heard of their lying in wait, he went, and entered into the castle, and told Paul.

¹⁷ Then Paul, called one of the centurions unto *him*, and said, “ Bring this young man unto the chief captain : for, he hath a certain thing, to tell him.”

¹⁸ So, he took him, and brought *him* to the chief captain, and said, “ Paul the prisoner, called me unto *him*, and prayed me, to bring this young man unto thee, who hath something, to say unto thee.”

¹⁹ Then the chief captain, took him by the hand, and went with *him* aside privately, and asked *him*, “ What is that, thou hast, to tell me ? ”

²⁰ And he said, “ The Jews, have agreed, to desire thee, that thou wouldest bring down Paul, to morrow, into the council, as though they would enquire somewhat of him more perfectly. ²¹ But, do not thou yield unto them : for, there lie in wait for him of them, more than forty men, which have bound themselves with an oath, that they will neither eat, nor, drink, till they have killed him : and now, are they ready, looking for a promise from thee.”

²² So, the chief captain, *then*, let the young man depart, and charged *him*, “ See thou tell no man, that thou hast shewed these things to me.” ²³ And he called unto *him* two centurions, saying, “ Make ready two hundred soldiers, to go to Cesarea, and horsemen threescore and ten, and spearmen two hundred, at the third hour of the night ; ²⁴ and provide them beasts, that they may set Paul on, and bring *him* safe unto Felix the governor.” ²⁵ And he wrote a letter, after this manner :—

²⁵ “ Cladias Lysias, unto the most excellent governor Felix, sendeth greeting.

²⁷ “ This man, was taken of the Jews, and should have been killed of them : then came I with an army, and rescued him, having understood, that he was a Roman. ²⁸ And when I would have known the cause, wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their council : ²⁹ whom I perceived, to be accused of questions of their law, but, to have nothing laid to his charge, worthy of death, or, of bonds.

THE ACTS.

“³⁰ And when it was told me, how, that the Jews, laid wait “for the man, I sent, straightway, to thee, and gave com-“mandment to his accusers, also, to say, before thee, what *they* “had against him. Farewell.”

³¹ Then the soldiers, as it was commanded them, took Paul, and brought *him*, by night, to Antipatris. ³² On the morrow, they left the horsemen, to go with him, and returned to the castle: ³³ who, when they came to Cæsarea, and delivered the epistle to the governor, presented Paul, also, before him.

³⁴ And when the governor, had read *the letter*, he asked, of what province he was. And when he understood, that *he was* of Cilicia; ³⁵ “I will hear thee,” said he, “when thine accusers, “are also come.”—And he commanded him, to be kept in Herod’s judgment hall.

CHAPTER XXIV.

¹ *Paul being accused by Tertullus the orator, 10 answereth for his life and doctrine. 24 He preacheth Christ to the governor and his wife. 26 The governor hopeth for a bribe, but in vain. 27 At last, going out of his office, he leaveth Paul in prison.*

¹ And, after five days, Ananias the High Priest, descended with the elders, and *with* a certain orator, *named* Tertullus, who informed the governor against Paul. ² And when he was called forth, Tertullus, began, to accuse *him*, saying, “Seeing, that, by thee, we enjoy great quietness, and “that very worthy deeds, are done unto this nation by thy “providence, ³ we accept *it* always, and in all places, most “noble Felix, with all thankfulness. ⁴ Notwithstanding, that “I be not further tedious unto thee, I pray thee, that thou “wouldest hear us, of thy clemency, a few words. ⁵ For, we “have found this man, *a pestilent fellow*, and a mover of se-“dition, among all the Jews throughout the world, and a “ringleader of the sect of the Nazarenes: ⁶ who, also, hath “gone about, to profane the temple: whom we took, and “would have judged according to our law. ⁷ But, the chief “captain Lysias, came *upon us*, and, with great violence, took “*him* away out of our hands, ⁸ commanding his accusers, to “come unto thee: by examining of whom, thyself mayest

CHAPTER XXIV.

“ take knowledge of all these things, whereof we accuse him.”
—⁹ And the Jews, also, assented, saying, that these things, were so.

¹⁰ Then Paul, after that the governor, had beckoned unto him, to speak, answered, “ Forasmuch, as I know, that thou hast been, of many years, a judge unto this nation, I do, the more cheerfully, answer for myself: ¹¹ because, that thou mayest understand, that there are, yet, but twelve days, since I went up to Jerusalem, for to worship. ¹² And they neither found me in the temple, disputing with any man, neither, raising up the people, neither, in the synagogues, nor, in the city: ¹³ neither, can they prove the things, whereof, they now accuse me. ¹⁴ But, this, I confess unto thee, that after the way, which they call heresy, so, worship I the God of my fathers, believing all things, which are written in the Law, and in the Prophets: ¹⁵ and have hope toward God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just, and unjust. ¹⁶ And herein, do I exercise myself, to have, always, a conscience void of offence, toward God, and toward men.

¹⁷ Now, after many years, I came, to bring alms to my nation, and offerings. ¹⁸ Whereupon, certain Jews from Asia, found me purified in the temple, neither, with multitude, nor, with tumult. ¹⁹ Who ought, to have been here before thee, and object, if they had ought against me. ²⁰ Or else, let these same *here* say, if they have found any evil doing in me, while I stood before the council, ²¹ except it be for this one voice, that I cried, standing among them, ‘Touching the resurrection of the dead, I am called in question by you this day.’ ”

²² And when Felix, heard these things, having more perfect knowledge of *that* way, he deferred them, and said, “ When Lysias, the chief captain, shall come down, I will know the uttermost of your matter.” —²³ And he commanded a centurion, to keep Paul, and to let *him* have liberty, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance, to minister, or come unto him.

²⁴ And, after certain days, when Felix, came with his wife Drusilla, which was a Jewess, he sent for Paul, and heard him, concerning the faith in Christ. ²⁵ And as he reasoned of righteousness, temperance, and judgment to come,

THE ACTS.

Felix, trembled, and answered, “ Go thy way for this time ; “ when I have a convenient season, I will call for thee.”
26 He hoped, also, that money, should have been given him of Paul, that he might loose him : wherefore, he sent for him the oftener, and communed with him. 27 But, after two years, Porcius Festus, came into Felix’ room : and Felix, willing, to shew the Jews a pleasure, left Paul bound.

CHAPTER XXV.

2 The Jews accuse Paul before Festus. 8 He answereth for himself, 11 and appealeth unto Cæsar. 14 Afterwards Festus openeth his matter to king Agrippa, 23 and he is brought forth. 25 Festus cleareth him to have done nothing worthy of death.

¹ Now, when Festus, was come into the province, after three days, he ascended from Cæsarea to Jerusalem.

² Then the High Priest, and the chief of the Jews, informed him against Paul, and besought him, ³ and desired favour against him, that he would send for him to Jerusalem, laying wait in the way, to kill him.

⁴ But, Festus, answered, that Paul, should be kept at Cæsarea, and that he himself would depart shortly *thither*.

⁵ “ Let them, therefore,” said he, “ which, among you, are able, go down with *me*, and accuse this man, if there be any wickedness in him.”

⁶ And when he had tarried among them more than ten days, he went down unto Cæsarea ; and, the next day, sitting on the judgment seat, commanded, Paul to be brought.

⁷ And when he was come, the Jews, which came down from Jerusalem, stood round about, and laid many, and grievous, complaints against Paul, which they could not prove.

⁸ While he answered for himself, “ Neither, against the law “ of the Jews, neither, against the temple, nor yet, against “ Cæsar, have I offended any thing at all.”

⁹ But, Festus, willing, to do the Jews a pleasure, answered Paul, and said, “ Wilt thou go up to Jerusalem, and there, “ be judged of these things before me ? ”

¹⁰ Then said Paul, “ I stand at Cæsar’s judgment seat, “ where I ought, to be judged : to the Jews, have I done no “ wrong, as thou, very well, knowest. ¹¹ For, if I be an

CHAPTER XXV.

“ offender, or, have committed any thing worthy of death, I
“ refuse not, to die: but, if there be none of these things,
“ whereof, these, accuse me, no man, may deliver me unto
“ them. I appeal unto Cæsar.”

¹² Then Festus, when he had conferred with the council,
answered, “ Hast thou appealed unto Cæsar? unto Cæsar,
“ shalt thou go.”

¹³ And, after certain days, king Agrippa, and Bernice,
came unto Cæsarea, to salute Festus. ¹⁴ And when they
had been there many days, Festus, declared Paul’s cause unto
the king, saying, “ There is a certain man left in bonds by
“ Felix: ¹⁵ about whom, when I was at Jerusalem, the Chief
“ Priests, and the elders of the Jews, informed *me*, desiring,
“ to have judgment against him. ¹⁶ To whom I answered, ‘ It
“ is not the manner of the Romans, to deliver any man, to
“ die, before that he, which is accused, have the accusers face
“ to face, and have licence, to answer for himself, concerning
“ the crime laid against him.’ ¹⁷ Therefore, when they were
“ come hither, without any delay, on the morrow, I sat on the
“ judgment seat, and commanded, the man to be brought
“ forth. ¹⁸ Against whom, when the accusers, stood up, they
“ brought none accusation of such things as I supposed:
“ ¹⁹ but, had certain questions against him, of their own super-
“ stition, and of one Jesus, which was dead, whom Paul,
“ affirmed, to be alive. ²⁰ And, because, I doubted of such
“ manner of questions, I asked *him*, whether he would go to
“ Jerusalem, and there, be judged of these matters. ²¹ But,
“ when Paul, had appealed, to be reserved unto the hearing
“ of Augustus, I commanded him, to be kept, till I might
“ send him to Cæsar.”

²² Then Agrippa, said unto Festus, “ I would, also, hear the
“ man myself.”

“ To morrow,” said he, “ thou shalt hear him.”

²³ And, on the morrow, when Agrippa, was come, and
Bernice, with great pomp, and was entered into the place of
hearing, with the chief captains, and principal men of the
city, at Festus’ commandinent, Paul, was brought forth.

²⁴ And Festus, said, “ King Agrippa, and all men, which
“ are here present with us, ye see this man, about whom, all
“ the multitude of the Jews, have dealt with me, both at

“ Jerusalem, and *also* here, crying, that he ought not, to live
 “ any longer. ²⁵ But, when I found, that he had committed
 “ nothing worthy of death, and that he himself hath appealed
 “ to Augustus, I have determined, to send him. ²⁶ Of whom,
 “ I have no certain thing, to write unto my lord. Wherefore,
 “ I have brought him forth before you, and, specially, before
 “ THEE, O, king Agrippa, that, after examination had, I
 “ might have somewhat, to write. ²⁷ For, it seemeth to me
 “ unreasonable, to send a prisoner, and not withal, to signify
 “ the crimes *laid* against him.”

CHAPTER XXVI.

2 *Paul, in the presence of Agrippa, declareth his life from his childhood, 12 and how miraculously he was converted, and called to his apostleship. 24 Festus chargeth him to be mad, whereunto he answereth modestly. 28 Agrippa is almost persuaded to be a Christian. 31 The whole company pronounce him innocent.*

¹ Then Agrippa, said unto Paul, “ Thou art permitted,
 “ to speak for thyself.”

Then Paul, stretched forth the hand, and answered for himself : ² “ I think myself happy, king Agrippa, because, I
 “ shall answer for myself this day, before thee, touching all
 “ the things, whereof I am accused of the Jews : ³ especially,
 “ because, I know thee, to be expert in all customs, and
 “ questions, which are among the Jews : wherefore, I beseech
 “ thee, to hear me patiently.

⁴ “ My manner of life from my youth, which was, at the
 “ first, among mine own nation, at Jerusalem, know all the
 “ Jews ; ⁵ which knew me from the beginning, if they would
 “ testify, that, after the most straitest sect of our religion, I
 “ lived a Pharisee. ⁶ And now, I stand, and am judged, for
 “ the hope of the promise, made of God unto our fathers :
 “ ⁷ unto which *promise*, our twelve tribes, instantly serving
 “ God day and night, hope, to come. For which hope’s
 “ sake, king Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews. ⁸ Why
 “ should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God,
 “ should raise the dead ?

⁹ “ I, verily, thought with myself, that I ought, to do many
 “ things contrary to the name of Jesus of Nazareth. ¹⁰ Which

CHAPTER XXVI.

“ thing I, also, did in Jerusalem : and many of the saints, did
“ I shut up in prison, having received authority from the
“ Chief Priests ; and when they were put to death, I gave my
“ voice against them. ¹¹ And I punished them, oft, in every
“ synagogue, and compelled them, to blaspheme ; and, being
“ exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them even unto
“ strange cities.

¹² “ Whereupon, as I went to Damascus with authority, and
“ commission, from the Chief Priests, ¹³ at midday, O, king, I
“ saw in the way a light, from heaven, above the brightness of
“ the sun, shining round about me, and them, which journeyed
“ with me. ¹⁴ And when we were all fallen to the earth, I
“ heard a voice, speaking unto me, and saying in the Hebrew
“ tongue, ‘ Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? it is hard, for
“ thee, to kick against the pricks.’

¹⁵ “ And I said, ‘ Who art thou, Lord?’

“ And he said, ‘ I am Jesus, whom thou persecutest. ¹⁶ But,
“ rise, and stand upon thy feet: for, I have appeared unto thee,
“ for this purpose, to make thee a minister, and a witness, both
“ of these things, which thou hast seen, and of those things, in
“ the which, I will appear unto thee; ¹⁷ delivering thee from
“ the people, and *from* the Gentiles, unto whom, now, I
“ send thee, ¹⁸ to open their eyes, *and* to turn *them* from
“ darkness to light, and *from* the power of Satan unto God,
“ that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance
“ among them, which are sanctified by faith, that is in
“ me.’

¹⁹ “ Whereupon, O, king Agrippa, I was not disobedient
“ unto the heavenly vision: ²⁰ but, shewed, first, unto them of
“ Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts
“ of Judæa, and *then* to the Gentiles, that they should repent,
“ and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance. ²¹ For
“ these causes, the Jews, caught me in the temple, and went
“ about, to kill *me*. ²² Having, therefore, obtained help of
“ God, I continue, unto this day, witnessing both to small,
“ and great, saying none other things than those, which the
“ prophets, and Moses, did say should come: ²³ that Christ,
“ should suffer, *and* that he should be the first, that should
“ rise from the dead, and should shew light unto the people,
“ and to the Gentiles.”

²⁴ And as he, thus, spake for himself, Festus, said with a

THE ACTS.

loud voice, "Paul, thou art beside thyself; much learning, "doth make thee mad."

"²⁵ But, he said, "I am not mad, most noble Festus; but, "speak forth the words of truth, and soberness. ²⁶ For, the "king, knoweth of these things, before whom, also, I speak "freely: for, I am persuaded, that none of these things, are "hidden from him; for, this thing, was not done in a corner. "²⁷ King Agrippa, believest thou the prophets? I know, "that thou believest."

"²⁸ Then Agrippa, said unto Paul, "Almost thou persuadest "ME, to be a Christian."

"²⁹ And Paul, said, "I would to God, that not only thou, "but, also, all, that hear me this day, were, both almost, and "altogether, such as I am, except these bonds."

"³⁰ And when he had thus spoken, the king, rose up, and the governor, and Bernice, and they, that sat with them: ³¹ and when they were gone aside, they talked between themselves, saying, "This man, doeth nothing worthy of death, or, "of bonds." ³² Then said Agrippa unto Festus, "This "man, might have been set at liberty, if he had not appealed "unto Cæsar."

CHAPTER XXVII.

1 *Paul shipping toward Rome, 10 foretelleth of the danger of the voyage, 11 but is not believed. 14 They are tossed to and fro with tempest, 41 and suffer shipwreck, 22, 34, 44 yet all come safe to land.*

1 And when it was determined, that we should sail into Italy, they delivered Paul, and certain other prisoners, unto *one*, named Julius, a centurion of Augustus' band.

2 And, entering into a ship of Adramyttium, we launched, meaning, to sail by the coasts of Asia; *one* Aristarchus, a Macedonian of Thessalonica, being with us. **3** And, the next *day*, we touched at Sidon. And Julius, courteously entreated Paul, and gave *him* liberty, to go unto his friends, to refresh himself. **4** And when we had launched from thence, we sailed under Cyprus, because, the winds, were contrary. **5** And when we had sailed over the sea of Cilicia, and Pamphylia, we came to Myra, *a city of Lycia*. **6** And there, the centu-

CHAPTER XXVII.

rion, found a ship of Alexandria, sailing into Italy ; and he put us therein.

⁷ And when we had sailed slowly, many days, and scarce were come over against Cnidus, the wind, not suffering us, we sailed under Crete, over against Salmone ; ⁸ and, hardly passing it, came unto a place, which is called the Fair Havens ; nigh whereunto, was the city of Lasea.

⁹ Now, when much time, was spent, and when sailing, was now dangerous, because, the fast, was, now, already past, Paul, admonished *them*, ¹⁰ and said unto them, “ Sirs, I perceive, that this voyage, will be with hurt, and much damage, ‘‘ not only of the lading, and ship, but, also, of our lives.’’

¹¹ Nevertheless, the centurion, believed the master, and the owner of the ship, more than those things, which were spoken by Paul. ¹² And, because, the haven, was not commodious, to winter in, the more part, advised, to depart thence also, if, by any means, they might attain to Phenice, *and there*, to winter ; *which is* an haven of Crete, and lieth toward the south west, and north west.

¹³ And when the south wind, blew softly, supposing, that they had obtained *their* purpose, loosing *thence*, they sailed close by Crete. ¹⁴ But, not long after, there arose against it a tempestuous wind, called Euroclydon. ¹⁵ And when the ship, was caught, and could not bear up into the wind, we let *her* drive. ¹⁶ And running under a certain island, which is called Clauda, we had much work, to come by the boat : ¹⁷ which when they had taken up, they used helps, undergirding the ship ; and, fearing lest they should fall into the quick-sands, strake sail, and, so, were driven. ¹⁸ And we being exceedingly tossed with a tempest, the next *day*, they lightened the ship ; ¹⁹ and the third *day*, we cast out, with our own hands, the tackling of the ship. ²⁰ And when neither sun, nor, stars, in many days, appeared, and no small tempest, lay on *us*, all hope, that we should be saved, was, then, taken away.

²¹ But, after long abstinence, Paul, stood forth in the midst of them, and said, “ Sirs, ye should have hearkened unto me, ‘‘ and not have loosed from Crete, and to have gained this ‘‘ harm, and loss. ²² And now, I exhort you, to be of good ‘‘ cheer : for, there shall be no loss of *any man’s* life among ‘‘ you, but, of the ship. ²³ For, there stood by me, this night, ‘‘ the angel of God, whose, I am, and whom, I serve, ²⁴ say-

“ ing, ‘ Fear not, Paul ; thou must be brought before Cæsar :
 “ ‘ and, lo, God, hath given thee all them, that sail with thee.’
 “ ²⁵ Wherefore, sirs, be of good cheer : for, I believe God,
 “ that it shall be, even as it was told me. ²⁶ Howbeit, we
 “ must be cast upon a certain island.”

²⁷ But, when the fourteenth night, was come, as we were driven up and down in Adria, about midnight the shipmen, deemed, that they drew near to some country ; ²⁸ and sounded, and found *it* twenty fathoms : and when they had gone a little further, they sounded again, and found *it* fifteen fathoms. ²⁹ Then, fearing, lest we should have fallen upon rocks, they cast four anchors out of the stern, and wished for the day.

³⁰ And as the shipmen, were about, to flee out of the ship, when they had let down the boat into the sea, under colour, as though they would have cast anchors out of the foreship, ³¹ Paul, said to the centurion, and to the soldiers, “ Except “ these, abide in the ship, ye cannot be saved.”—³² Then the soldiers, cut off the ropes of the boat, and let her fall off.

³³ And while the day, was coming on, Paul, besought *them* all, to take meat, saying, “ This day, is the fourteenth “ day, that ye have tarried, and continued fasting, having “ taken nothing. ³⁴ Wherefore, I pray you, to take *some* meat : “ for, this, is for your health : for, there shall not an hair fall “ from the head of any of you.”—³⁵ And when he had thus spoken, he took bread, and gave thanks to God in presence of them all : and when he had broken *it*, he began, to eat. ³⁶ Then were they all of good cheer, and they, also, took *some* meat.—³⁷ And we were in all in the ship, two hundred three-score and sixteen souls.—³⁸ And when they had eaten enough, they lightened the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea.

³⁹ And when it was day, they knew not the land : but, they discovered a certain creek with a shore, into the which, they were minded, if it were possible, to thrust in the ship. ⁴⁰ And when they had taken up the anchors, they committed *themselves* unto the sea, and loosed the rudder bands, and hoisted up the mainsail to the wind, and made toward shore. ⁴¹ And falling into a place, where two seas, met, they ran the ship aground ; and the forepart, stuck fast, and remained unmoveable, but, the hinder part, was broken with the violence of the waves.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

⁴² And the soldiers' counsel, was, to kill the prisoners, lest any of them, should swim out, and escape. ⁴³ But, the centurion, willing to save Paul, kept them from *their* purpose ; and commanded, that they, which could swim, should cast *themselves*, first, *into the sea*, and get to land : ⁴⁴ and the rest, some, on boards, and some, on *broken pieces* of the ship.— And so it came to pass, that they escaped all safe to land.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

¹ *Paul after his shipwreck is kindly entertained of the barbarians.*
⁵ *The viper on his hand hurteth him not.* ⁸ *He healeth many diseases in the island.* ¹¹ *They depart towards Rome.* ¹⁷ *He declareth to the Jews the cause of his coming.* ²⁴ *After his preaching some were persuaded, and some believed not.* ³⁰ *Yet he preacheth there two years.*

¹ And when they were escaped, then they knew, that the island, was called Melita.

² And the barbarous people, shewed us no little kindness : for, they kindled a fire, and received us every one, because of the present rain, and because of the cold. ³ And when Paul, had gathered a bundle of sticks, and laid *them* on the fire, there came a viper out of the heat, and fastened on his hand. ⁴ And when the barbarians, saw the *venomous* beast hang on his hand, they said among themselves, “ No “ doubt, this man, is a murderer, whom, though he hath “ escaped the sea, yet, vengeance, suffereth not, to live.” ⁵ And he shook off the beast into the fire, and felt no harm. ⁶ Howbeit, they looked when he should have swollen, or, fallen down dead suddenly : but, after they had looked a great while, and saw no harm come to him, they changed their minds, and said, that he was a god.

⁷ In the same quarters, were possessions of the chief man of the island, whose name, was Publius ; who received us, and lodged us, three days, courteously. ⁸ And it came to pass, that the father of Publius, lay sick of a fever, and of a bloody flux : to whom, Paul, entered in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and healed him. ⁹ So, when this was done, others, also, which had diseases in the island, came, and were healed : ¹⁰ who, also, honoured us with many honours ;

THE ACTS.

and when we departed, they laded *us* with such things as were necessary.

¹¹ And, after three months, we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the isle, whose sign, was Castor and Pollux. ¹² And landing at Syracuse, we tarried there three days. ¹³ And from thence, we fetched a compass, and came to Rhegium: and, after one day, the south wind blew, and we came the next day to Puteoli: ¹⁴ where we found brethren, and were desired, to tarry with them seven days: and so we went toward Rome. ¹⁵ And from thence, when the brethren, heard of us, they came to meet us as far as Appii Forum, and the Three Taverns: whom, when Paul, saw, he thanked God, and took courage.

¹⁶ And when we came to Rome, the centurion, delivered the prisoners to the captain of the guard: but, Paul, was suffered, to dwell by himself with a soldier, that kept him.

¹⁷ And it came to pass, that, after three days, Paul, called the chief of the Jews together: and when they were come together, he said unto them, “ Men, and brethren, “ though I have committed nothing against the people, or, “ customs of our fathers, yet, was I delivered prisoner, from “ Jerusalem, into the hands of the Romans. ¹⁸ Who, when “ they had examined me, would have let *me* go, because, “ there was no cause of death in me. ¹⁹ But, when the “ Jews, spake against *it*, I was constrained, to appeal unto “ Cæsar; not that I had ought, to accuse my nation of. ²⁰ For this cause, therefore, have I called for you, to see “ *you*, and to speak with *you*: because, that, for the hope “ of Israel, I am bound with this chain.”

²¹ And they said unto him, “ We neither received letters “ out of Judæa concerning thee, neither, any of the brethren, “ that came, shewed, or, spake, any harm of thee. ²² But, we “ desire, to hear of thee, what thou thinkest: for, as concerning “ this sect, we know, that, every where, it is spoken against.”

²³ And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into *his* lodging; to whom, he expounded, and testified the kingdom of God, persuading them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and *out of* the Prophets, from morning till evening. ²⁴ And some, believed the things, which were spoken, and some, believed not.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

²⁵ And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, “ Well spake the Holy Ghost, by Esaias the prophet, unto our fathers, “ ²⁶ saying, ‘ Go unto this people, and say, Hearing, ye shall “ hear, and shall not understand ; and seeing, ye shall see, “ and not perceive : ²⁷ for, the heart of this people, is waxed “ gross, and their ears, are dull of hearing, and their eyes, “ have they closed ; lest they should see with *their* eyes, “ and hear with *their* ears, and understand with *their* heart, “ and should be converted, and I should heal them.’—²⁸ Be “ it known, therefore, unto you, that the salvation of God, is “ sent unto the Gentiles, and *that THEY* will hear it.”

²⁹ And when he had said these words, the Jews, departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.

³⁰ And Paul dwelt two whole years in his own hired house, and received all, that came in unto him, ³¹ preaching the kingdom of God, and teaching those things, which concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, no man, forbidding him.

TABLE OF QUOTATIONS, &c.

ILLUSTRATIVE OF THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES.

CHAPTER I. Verses 16—20—Psalm, xli. 9, lxix. 25, and cix. 8.

CHAPTER II. Verse 17—Joel, ii. 28—32. Verses 25—28—Psalm, xvi. 8. Verse 29—1 Kings, ii. 10. Verse 30—Psalm, cxxxii. 11. Verses 34, 35—Psalm, cx. 1.

CHAPTER III. Verse 18—Isaiah, l. 6, and liii. 5. Verse 22—Deuteronomy, xviii. 15. Verse 25—Genesis, xii. 3.

CHAPTER IV. Verse 11—Psalm, cxviii. 22. Verse 25—Psalm, ii. I.

CHAPTER VII. Verses 2, 3—Genesis, xii. 1. Verses 6, 7—Genesis, xv. 13—16. Verse 8—Genesis, xvii. 9—11, xxi. 2—4, xxv. 26, and xxix. 31. Verse 9—Genesis, xxxvii. 28. Verse 10—Genesis, xli. 37. Verse 11—Genesis, xli. 54. Verse 12—Genesis, xlii. 1. Verse 13—Genesis, xlvi. 4—16. Verse 15—Genesis, xlvi. 5, and lxix. 33. Verse 16—Exodus, xiii. 19, and Genesis, xxiii. 16. Verse 17—Exodus, i. 7. Verse 19—Exodus, i. 22. Verse 20—Exodus, ii. 2. Verses 24—26—Exodus, ii. 11—13. Verse 30—Exodus, iii. 2. Verse 33—Joshua, v. 15. Verse 36—Exodus, vii.—xi., and xiv. Verse 37—Deuteronomy, xviii. 15. Verse 38—Exodus, xix. 3. Verse 40—Exodus, xxxii. 1. Verse 42—Amos, v. 25. Verse 44—Exodus, xxv. 40. Verse 45—Joshua, iii. 14. Verse 46—1 Samuel, xvi. 1, and Psalm, cxxxii. 5. Verses 48, 49—1 Kings, viii. 27, and Isaiah, lxvi. 1, 2. Verse 53—Exodus, xx. 1.

CHAPTER VIII. Verse 32—Isaiah, liii. 7.

CHAPTER X. Verse 34—Deuteronomy, x. 17, and Job, xxxiv. 19.

CHAPTER XIII. Verse 17—Isaiah, i. 2, and Exodus, xii. 37. Verse 18—Exodus, xvi. 35. Verse 22—1 Samuel, xvi. 12, 13, and Psalm, lxxxix. 20. Verse 33—Psalm, ii. 7. Verse 34—Isaiah, lv. 3. Verse 35—Psalm, xvi. 10. Verse 36—1 Kings, ii. 10. Verse 41—Habakkuk, i. 5. Verse 47—Isaiah, xl ix. 6.

CHAPTER XIV. Verses 15, 16—Genesis, i. 1, &c. and Psalm, lxxxi. 12.

CHAPTER XV. Verse 16—Amos, ix. 11, 12.

CHAPTER XVII. Verse 31—Psalm, ix. 7, 8, and xcvi. 13.

CHAPTER XXI. Verse 26—Numbers, vi. 13.

CHAPTER XXIII. Verse 5—Exodus, xxii. 28.

CHAPTER XXVI. Verse 6—Genesis, iii. 15, and Deuteronomy, xviii. 15.

CHAPTER XXVIII. Verses 26, 27—Isaiah, vi. 9.

END OF PART THE FIRST.

STATIONERS' HALL COURT,
LONDON, E.C.

EDUCATIONAL AND SCIENTIFIC
WORKS

PUBLISHED BY

CHARLES GRIFFIN & COMPANY



BY WILLIAM AITKEN, M.D. EDIN.

Professor of Pathology at the Army Medical School.

Third Edition. Two Large Volumes 8vo, II. 11s. 6d. cloth.

THE SCIENCE AND PRACTICE OF MEDICINE.

"We most strongly recommend Dr. Aitken's work to every student and practitioner of medicine."—*Medical Times and Gazette.*

"The overtasked practitioner will find in this book an epitome of all the important papers of the day."—*Lancet.*

"Dr. Aitken's book is the most comprehensive of any that have in late years been published on the Practice of Medicine."—*British Medical Journal.*



Fcap 8vo, cloth, 2s. 6d.

ON THE GROWTH OF THE RECRUIT AND
YOUNG SOLDIER.

With a View to the Early Selection of Growing Lads for the Army, and

WORKS BY PROFESSOR ANSTED.

Illustrated. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. cloth.

GEOLOGICAL SCIENCE.

Including Practical Geology and the Elements of Physical Geography.

With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 8s. 6d. cloth.

NATURAL HISTORY OF THE INANIMATE CREATION.

As recorded in the Structure of the Earth, the Plants of the Field, and the Atmospheric Phenomena.



Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. cloth.

TREATISE ON TRIGONOMETRY.

BY PROFESSOR AIRY.

REVISED BY PROFESSOR BLACKBURN.



Fourth Edition, corrected and enlarged. With Copious Index, and 500 Engravings. Post 8vo, 7s. 6d., cloth.

TREASURY OF NATURAL SCIENCE.

A Comprehensive Introduction to the Natural and Physical Sciences,

From the German of Professor SCHOEDLER, with numerous Additions, by HENRY MEDLOCK, F.C.S.



Third Edition, Revised. 8vo, cloth, 5s.

DICTIONARY OF GEOLOGY AND MINERALOGY.

Comprising such terms in Natural History as are connected with the Study of Geology.

BY WILLIAM HUMBLE, M.D., F.G.S.

In One Volume, Svo, handsomely bound in Roxburgh Style, gilt, 18s.

DESK GAZETTEER AND ATLAS.

BY JAMES BRYCE, LL.D., F.G.S., AND ALEXANDER KEITH JOHNSTON,
F.R.S.E., F.R.G.S., F.G.S.

The Maps in this work have been constructed from the latest information, and are
executed in the finest style of coloured lithography, by Messrs. W. & A. K. Johnston,
expressly for this book.



Imperial Svo, 12s. 6d.

HAND ATLAS OF UNIVERSAL HISTORY.

In a Series of Twenty-one coloured Maps. Historical Dissertations.

BY EDWARD QUIN, M.A.



Fifth Edition. Royal 4to, 17. 1s. half-morocco.

LIBRARY ATLAS OF UNIVERSAL HISTORY.

In a Series of Twenty-one coloured Maps of the World, as known at different Periods.

Coloured according to the particular changes of each Period.

BY W. HUGHES, F.R.G.S.



New Edition. Small Svo, 2s. 6d., cloth.

THE MOUNTAINS, VALLEYS, AND RIVERS OF THE HOLY LAND.

BY JOHN KITTO D.D.

With numerous Illustrations. Third Edition, enlarged. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. cloth.

MANUAL OF ELECTRICITY, PRACTICAL AND THEORETICAL.

BY F. C. BAKEWELL.

New Edition. With 67 Pages of Engravings. 4to, 21s., half-bound.

ENCYCLOPÆDIA OF ARTS, MANUFACTURES, AND MACHINERY.

BY PROFESSOR BARLOW.

Introductory Dissertation by PROFESSOR BRIDGEMAN.

With numerous Illustrations. Crown 4to, 4s., cloth.

RECORDS OF MINING AND METALLURGY; OR, FACTS AND MEMORANDA FOR THE USE OF THE MINE AGENT AND SMELTER.

BY JOHN A. PHILLIPS AND JOHN DARLINGTON.

With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 1s., cloth.

PRACTICAL GEOMETRY;

Being a Solution of the Problems most useful to the Practical Draughtsman.

BY ALEXANDER JARDINE,
Civil Engineer.

PROFESSOR RANKINE'S WORKS.

Third Edition. Crown 8vo, 12s. 6d., cloth.

MANUAL OF APPLIED MECHANICS.

Illustrated with Diagrams.

"Cannot fail to be adopted as a class-book."—*Mining Journal*.

Illustrations. Third Edition. Crown 8vo, 12s. 6d., cloth.

MANUAL OF THE STEAM-ENGINE AND OTHER PRIME MOVERS.

To explain the Scientific Principles of the Action of Prime Movers; or Machines for obtaining Motive Power, and to show how those Principles are to be applied practically.

Third Edition. Crown 8vo, 16s., cloth.

MANUAL OF CIVIL ENGINEERING.

SURVEYS, EARTHWORKS, FOUNDATIONS, MASONRY, CARPENTRY, CANALS,
RIVERS, WATERWORKS, &c., &c.

Numerous Diagrams.

"Far surpasses in merit every existing work of the kind."—*Engineer*.

"We should imagine that the 'Manual of Civil Engineering' is destined to become no only a monitor and a guide to young engineers, but a friend and companion to engineers."—*Mechanics' Magazine*.

"Supplies a want that has long been felt by the rising generation of engineers. It should be in the hands of every young man following the profession of civil engineering."—*Glasgow Herald*.

LORD BROUGHAM'S WORKS.

Post 8vo, 5s. cloth.

**LIVES OF PHILOSOPHERS OF THE TIME
OF GEORGE III.**

Comprising Black, Watt, Priestley, Cavendish, Davy, Simson, Adam Smith, Lavoisier, Banks, and D'Alembert.

Post 8vo, 5s. cloth.

**LIVES OF MEN OF LETTERS OF THE
TIME OF GEORGE III.**

Comprising Voltaire, Rousseau, Hume, Robertson, Johnson, and Gibbon.

Post 8vo, 5s. cloth.

**SKETCHES OF BRITISH STATESMEN OF
THE REIGN OF GEORGE III.**

New edition, with the Letters of George III. to Lord North, now first published.

Post 8vo, 5s. cloth.

**SKETCHES OF BRITISH STATESMEN OF
THE TIME OF GEORGE III. AND IV.**

New edition, enlarged by Numerous Fresh Sketches, and other additional matter.

LORD BROUGHAM'S WORKS.

New edition, greatly enlarged. Post 8vo, 5s. cloth.

SKETCHES OF FOREIGN STATESMEN OF THE TIME OF GEORGE III.

Post 8vo, 5s. cloth.

NATURAL PHILOSOPHY:

Comprising a Discourse of Natural Theology, Dialogues on Instinct, and Dissertation on
the Structure of the Cells of Bees.

Post 8vo, 5s. cloth.

RHETORICAL AND LITERARY DISSERTATIONS:

Comprising Discourse of Ancient Literature; Lord Rector's Address; Rhetorical Contributions to the "Edinburgh Review;" and Discourses on the Objects, Pleasures, and Advantages of Social and Political Science.

Post 8vo, 5s. cloth.

HISTORICAL AND POLITICAL DISSERTATIONS:

Comprising Balance of Power, Foreign Policy and Relations, War Measures, Penal Legislation, Revolutions, Reform, Right of Search, &c. &c.

Second Edition, post 8vo, 7s. 6d. cloth.

TRACTS, MATHEMATICAL AND PHYSICAL

LORD BROUGHAM'S WORKS.

Post Svo, 5s. cloth.

THE BRITISH CONSTITUTION:

ITS HISTORY, STRUCTURE, AND WORKING.

New Edition, with Latest Corrections and Additions.

Two Volumes, post Svo, 10s., cloth.

**SPEECHES ON SOCIAL AND POLITICAL
SUBJECTS,**

With Historical Introductions, and his Lordship's Latest Corrections.

Three Volumes, Svo, 1*M.* 16s. cloth.

**CONTRIBUTIONS TO THE "EDINBURGH
REVIEW,"**

POLITICAL, HISTORICAL, AND MISCELLANEOUS.

New Edition, Svo, 10s. 6*d.* cloth.

**ENGLAND AND FRANCE UNDER THE
HOUSE OF LANCASTER.**

Small Svo, 2s. 6*d.* cloth.

PALEY'S NATURAL THEOLOGY,

With Notes and Dissertations.

WILLIAM COBBETT'S WORKS.

New Edition. 12mo, cloth, 2s.

GRAMMAR OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE.

To which is added Six Lessons intended to prevent Statesmen from using false grammar, and from writing in an awkward manner.

12mo, cloth, 3s. 6d.

A FRENCH GRAMMAR:

PLAIN INSTRUCTIONS FOR THE LEARNING OF FRENCH, IN A SERIES OF LETTERS.

Eleventh Edition, Revised, with Additions and Corrections by his Son.

- Foolscap 8vo, 2s. 6d., cloth.

A D V I C E T O Y O U N G M E N,

AND (INCIDENTALLY) T O Y O U N G W O M E N.

Foolscap 8vo, cloth,

EXERCISES TO THE FRENCH GRAMMAR,

With Key.

Foolscap 8vo, cloth, 2s.

L A T I N G R A M M A R,

F O R T H E U S E O F E N G L I S H B O Y S.

WORKS BY REV. FREDERICK DENISON MAURICE, M.A.

Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s., cloth.

A N C I E N T P H I L O S O P H Y,

Comprising the Hebrew, Egyptian, Hindoo, Chinese, Persian, Grecian, Roman, and Alexandrian Systems of Philosophy.

Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d., cloth.

P H I L O S O P H Y O F T H E F I R S T S I X C E N T U R I E S,

Comprising Seneca — Plutarch — Trajan — Ignatius — Justin — Tertullian — Plotinus — Iphorphy — Athanasius — Julian — Augustin — Proclus — Boethius — Justinian — Gregory I., &c.

Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.

M E D I E V A L P H I L O S O P H Y,

Comprising Boethius — Erigena — Lanfranc — Anselm — Abelard — Peter the Lombard — Albertus Magnus — Thomas Aquinas — Bonaventura — Duns Scotus — Roger Bacon — Lully, &c.

Crown 8vo, 10s. 6d., cloth.

M O D E R N P H I L O S O P H Y,

Comprising William of Occam — Huss — Reuchlin — More — Luther — Paracelsus — Montaigne — Hooker — Bacon — Hobbes — Descartes — Malebranche — Bossuet — Spinoza — Locke — Shaftesbury — Voltaire — Montesquieu — Leibnitz — Wolff — Swedenborg — Rousseau — Hume — Smith — Reid — Paley — Bentham — Kant — Jacobi — Mendelssohn — Cousin — Stewart — Comte — Hamilton, &c.

"This great book is one of the most characteristic fruits of Mr. Maurice's genius and is of a kind to exercise, if not directly, a very wide influence on the history of English Philosophy. It is evidently the result of many years' labour, and of much learning—the fruits of great reading being often condensed to a mere hint; and it is a book which of all others ought to be read as a whole, and not to be consulted like a philosophical dictionary under its various heads."—*Spectator*.

"It abounds in passages of great richness and truth."—*Westminster Review*.

JAMES NAPIER'S SCIENTIFIC MANUALS.

Post Svo, 7s. 6d., cloth.

MANUAL OF DYEING,

PRACTICAL AND THEORETICAL.

With Engravings.

Second Edition, revised and enlarged. Post Svo, 7s. 6d., cloth.

MANUAL OF DYEING RECEIPTS.

With Specimens of Cloth.

New Edition. Foolscap Svo, 3s., cloth.

METALLURGY OF THE BIBLE.

With numerous Illustrations. Third Edition, revised and enlarged. Crown Svo,
3s. 6d., cloth.

MANUAL OF ELECTRO METALLURGY

Containing an Account of the most Improved Methods of Depositing Coppr, Silver,
Gold, and other Metals.

"With this book in hand we do not think it possible to fail in obtaining satisfactory
results."—*Art Journal.*

PROFESSOR CRAIK'S WORKS.

Two Volumes, large 8vo, 25s. bound.

A Compendious History of English Literature,
AND OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE, FROM THE NORMAN CONQUEST.

With numerous Specimens.

"Distinguished alike by diligent research, sound judgment, and extensive knowledge."—*The News.*

"The Professor is really of service to the student; his book is more than usually agreeable."—*The Times.*

"... have every reason to be satisfied with Professor Craik's production."—*Saturday Review.*

"Dr. Craik's book cannot fail to interest thousands."—*The Scotsman.*

Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d. cloth.

Manual of English Literature,

For the use of Colleges and Schools, selected from the larger work.

"The present volume is particularly adapted for the use of students going up to competitive examinations."—*The Spectator.*

"Professor Craik is always clear and straightforward, and deals not in theories, but in facts; all that he says is sound and practical, and eminently distinguished by good sense."—*Saturday Review.*

Small 8vo, 3s. 6d. cloth.

Lord Bacon's Writings and Philosophy.

EDITED BY PROFESSOR CRAIK.

CLASSICAL WORKS

BY WILLIAM RAMSAY, M.A.

Trin. Col., Camb., Professor of Humanity in the University of Glasgow.

With numerous Illustrations. Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo, 8s. 6d., cloth.

A Manual of Roman Antiquities,

For the use of Advanced Students.

With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 4s., cloth.

An Elementary Manual of Roman Antiquities.

Adapted for Junior Classes.

Crown 8vo, 5s., cloth.

A Manual of Latin Prosody.

Illustrated by Copious Examples and Critical Remarks.

Crown 8vo., 2s., cloth.

An Elementary Manual of Latin Prosody.

Adapted for Junior Classes.

Second Edition. 12mo, 5s., cloth.

Elegiac Extracts from Tibullus and Ovid.

With English Introduction and Copious Notes.

Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s., cloth.

M. Tullii Ciceronis pro Aulo Cluentio Habito
Oratio:

The Speech of Cicero for Aulus Cluentius, with Prolegomena and Notes.

WORKS BY PROFESSOR FARADAY, D.C.L.

Third Edition. With numerous Illustrations. Foolscape Svo, 3s. 6d., cloth.

LECTURES ON THE PHYSICAL FORCES.

Delivered to a Juvenile Audience at the Royal Institution, Christmas, 1859.

Reported and Edited by WILLIAM CROOKES, F.C.S.

Second Edition. With numerous Illustrations. Foolscape Svo, 3s. 6d., cloth.

LECTURES ON THE CHEMISTRY OF A CANDLE.

Delivered to a Juvenile Audience at the Royal Institution, Christmas, 1860.

Reported and Edited by WILLIAM CROOKES, F.C.S.

"Contains the very best examples extant in print of the art of popularizing science."—*Spectator*.

"One is left to wonder that the talented Professor should be able to engage the attention of youth with the elementary history of a candle, but with this candle he illuminates the whole range of chemical science."—*Edinburgh Courant*.



Numerous Illustrations. Second Edition. Post Svo, 8s. 6d., cloth.

POPULAR DICTIONARY OF CHEMISTRY,

Theoretical and Practical, with its application to the Arts and Medicine.

BY PROFESSOR R. D. THOMSON.



New Edition. With numerous Illustrations. Crown Svo, 2s. 6d., cloth.

PHOTOGRAPHIC ART:

Comprising the Theory and Practice of the Art in its various processes,
Including Optics and Chemistry.

BY JAMES MARTIN.

WORKS BY ARCHBISHOP WHATELY.

Crown 8vo, 3s., cloth.

TREATISE ON LOGIC,

With Synopsis and Index.

Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d., cloth.

TREATISE ON RHETORIC,

With Synopsis and Index.



Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo, 4s., cloth.

TREATISE ON POLITICAL ECONOMY.

The Science which treats of the Nature, the Production, and Distribution of Wealth.

BY PROFESSOR SENIOR.



Second Edition. Small 8vo., 7s. 6d., cloth.

VOCABULARY OF PHILOSOPHY,

With Quotations and References.

BY PROFESSOR FLEMING.



New Edition. Three vols., small 8vo, 7s. 6d., cloth.

NATURAL THEOLOGY;

OR, THE EVIDENCE OF THE EXISTENCE AND ATTRIBUTES OF THE DEITY.

With Notes and Dissertations by LORD BROUHAM and SIR CHARLES DELL.

BY W. PALEY, D.D.,
Archdeacon of Carlisle.

 WORKS BY SIR JOHN STODDART, LL.D.

Third Edition. Crown 8vo, cloth, 6s.

UNIVERSAL GRAMMAR;
OR, THE PURE SCIENCE OF LANGUAGE.

"The soundest and most philosophical treatise of the kind in the English language." *North British Review.*

Third Edition. Crown 8vo, cloth, 7s. 6d.

GLOSSOLOGY;
OR, THE HISTORICAL RELATIONS OF LANGUAGE.

Crown 8vo, cloth, 5s.

INTRODUCTION TO UNIVERSAL HISTORY.

On the Uses of History as a Study, and on the Separation of the Early Facts of History from Fables. Two Treatises. Re-written.

"We cannot speak too highly in its praise." — *Literary Gazette.*

WORKS BY I. M'BURNEY, LL.D.

Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d., cloth.

THE STUDENT'S HANDBOOK OF ANCIENT
HISTORY,

With Maps, Tables, &c.

Crown 8vo, 5s., cloth.

THE STUDENT'S HANDBOOK OF THE HISTORY
OF THE MIDDLE AGES.

With Introductory Dissertations, by COLONEL PROCTOR, C.B. Maps.

Crown Svo, cloth, 2s. 6d.

HISTORY OF THE JEWS,
FROM THE TIME OF ALEXANDER THE GREAT TO THE DESTRUCTION OF
JERUSALEM BY TITUS.

BY THE VEN. ARCHDEACON HALE.

—♦—
Crown Svo, cloth, 6s.

SACRED HISTORY AND BIOGRAPHY,
FROM THE ANTEDILUVIAN PERIOD TO THE TIME OF THE PROPHET
MALACHI.

Age 1 to A.M. 3397 B.C. 397.

BY F. A. COX, D.D., LL.D.

—♦—

Numerous Illustrations. Crown Svo, 8s. cloth.

EARLY ORIENTAL HISTORY:

Comprising the history of Egypt, Assyria, Persia, Media, Phrygia, and Phoenicia.

BY PROFESSOR EADIE.

—♦—

Three Volumes. Crown Svo, 12. 1s. cloth.

ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY.

HISTORY OF THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH FROM THE
BIRTH OF CHRIST TO THE PRESENT DAY.

By Right REV. SAMUEL HINDS, D.D., Bishop of Norwich; REV. J. H. NEWMAN, B.D.;
JAMES A. JEROME, D.D., Regius Professor of Divinity in the University of Cambridge;
REV. J. B. S. CARWITHEN, B.D.; Right REV. DR. HAMPDEN, Bishop of Hereford;
REV. J. E. RIDDLE, M.A.; REV. HENRY J. ROSE, B.D., &c. &c.

One large volume post 8vo, antique cloth, bevelled, 7s. 6d.

THE BOOK OF DATES:

A TREASURY OF UNIVERSAL REFERENCE, FROM THE EARLIEST RECORDS TO THE PRESENT TIME.

Arranged Chronologically and Alphabetically.

"A storehouse of facts and dates."—*Spectator*.

"Admirably adapted for a work of reference."—*Literary Gazette*.



Post 8vo, cloth, 1s.

THE STUDENT'S BOOK OF DATES.

Roman Chronology.



Post 8vo, cloth, 1s.

THE STUDENT'S BOOK OF DATES.

Greek Chronology.



Post 8vo, cloth, 1s.

BIBLE STUDENT'S BOOK OF DATES.



Numerous Illustrations. Ten Volumes, crown 8vo, cloth gilt, 2l. 2s.

ANCIENT HISTORY.

Comprising the Poetical, Social, and Literary Histories of

GREECE

MACEDONIA

ROME

ETC.

ETC.

ETC.

ARNOLD, TALFOURD, EADIE, RENOUARD, STODDART, WHEELER, ETC.

Preparing, a New Edition, Revised and Re-written,

THE BOOK OF TRADES.



With Map and Engravings. Crown Svo, 7s. 6d., cloth.

A BIOGRAPHICAL, GEOGRAPHICAL, AND HISTORICAL HANDBOOK OF THE BRITISH EMPIRE:

By numerous Contributors. Introduction by SIR E. S. CREASY.

"The names of such men as Alison and Brewster are a guarantee for the efficiency of the execution."—*The Economist*.

"A very compact thick volume, well condensed: likely to be an extremely useful book."—*The Examiner*.

"The book is truly a 'Multam in Parvo'—a vast amount of information in a small compass."—*The Spectator*.

"The 'British Empire' is a very meritorious production."—*The Athenaeum*.



Second Edition. With Map. Crown Svo, £2.

OTTOMAN EMPIRE.

History of the Ottoman Empire, from the Earliest Period to the close of the Russian War, including a Sketch of the Greek Empire and the Crusades.

By COL. PROCTER, REV. J. E. RIDDELL, and J. MCCONECHY.



By INGRAM COBBIN, M.A. 12mo, 4s., bound.

HISTORICAL AND MISCELLANEOUS QUESTIONS, FOR THE USE OF YOUNG PEOPLE.

New Illustrated Edition, greatly Enlarged and Corrected,

And continued to the Present Time.

BY RICHMAL MANCNALL.

WORKS BY JOHN IMRAY, M.A., C.E.

With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 1s. 6d., cloth.

PRACTICAL MECHANICS,

Including Mechanical Drawing, Material and Sources of Power.

With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 2s., cloth.

THE STEAM-ENGINE AND ITS APPLICATIONS.



With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 1s. 6d., cloth.

**METEOROLOGY AND ATMOSPHERICAL
PHENOMENA,**

AND THE PRACTICAL USE OF INSTRUMENTS.

BY E. J. LOWE, ESQ. F.R.A.S. F.C.S.



Crown 8vo, cloth, 6s.

OCCULT SCIENCE.

Compendium of the Occult Sciences, containing the Traditions and Superstitions of Ancient Times, and "marvels of the Present Day, in a Series of Historical Sketches.

By the Rev. E. SMEDLEY, M.A., and E. HIGH, Esq.

"It is a repository of curious information, and most instructive and interesting reading."—*Literary Gazette.*

"Full of real learning."—*The Press.*

Second Edition, enlarged. Maps and Illustrations. Large Svo, 12. 1s., half-bound, Roxburghe style.

CYCLOPÆDIA OF THE PHYSICAL SCIENCES.

Comprising Acoustics, Astronomy, Dynamics, Electricity, Heat, Magnetism, Meteorology, &c., &c.

BY PROFESSOR NICHOL.

"This Cyclopædia has been edited with the utmost care, and deserves to stand among the standard works of reference."—*The Leader.*



Crown Svo, cloth, 4s.

HISTORY OF GREEK AND ROMAN PHILOSOPHY AND SCIENCE.

BY DR. BLOMFIELD, Lord Bishop of London, REV. W. WHEWELL, and Others.

"A more interesting and instructing volume than this has not been offered to the public for some time."—*Critic.*



Sixth Edition. Crown Svo, cloth, 2s.

INTRODUCTORY DISSERTATION ON THE SCIENCE OF METHOD,

WITH A SYNOPSIS.

BY SAMUEL T. COLERIDGE.



New Edition. 18mo, 1s., cloth.

SPELLING BY DICTATION,

ADAPTED FOR THE CIVIL SERVICE EXAMINATION.

BY REV. A. J. D. D'CRSEY.

With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. cloth.

PRACTICAL ASTRONOMY:

A GUIDE TO THE SCENERY OF THE HEAVENS.

BY HUGH BREEN.

Royal Observatory, Greenwich.

With Instructions on the Use of Instruments.



With numerous Illustrations. 1s. 6d., cloth.

VARIETIES OF THE HUMAN RACE:

Introductory to the Study of Geography and History.

BY R. C. LATHAM, M.D., F.R.S.



New Edition. 8vo, 10s. 6d. cloth.

THE STUDENT'S NATURAL HISTORY.

BY WILLIAM BAIRD, M.D., F.L.S.

British Museum.

With Maps, and numerous Illustrations after Harvey.



Third Edition. Revised, with Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. cloth.

ZOOLOGICAL RECREATIONS.

BY W. J. BRODERIP, F.R.S.

With Maps and numerous Engravings. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d. cloth.

BIBLICAL ANTIQUITIES,

WITH SOME COLLATERAL SUBJECTS.

Comprising the Language, Geography, and Early History of Palestine.

BY THE LATE F. A. COX, D.D. LL.D.

"The most valuable book on the subject in our language."—*Baptist Magazine*,



New Edition, 600 Illustrations. Large Post 8vo, 8s. 6d., cloth.

NATURAL HISTORY OF THE ANIMAL KINGDOM

BY DALLAS.

A Systematic and Popular Description of the Habits, Structure, and
Classification of Animals.



Crown 8vo, 1s. cloth.

BOTANIST'S VADE-MECUM:

Containing Instructions for Collecting, Examining, Classifying, and Preserving Plants.



With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 1s. 6d., cloth,

THE PRINCIPAL FORMS OF THE SKELETON AND THE TEETH,

As the Basis for a System of Natural History and Comparative Anatomy.

BY PROFESSOR OWEN, F.R.S.

Griffin's New Editions of the Classics.

In One Vol., Price 6s.; or in Three Parts, 2s. 6d. each.

THE WORKS OF VIRGIL,

With Copious Notes, Original and Selected, and numerous Illustrations from the Antique

BY ARCHIBALD H. BRYCE, LL.D.

Trin. Coll. Dub.; One of the Classical Masters in the High School of Edinburgh.

"Dicam, quod sentio; neque enim meum est blandiri; versatus es in interpretando Virgilio ita, ut et ingenii acumen, et elegantiam doctrinae, et soleritatem diligenter quamque in conficienda commentariis positum libentissime agno-cam."—Dr. Philip Wagner, of Dresden, *Editor of Virgil.*

"Testatus sum Archibaldum H. Bryce. Virgili carminibus non solum de hoc poeta, sed de omni literatura Boiana optime esse meritum; laud parvus poeta leos rectius et subtilius explicuisse, buane priores editores; atque cuncto tam largam et exquisitam doctrinam tantumque ingenui acumen et sagacitatem prodidisse ut." . . . —Dr. Albert Forbiger, of Leipzig, *Editor of Virgil, Lucretius, &c.*

"The best school edition of the great poet which has yet appeared."—*The late Professor Ramsay.*

"I recommended it to my class in Trinity College, Dublin, because it appeared the best edition of Virgil in existence, that could be put into their hands."—Rev. W. H. Ferrar, *Fellow of Trin. Coll. Dublin.*

"A book, which those who know its merits, whether young or old, will have recourse to more frequently than to Heyne or Forbiger."—*The late Professor Elliott.*

"It is far superior to Anthon's, and therefore, of course, the best complete comment on Virgil which has as yet appeared in English. It throws light on many a dark place."—*Thos. Keightley.*

"A sample of acute and masterly exegesis. The notes give the pith of all the best German editions."—*Professor Leichtel.*

"It contains the pith of what has been written by the best scholars on the subject."—*Athenaeum.*

"The best school edition extant."—*Educational Journal.*

"Upon the whole the best commentary on Virgil which the English student of his language can obtain."—*Scotsman.*

Second Edition. 18mo, 1s. 6d., cloth.

EXTRACTS FROM CÆSAR'S COMMENTARIES,

With Vocabulary and Notes.

By JOSEPH CURRIE, Glasgow Academy.

Folio-crown 8vo, 4s

NOTES TO HORACE'S WORKS.

By JOSEPH CURRIE.

Second Edition. 18mo, 1s. 6d., cloth.

EXTRACTS FROM OVID'S METAMORPHOSES.

By J. M'BURNEY, LL.D.

With Copious Notes

CHARLES GRIFFIN AND COMPANY'S LIST OF RELIGIOUS WORKS.

FRESH SPRINGS OF TRUTH:

A Vindication of the Essential Principles of Christianity. Crown 8vo, cloth, 6s.

"An earnest book, showing fixed principles of a very high order not often met with in the present times."—*Weekly Messenger*.

"In this very ably written, and argumentatively sustained work, the author shows the self-contradictory theories of modern science, and that in astronomy and geology, facts received for years are now disputed. We had therefore much better reserve our faith for what are proved to be revelations from God, and not blindly yield it to human inventions."—*Oxford Gazette*.

EVENINGS AT CALVARY:

Sacred Meditations by the REV. J. LOGAN AIKMAN. Fourth Thousand, 8vo, handsomely bound in cloth, bevelled boards, gilt, price 3s. 6d.

MORNINGS AT THE SEPULCHRE:

(A companion volume to the above) Sacred Meditations by the REV. J. LOGAN AIKMAN. 8vo, handsomely bound in cloth antique, bevelled boards, gilt, price 3s. 6d.

THE ALTAR OF THE HOUSEHOLD:

A series of Prayers and Selections from the Scriptures, for Domestic Worship, for every Morning and Evening in the Year, edited by the REV. DR. HARRIS, with an Introduction by the Rev. LINDSAY ALEXANDER, D.D., Royal 4to, cloth, gilt edges, price 21s.

The present greatly improved edition is characterized [by the following distinctive features:—An Introduction, written by the Rev. W. L. ALEXANDER, D.D. A series of Original Reflections upon each Chapter, written by the Rev. Dr. HARRIS. An Appropriate Hymn is added to the Devotional Exercises of every Morning and Evening Service.

CHRIST'S KINGDOM IN PROGRESS:

An Account of the Rise and Progress of Christian Missions, by the REV.
LOGAN AIKMAN. Crown 8vo, elegantly bound in cloth, price 3s. 6d.

CREATION'S TESTIMONY TO ITS GOD:

The Accordance of Science, Philosophy, and Revelation, by the REV. THOMAS RAGG. A new edition, with additional chapters, beautifully printed, post 8vo, cloth, price 5s.; or elegantly bound in cloth gilt, 6s. *This book has now gone through Ten Editions.*

THE CHRISTIAN PHILOSOPHER:

By THOMAS DICK, LL.D. An entirely new edition, revised and greatly extended, illustrated with 150 Engravings on Wood, and printed on toned paper, crown 8vo, cloth gilt, price 6s. An Edition handsomely bound in a superior manner in cloth and gold, price 6s.

SCRIPTURE READINGS:

The Bible familiarly Explained to the Young. Edited by the REV. DR. JAMIESON. New edition, with eight full page illustrations, handsomely bound in German polished cloth, bevelled boards, and red edges, price 2s. 6d.

GEMS FROM CHRISTIAN TEACHERS:

A Collection of Meditations, from the most eminent Divines now living; such as GUTHRIE, CANDLISH, BROWN, EADIE, HAMILTON, &c., &c. Fcap. 8vo handsomely bound in cloth, gilt edges, price 3s. 6d.

HISTORY OF THE SCOTTISH REFORMATION,

By the REV. PROFESSOR LORIMER, beautifully illustrated with landscape illustrations, by BINKET FOSTER, elegantly printed, and handsomely bound in cloth and gold, price 7s. 6d.

DR. JOHN KITTO'S PICTORIAL SUNDAY BOOK.

Illustrated by several thousand Wood-cuts from ancient and authentic sources
one large Vol. folio, cloth, price 24s.

SACRED THOUGHTS FOR QUIET HOURS:

A Collection of the brightest Thoughts of the most eminent Divines of the day; among them are ARCHBISHOP WHATELY, MELVILLE, CANON DALE, MAURICE, STOWELL, BICKERSTETH, &c. &c. Folio, handsomely bound in cloth and gold, price 3s. 6d.

GRAHAME'S SABBATH WALKS,

And other Poems, highly illustrated from designs by BIRKET FOSTER, on Wood, by EDMUND EVANS, and printed in the most artistic style on toned paper, handsomely bound in an entire new and original binding, 8vo, price 10s. 6d. Reduced to 7s. 6d.

THE ISRAEL OF THE ALPS,

By the REV. ALEXIS MUSTON: an Account of the Persecution of the Waldenses, an entire new edition, with additional chapters, bringing the History down to the present time, illustrated with numerous Wood-cuts, and eight large page Illustrations, and printed in the most careful manner, handsomely bound in cloth and gold, gilt edges, price 5s.

REV. DR. MORISON'S BOOK OF FAMILY DEVOTION

For Every Morning and Evening during the Year, with additional Prayers for Special Occasions, with Introduction by the Rev. W. TRAIL, A.M. Super-royal 8vo, cloth, price 12s. This work can be had, handsomely half-bound in morocco marbled edges price 14s.

FRANCIS QUARLE'S EMBLEMS.

Divine and Moral, illustrated by CHARLES BENNETT, and W. HARRY ROGERS, and beautifully Engraved on Wood by SWAIN and EVANS, many hundred Wood-cuts, royal 8vo, handsomely bound, price 12s. A few copies of this work, magnificently bound in antique carved oak, published at Two Guineas, price reduced to 21s.

In this Edition two imaginative artists have simply taken the poems of QUARLES upon an independent basis, and illustrated them with figures and emblematical devices more in accordance with the spirit of the present age, the temper of the Church of England, and the development of Protestant art. Quaintness, however, has not been altogether excluded, for without a spicè of that element it could hardly be said that so quaint a writer as QUARLES had been illustrated at all; but a tone has been given to the thoughts and ingenious conceits of the Poet which would not have been possible in the epoch in which he wrote.

MILTON'S POETICAL WORKS :

Paradise Lost, Paradise Regained, and all the minor Poems, royal 8vo, illustrated, cloth limp, price 2s.

REV. DR. W. E. CHANNING'S WHOLE WORKS,

With Memoir, new edition, complete in 2 Volumes, 8vo, cloth, price 10s. 6d. This is the only edition of the works of this eminent writer now in print, and as the impression is limited, early application to secure copies is necessary.

DEVOTIONAL RETIREMENT :

Or, Scriptural Admonitions for the Closet, for every day in the Year : with Introductory Thoughts on Religion. By THOMAS WALLACE, Author of "A Guide to the Christian Ministry," &c. Small 8vo, cloth, red edges, 3s. 6d.

" 'Devotional Retirement does not belie its name. It is a book for the soul. Rich and varied in thought, earnest and solemn in feeling, sound in sentiment, and fitted, by its brief and daily chapters, to suggest profitable meditations, and excite a healthful activity in any one who enters into his closet, and shuts his door upon him, with his volume as his companion.' —*Professor Eudie's D.D., LL.D.*

"I have read a considerable portion of your excellent work on ' Devotional Retirement,' and intend to make it my daily counsellor, and read the whole. It contains a rich treasury of doctrinal, practical, and experimental Gospel truth. . . . By the Divine Blessing, it is calculated to be immensely useful to the present and distant generations." —*Alexander Fletcher, D.D.*

DR. EDWARD YOUNG'S POETICAL WORKS,

Containing the Complaint, or Night Thoughts, and all his Minor Poems, complete, royal 8vo, cloth, price 2s. 6d.

CHRISTIANITY IN THE FIRST THREE CENTURIES :

Historical Lectures, delivered in Geneva, February, March, and April, 1857, by MERLE D'AUBIGNE, DR. BAUGENER, COUNT DE GASPARIN, and M. VIGNET, Translated from the French, 12mo, cloth, price 2s. 6d.

DR. J. A. WYLIE'S WANDERINGS AND MUSINGS

In the Valleys of the Waldenses, 12mo, cloth, price 2s. 6d.

PATRICK HAMILTON,

The First Preacher and Martyr of the Scottish Reformation : an Historical, Biography by REV. PETER LORIMER, D.D. 8vo, cloth, price 3s. 6d.

THE CHRISTIAN PSALMIST :

A Collection of Psalms and Hymns, Edited by JAMES MONTGOMERY, 18mo, cloth gilt, price 1s. 6d.

ORNAMENTS OF THE FAITH :

Lives of Persons Distinguished for their Piety and Good Works, by the REV. DR. JAMIESON, an entire new edition, printed on fine toned paper, and handsomely bound in cloth, price 3s. 6d.

OLNEY HYMNS,

With Introductory Essay by JAMES MONTGOMERY, neatly bound in crimped cloth, gold lines, red edges, price 1s. 9d.

RELIGIOUS AND MORAL ANECDOTES :

A Vast Collection of Facts, Narratives, and Examples, Introductory Essay by the Rev. GEORGE CHEEVER, D.D., and a complete series of Scripture Texts, 6th edition, crown 8vo, cloth, price 3s. 6d.

THE RELIGIONS OF THE WORLD :

Authentic Accounts of the various Faiths and Creeds, contributed by Members of each Denomination, a new edition, crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.

In this volume each denomination, through some leading member, has expressed its own opinions. There is no work in the language on the same plan. All other works on the same subject being written by one individual, are necessarily incorrect and unauthentic.

THE SACRED LYRE :

Poems, Devotional, Moral, and Preceptive, including many Original Pieces, 8th edition, 18mo, neatly bound in cloth and gold, price 1s. 6d.

BUNYAN'S PILGRIM'S PROGRESS.

Printed in large type, and illustrated with full page Wood-cuts, crown 8vo, handsomely bound in cloth gilt, price 3s. 6d.

BUNYAN'S PILGRIM'S PROGRESS.

With Expository Lectures, by the Rev. ROBERT MACGUIRE, Incumbent of Clerkenwell, with Steel Engravings, 2nd edition, imperial 8vo, cloth 10s. 6d.

BUNYAN'S SELECT WORKS.

With an Original Sketch of the Author's Life and Times, new edition with numerous Engravings, 2 vols., super-royal 8vo, cloth, 36s.

BUNYAN'S PILGRIM'S PROGRESS.

With the copious Notes of the Rev. THOMAS SCOTT. New edition, elegantly printed on toned paper, with numerous Illustrations after HARVEY, MARTIN, &c., &c., small 8vo, cloth elegant, gilt back, price 5s.

COMMENTARIES.

MATTHEW HENRY'S COMMENTARY ON THE HOLY BIBLE.

An entire new edition, Three Vols., super royal 8vo, cloth 50s.

CRITICAL AND EXPLANATORY COMMENTARY.

By the REV. DR. JAMIESON, REV. A. R. FAUSSETT, and REV. DR. BROWN. Clearly printed, 8vo, cloth.

Volumes now ready:—Genesis to Esther, price 3s. 6d. Matthew to Acts, price 2s. 6d. Job to Malachi, price 3s. 6d. Romans to Revelations, price 3s.

A COMMENTARY ON THE BIBLE.

Containing the Old and New Testaments, according to the Authorized Version, new edition, with Explanatory Notes, by Rev. THOMAS SCOTT, Practical Observations, Copious Marginal References, Indexes, &c., 3 Vols, royal 4to, cloth price 63s.

PROFESSOR EADIE'S COMMENTARIES AND OTHER WORKS.

Commentary on the Greek Text of the Epistle of Paul to the Ephesians.

Second Edition, revised throughout and enlarged, 8vo, cloth, price 14s.

Commentary on the Greek Text of the Epistle of Paul to the Colossians.

8vo, cloth, price 10s. 6d.

Commentary on the Greek Text of the Epistle of Paul to the Philippians.

8vo, cloth, price 10s. 6d.

Concordance to the Holy Scriptures.

On the Basis of CRUDEN, and Introduction by the Rev. Dr. KING. 24th edition, cloth, price 5s.; bevelled, cloth antique, red edges, 5s. 6d.; whole calf, 9s.; whole morocco extra, 12s. 6d.

Dictionary of the Holy Bible.

Designed chiefly for the use of Young Persons, numerous illustrations, 5th edition, small 8vo, cloth antique, red edges, price 2s. 6d.; gilt back and edges, 3s.

The Classified Bible.

Or, Analytical Concordance to the Holy Scriptures, illustrated with Maps. The 12th Thousand, post 8vo, handsome cloth antique, price 8s. 6d.

The Ecclesiastical Cyclopædia.

A Dictionary of Christian and Jewish Sects, Denominations, and Heresies: History of Dogmas, Rites, Sacraments, Ceremonies, &c.—Liturgeries, Creeds, Confessions, Monastic and Religious Orders, &c., &c., by the Rev. Professor EADIE, assisted by numerous Contributors. Post 8vo, cloth, price 8s. 6d.

The Biblical Cyclopædia.

A Dictionary of Eastern Antiquities, Geography, Natural History, Sacred Annals and Biography, Theology and Biblical Literature, illustrative of the Old and New Testaments by the Rev. Professor EADIE. Eighth edition, with Maps and Pictorial Illustrations, post 8vo, cloth, price 7s. 6d.; cloth antique, red edges, price 8s.

Early Oriental History.

Comprising Assyria, Persia, Phrygia, and Phœnicia, numerous Engravings, crown 8vo, cloth, price 8s.

Paul the Preacher.

A Popular and Practical Exposition of his Discourses and Speeches as recorded in the Acts of the Apostles, by the Rev. Professor EADIE, post 8vo, cloth, price 7s. 6d.

*Monthly, in handsome Volumes; neatly bound in scarlet cloth, 1s. 6d. each;
also in printed wrappers 1s.*

THE ENGLISH POETS.

EDITED BY ROBERT BELL.

WITH MEMOIRS, CRITICAL AND HISTORICAL NOTES, ETC.

The following are now ready:—

SHAKESPEARE'S POEMS.	BUTLER'S POEMS. VOL. I.
BEN JONSON'S POEMS.	GREENE AND MARLOWE.
COWPER'S POEMS. VOL. I.	COWPER, VOL. II.
EARLY BALLADS.	DRYDEN, VOL. II.
DRYDEN'S POEMS. VOL. I.	BALLADS OF THE PEASANTRY.
SONGS FROM THE DRAMATISTS.	

Others in preparation.

From The Daily Review, July 19, 1864.

"With the merits of Mr. Robert Bell's edition of the English Poets, some of them, and that of Cowper is an instance, are really the best editions in the market. Mr. Bell is a model editor. Every obscurity is explained. Every note illustrates."

From The Edinburgh Mercury, July 9, 1864.

"The tasteful eighteenpenny edition of the British Poets, edited by a gentleman than whom none are more competent in the field of English literature to do full justice to his subject. The Memoirs are admirably written, discriminating and just."

From The Scotsman, June 13, 1864.

"This cheap re-issue of Mr. Bell's excellent edition of the English Poets begins most appropriately with Shakspere, and it is a great boon to get them in a beautifully printed and carefully edited pocket volume for one shilling or eighteenpence."

From The Illustrated Times, August 1, 1864.

"It may be as well to remind the reader that the volumes are beautifully and plainly printed on good paper, and we would not think much of the man who would not feel his country ramble improved by having a shilling's worth of rare Ben Jonson in his pocket."

From The Wesleyan Times, August 22, 1864.

"Never before was a series of our best English Poets offered for public patronage so well edited, printed, and bound, and at so low a cost, as the present issue. They are got up in a style fit for the drawing-room, the school, or for the library. The accuracy of the text is a feature to which we would call attention."

The Saturday Review says of

"'Ben Jonson's Poems.'—Mr. Bell has really conferred a boon upon the reading public in bringing out an edition of this great poet's productions in a form at once popular and scholarlike. The Memoir is unaffected. The foot-notes, besides affording a modest and judicious help to the reader wherever the author's point is obscure, supply full and accurate particulars of the contemporary customs and personages referred to in the text."